

Moss -

Crisis of German Ideology Part I

Dated & annotated

Preface + p 1-63

to be inserted

d
n
d
-
e
-
e
d
/

+

Preface to the Howard Fertig, Inc. Edition

THIS BOOK ATTEMPTS to analyze the history of Volkish thought and through it to define Adolf Hitler's German revolution. It focuses upon German nationalism at its most extreme, on those who advocated Volkish ideas and on how these managed to penetrate into the population. To be sure, the curious notions analyzed in this book, and the bizarre scholars who advocated them, would have remained in well-deserved obscurity had Adolf Hitler not given Volkish thought pride of place in National Socialism. Yet Hitler would never have succeeded in demonstrating the political effectiveness of the Volkish world view had this perception of reality not already been shared by a great many Germans.

There were no doubt National Socialists who did not see their movement mainly in narrow Volkish terms, and others for whom racism was never one of the main attractions of the movement, but all of them nevertheless supported a regime based upon Volkish thought. Moreover, Volkish thought itself did not inevitably lead to National Socialism. Many of the Volkish prophets discussed in this book were individualists, curmudgeons, who never united with the like-minded to form an effective political organization, and Adolf Hitler despised them for this very reason. Still, his own nationalism was a product of Volkish thought, and he castigated the "Volkish prophets" for their politics and not for their extreme and characteristic nationalism. National Socialism was a Volkish movement. ✕

Yet Volkish thought could have continued to vegetate on the margins of history, or it could have come to power through some other

1924

+

ment called *Les Jaunes*. French anti-Semitism was honed in the anti-Dreyfusard crucible, the attempt to condemn the Jewish Captain Alfred Dreyfus for treason, and once condemned, to keep him confined on Devil's Island. Moreover, neither Russian pogroms nor groups like the Black Hundred with their violent and deadly anti-Semitism were known in this form in Germany or Austria before the First World War.

Germany, on the contrary, contained not only the largest workers movement in Europe at that time, but also one staunchly opposed to racism and anti-Semitism. Nevertheless, the Volkish movement with its anti-Semitism had its roots in the German past; like worms destroying a cheese Volkish prophets and movements started at the periphery of politics, eating their way to the center wherever the political organism was weakest and started to rot—in this case during the Weimar Republic. The history of Volkish nationalism is not meant to read all of modern German history backward as leading inevitably to National Socialism, or to characterize German anti-Semitism as uniquely endemic or deadly. This book was never meant to support the thesis formulated after the Second World War in which Germany was the fount of all evil from Luther to Hitler, or lead credence to the belief that the Holocaust was a German catastrophe just waiting to happen. Both are unhistorical approaches to recent German history.

This book deals with one strand of German history which was destined to triumph and determine Germany's future only after the trauma of the First World War, followed by social, economic, and political crises—in the end coming to power through the misjudgement of politicians and the undoubted political skill of Adolf Hitler. Nevertheless, a knowledge of Volkish thought and its history is crucial for an understanding of National Socialism; as Hitler himself wrote in *Mein Kampf*, without the possession of a strongly held world view one can not conquer the masses. The perception of reality counted, and not the reality itself. Volkish ideas and ideals determined Hitler's world view and therefore those of National Socialism. This book attempts to analyze the development and dissemination of Volkish ideas from their beginnings through their realization in the Third Reich.

I want to touch briefly upon the chief criticisms which have been leveled against the book and at the same time indicate what I would do differently were I writing today. Some critics have objected to my central argument for the continuity of Volkish thought. I cannot, however, join them in regarding National Socialism as a complete break with the German past, as a unique response to specific events such as the lost war and the Great Depression. It seems to me that to concentrate solely on the play of social, political, or economic forces as some

1924

historians have done, is to eliminate the difficult issue of personal responsibility. Why so many Germans came to possess a false Volkish consciousness cannot be explained through such historical forces alone, for in the final analysis, a broad choice of political alternatives was available before Hitler's seizure of power.

National Socialism was not an aberration; neither was it without historical foundation. It was, rather, the product of the interplay of economic, social, and political forces on the one hand, and human perceptions, hopes and longing for the good life on the other. National Socialism was successful as a mass movement precisely because it was able to turn long-cherished myths and symbols to its own purposes. Human beings seek a future bright with promise, yet they dread a flight into the wild blue yonder. Adolf Hitler mixed traditional and acceptable Volkish thought with his own obscure brand of racism, a form which up to that time had existed only on the margins of history. Men like Guido von List or Lanz von Liebenfels, to be met in this book, occupied the outer edges of politics; the racial theosophy to be discussed was an esoteric *Weltanschauung* until it influenced Hitler's own thought. Others, such as Julius Langbehn or Paul de Lagarde, discussed here at some length, were closer to the center of political debate. It was my foremost objective to explain how the obscure and irrational world view advocated by such isolated individuals or small groups could ultimately help to determine the fate of a nation. For this process to occur, Volkish thought had to penetrate into so-called respectable social circles, while a specific historical situation provided the proper environment.

If I were to write this book today, however, the First World War, which prepared the breakthrough of Volkish thought, would be given greater space. Not only because the myth of the war experience proved susceptible to Volkish ideas, but because, as a result of the lost war and its consequences, Germany became the nation in which the Volkish dream was to be realized. This could not have been foreseen before the war.

What, then, was unique about Germany? I attempted to distinguish the German from other forms of fascism in the last chapter of this book. This does not mean, however, that I negate the possibility of a general theory of fascism. (I later elaborated such a theory in *Masses and Man* and in *The Fascist Revolution*.)

Every country developed a fascism appropriate to its own specific nationalism. The racist and Volkish component of National Socialism, for example, distinguished Germany from the first sixteen years of Italian fascist rule. To be sure, similar currents existed in Italy, but the idea of "romanità" was never all-encompassing, and racial thought

came late and lacked a nationalized other Central and East States with its populist tradition and its Ku Klux Klan. But where Volkish thought had it

The National Socialist government in history Volkish thought and racism. A few Volkish thinkers, for take a few Jews into the folk-comportment to the supposed verse ideas, even those which tianity, or some of the science upon the world. In contrast the existence of individual "casian" or "European." Yet, and Volkish nationalism tri climax of this book, was the this when reading about the tions in these pages.

Surveying the latest research have been expanded in order which the male stereotype and symbols of Volkish thought were of central importance. Ideas effective and cc Socialists as a form of self-ideas were transformed into written, nationalism is the human beings has manifested (Modernity, 1994).

I have also argued in this characteristic of Volkish thought to emphasize the connection. The Nazis made use of the from transport to propaganda between natural sciences and the latest developments in physics. program modernized the work applied to the industrial and simple architectural design the use of Volkish art, were thetics of politics through ritual

D.T.
* Volkish thought was acceptable
but Volkish leaders (in large part) for Adolf-
was not — too extreme, too
crazy, in a word, too impractical.
How delightful I was that his
interest in mysticism was small,
the most difficult elements are the
mysticism. Then strain all over the place

the difficult issue of personal responsibility came to possess a false Volkish rough such historical forces alone, voice of political alternatives was over.

derbation; neither was it without the product of the interplay of on the one hand, and human period life on the other. National Movement precisely because it was and symbols to its own purposes. with promise, yet they dread a Hitler mixed traditional and acown obscure brand of racism, and only on the margins of history. on Liebenfels, to be met in this itics; the racial theosophy to be ung until it influenced Hitler's Langbehn or Paul de Lagarde, user to the center of political explain how the obscure and irraisolated individuals or small ine the fate of a nation. For this to penetrate into so-called rehistorical situation provided the

owever, the First World War, olkish thought, would be given h of the war experience proved , as a result of the lost war and nation in which the Volkish : have been foreseen before the

ny? I attempted to distinguish im in the last chapter of this t I negate the possibility of a rated such a theory in *Masses*

ppropriate to its own specific onent of National Socialism, om the first sixteen years of rents existed in Italy, but the passing, and racial thought

the in confessional, acute of German history, and be understood that the Darwin-plan underlain of 19th

century had western religious belief to the point of which it was liquid to believe in the unity and transcendence of your country's nature to put ones' mind with a good old sense of God.

Alt. sees that nationalism is the grand boulevard to give the masses the kind of religion that can be used for political + 1924 ix

PREFACE

came late and lacked a national tradition. Volkish thought also influenced other Central and East European nations, and even the United States with its populist tradition, its idealization of the frontier spirit and its Ku Klux Klan. But Germany and Austria were the nations where Volkish thought had the greatest impact.

The National Socialist government of Germany was the first European government in history to squarely base its policies upon racism. Volkish thought and racism, however, were not necessarily identical. A few Volkish thinkers, for example, as we shall see, were willing to take a few Jews into the fold, provided they conformed in looks and comportment to the supposed Aryan model. Racism itself annexed diverse ideas, even those which, like early socialism, traditional Christianity, or some of the sciences, rejected a narrow Volkish outlook upon the world. In contrast to Volkish thought, racism could ignore the existence of individual nations for broader categories like "Caucasian" or "European." Yet, in Germany the alliance between racism and Volkish nationalism triumphed. The anti-Jewish revolution, the climax of this book, was the unique result. One should not lose sight of this when reading about the eccentric scholars and the many organizations in these pages.

Surveying the latest research, the chapter on *Bund* and eros would have been expanded in order to place increased emphasis on the role which the male stereotype and male camaraderie played in the myths and symbols of Volkish thought. Political symbols and political liturgies were of central importance in the age of mass politics, making abstract ideas effective and concrete. They were used by the National Socialists as a form of self-representation, and through them Volkish ideas were transformed into a civic religion. As Joseph R. Llobera has written, nationalism is the main form in which the religious sense of human beings has manifested itself in modern times (*The God of Modernity*, 1994).

I have also argued in this book that the rejection of modernity was characteristic of Volkish thought. However, recent research has begun to emphasize the connection between Volkish ideas and technology. The Nazis made use of the most up-to-date technology in all fields from transport to propaganda. Here, however, we must distinguish between natural sciences and technology. National Socialists rejected the latest developments in physics as "Jewish," but their "Beauty of Labor" program modernized the work place. Pre-industrial forms were often applied to the industrial process as successful modernization. Clear and simple architectural design, fresh air, lawns and trees, as well as the use of Volkish art, were to transform working conditions. The aesthetics of politics through rituals and symbols went hand in hand with

* D. T. - And mind, if looking in the resonance of real culture which is filled with associations,

historically acquired interlaid and, at its best, a lovely sense of the manifold layers of context, war &

religion since that can be used for political + modernity

JUDGMENTS

Support of my research is very great; without its generosity this book could

tion where most of the spade work
librarian, Ilse R. Wolff, put her vast
To the Wiener Library in London,
dedicate this book.

G. L. M.

Introduction

THE HISTORY OF GERMANY in the past century has been discussed at great length by historians and laymen alike. All have wondered whether men of intelligence and education could really have believed the ideas put forward during the Nazi period. To many, the ideological bases of National Socialism were the product of a handful of unbalanced minds. To others, the Nazi ideology was a mere propaganda tactic, designed to win the support of the masses but by no means the world view of the leaders themselves. Still others have found these ideas so nebulous and incomprehensible that they have dismissed them as unimportant.

This work will attempt to analyze these ideas, for it is a fact of history that they were embraced by many normal men. It is important to keep in mind that the Nazis found their greatest support among respectable, educated people. Their ideas were eminently respectable in Germany after the First World War, and indeed had been current among large segments of the population even before the war.

What differentiated the Germany of this period from other nations was a profound mood, a peculiar view of man and society which seems alien and even demonic to the Western intellect. Yet to understand the growth of such ideas, the role they played, and the longings they gratified during nearly a century of German life is to go far toward an explanation of Germany's unique development. Racial thought, Germanic Christianity, and the Volkish nature mysticism will all receive serious consideration here. Historians have not given them much serious attention, for they have regarded this ideology as a species of subintellectual rather than intellectual history. It has generally been regarded as a façade used to conceal a naked and intense struggle for power,¹ and therefore the historian should be concerned with other and presumably more important attitudes toward

life. Such, however, was not the case. It was precisely that complex of particularly German values and ideas which conveyed the great issues of the times to important segments of the population.

Much of this ideology has been characterized as "apolitical," and indeed, at first glance it is hard to see how one can justify calling nature mysticism, sun worship, and theosophy parts of a political ideology. But the problem here is one of perspective. For the ideologists who will be our chief concern, traditional politics was seen as exemplifying the worst aspect of the world in which they lived. They rejected political parties as artificial, and representative government was swept aside in favor of an elitism which derived from their semi-mystical concepts of nature and man. This type of thinking is only apolitical if "politics" is restricted to a description of traditional forms of activity and belief. If "politics" is so defined, then the ideology with which we are concerned is more properly termed *anti-political*, for the revolution it called for was to sweep away the old *Rechtsstaat* in favor of the thousand-year Reich, and the *Führer-prinzip* was to triumph over parliamentary forms of government. Ironically enough, an ideological movement which has been termed "apolitical" eventually came to define what was politically acceptable. That this occurred demonstrates the danger of applying stereotyped concepts to a case which is so clearly not part of the general pattern. It will be our task in this work to trace the unfolding of the ideology and thereby help to explain the transformation of German politics.

This approach to the German catastrophe does not deny the concrete factors which underlay the development of such attitudes. It is probably impossible to determine why people believe all the things they do, but certainly the transformation of Germany from a semi-feudal collection of principalities to a nation-state, and the parallel transformation of the regional economy from agricultural to industrial could not help but leave profound impressions on the psyches of German citizens. Both changes were remarkably rapid, and the change in perspective which they effected was consequently greater than it would have been had the rate of change been slower. Moreover, the unification of Germany had a special impact since it came after more than half a century of unsuccessful attempts.

Germany's prolonged quest for national unity had the effect of turning her best minds toward problems of national destiny. This unity could have come about at the Congress of Vienna after the fall of Napoleon, but instead a loose German Confederation emerged which left the individual German states to pursue their independent ways. As a result, those Germans who wanted unity looked increasingly to the formation of a cultural cohesion among their people,

~~rather than to a politics~~ceived this cultural unit to the foreigner. The r give Germany another The search for national form a true union was accompanied by an incr world had denied to tl sessed long ago, and m draw its strength from promising present.

When in 1871, at V King to be the Empero: unity of the new Prussia ment to many German: problems, whereas the n idealistic and indeed utop

Experiences rarely, if this is especially true if For many German thin almost messianic dimens bloodless *Realpolitik* wa new Reich was greeted thusiasm it received is n ences, not political ones designed to produce a co newly won national iden Reich had failed to sustai unification. The preoccu become a habit of mind abandoned once this go persisted: it seemed that that national self-awareer sired. Instead the newly —making money and bu those ancient German tr: real driving force behind

National unity triumph tion was rapidly cutting nomic maladjustments a unification. A united Ge for all of its people, but i to new dilemmas. It was

precisely that complex of
conveyed the great issues
population.
terized as "apolitical," and
one can justify calling na-
parts of a political ideol-
ective. For the ideologists
politics was seen as exem-
in which they lived. They
representative government
derived from their semi-
type of thinking is only
ription of traditional forms
defined, then the ideology
termed *anti-political*,
away the old *Rechtsstaat*
the *Führer-prinzip* was to
ment. Ironically enough,
termed "apolitical" eventu-
acceptable. That this oc-
g stereotyped concepts to
general pattern. It will be
of the ideology and there-
erman politics.
he does not deny the con-
ment of such attitudes. It is
people believe all the things
of Germany from a semi-
nation-state, and the parallel
from agricultural to indus-
pressions on the psyches of
emarkably rapid, and the
was consequently greater
change been slower. More-
special impact since it came
ful attempts.
al unity had the effect of
of national destiny. This
ess of Vienna after the fall
in Confederation emerged
pursue their independent
nted unity looked increas-
esion among their people,

rather than to a political unity which seemed far distant. They conceived this cultural unity in terms of national roots and of opposition to the foreigner. The revolutions of 1848, which seemed at first to give Germany another chance for unity, only resulted in frustration. The search for national roots, for a national stability upon which to form a true union was intensified between 1848 and 1870, and was accompanied by an increasing opposition to modernity. The modern world had denied to the Germans the unity which they had possessed long ago, and many felt that the movement for unity must draw its strength from those distant times rather than from the unpromising present.

When in 1871, at Versailles, Bismarck proclaimed the Prussian King to be the Emperor, unity seemed won at last. But the political unity of the new Prussian-dominated federation proved a disappointment to many Germans. It was prosaic, concerned with everyday problems, whereas the movement toward that unity had been highly idealistic and indeed utopian.

Experiences rarely, if ever, turn out exactly as anticipated, and this is especially true if the anticipation has gone on for a long time. For many German thinkers the anticipation of unity had grown to almost messianic dimensions, and the confrontation with Bismarck's bloodless *Realpolitik* was a tremendous disappointment. At first, the new Reich was greeted with great enthusiasm. But the kind of enthusiasm it received is more properly reserved for religious experiences, not political ones, and the business of government is hardly designed to produce a continuing state of ecstasy. Confidence in the newly won national identity was sapped by a feeling that Bismarck's Reich had failed to sustain the dynamic momentum which had led to unification. The preoccupation with the fate of Germany which had become a habit of mind before unification, could not suddenly be abandoned once this goal had been achieved. Indeed the problem persisted: it seemed that political unification had not brought with it that national self-awareness which many Germans had always desired. Instead the newly unified people engaged in material pursuits—making money and building up cities—and thus were destroying those ancient German traditions which to many minds had been the real driving force behind the movement for unification.

National unity triumphed at a time when the Industrial Revolution was rapidly cutting into German lands. The subsequent economic maladjustments added to the disappointment with national unification. A united Germany had not produced the good society for all of its people, but instead old problems had merely given way to new dilemmas. It was thus easy for many people to apply the

* A *disillusion* on the language.
D.T. It was not like the
language of other advanced

countries. It was close to the
source of all human feeling, or so
every good German felt secretly and not
so secretly believed.

same cast of mind which had stood them in good stead during the struggle for unity to the new problems of industrialization. They now sought solutions by deepening and intensifying their Germanic faith as they called for a more "genuine" unity. It is small wonder that such men ultimately rejected industrial society altogether, believing it irreconcilable with national self-identification. In the end, they called for a "German revolution" to liquidate the dangerous new developments and to guide the nation back to its original purpose as they conceived it. In this manner political unity and industrialization produced a crisis in German thought which led directly up to the "German catastrophe" of our times.

This crisis had its actual starting point in the 1870's. By 1873 the pressures of the increased tempo of industrialization had already produced the first grave economic crisis. By this time, too, it seemed clear to many that the great promises of national unity had somehow gone sour. Modern industrial Germany was being born and rapidly propelled forward, and the cry for a new "German" revolution that accompanied this growth was a reaction to modernity. Although the ideology with which we are concerned can be traced back to the beginning of the nineteenth century, to the struggle for national unity, the events of the last decades of the century infused it with a new life and a new dynamic.

The set of ideas with which we are concerned in this work has been termed "Volkish"—that is, pertaining to the "Volk." "Volk" is one of those perplexing German terms which connotes far more than its specific meaning. "Volk" is a much more comprehensive term than "people," for to German thinkers ever since the birth of German romanticism in the late eighteenth century "Volk" signified the union of a group of people with a transcendental "essence." This essence might be called "nature" or "cosmos" or "mythos," but in each instance it was fused to man's innermost nature, and represented the source of his creativity, his depth of feeling, his individuality, and his unity with other members of the Volk.

The essential element here is the linking of the human soul with its natural surroundings, with the "essence" of nature. The really important truths are to be found beneath the surface of appearances. An example—and one that is ultimately crucial in the development of Volkish thought—will serve to illustrate what is meant by this linking. According to many Volkish theorists, the nature of the soul of a Volk is determined by the native landscape. Thus the Jews, being a desert people, are viewed as shallow, and, "dry" people, devoid of profundity and totally lacking in creativity. Because of the barrenness of the desert landscape, the Jews are a spiritually barren people.

They thus contrast marked dark, mist-shrouded forests, they are so constantly shrouded in sun, and are truly *Lichtmen*.

It has often been asserted that the ideology of the World War and the founding ideas really come into the light that these ideas acquired a reality. These developments were also of a period that the ideology which these ideas were not spread primarily through personal relations but rather through personal relations with the official establishment and the institutionalization of the ideas, so that they see them as existing in virtually a truly effective, a system of political institutions. And this period penetrated one of the most important institutional establishments.

Education and youth play a role which youth had stood in the foreground since the time of Father J. The movement at the beginning of national unity had aroused the interest of a professor at the University of the movement (*Burschenschaft* "culture" and to encourage youth so that they could fight for national unity reached its high point at the Wartburg castle to be the genuine culture of the Volk.

For many young people a solution to the many social problems of them. Their disappointment in national unity, combined with the effect of a longing for a more genuine patience characteristic of the truly Germanic revolution. This encouraged such a solution. The Youth Movement after 1918 was a Youth Movement had basic forms for Germany which respond more truly to German

1817

+

in good stead during the of industrialization. They intensifying their Germanic unity. It is small wonder that society altogether, be- identification. In the end, to liquidate the dangerous back to its original purpose al unity and industrializa- which led directly up to

in the 1870's. By 1873 the industrialization had already by this time, too, it seemed national unity had somehow as being born and rapidly "German" revolution that modernity. Although the can be traced back to the the struggle for national century infused it with a

cerned in this work has to the "Volk." "Volk" is h connotes far more than ore comprehensive term since the birth of Ger- nary "Volk" signified the endental "essence." This pos" or "mythos," but in nature, and represented ng, his individuality, and

of the human soul with nature. The really im- surface of appearances. al in the development of at is meant by this link- the nature of the soul of Thus the Jews, being a dry" people, devoid of Because of the barren- ritually barren people.

They thus contrast markedly with the Germans, who, living in the dark, mist-shrouded forests, are deep, mysterious, profound. Because they are so constantly shrouded in darkness, they strive toward the sun, and are truly *Lichtmenschen*.

It has often been asserted that not until after defeat in the First World War and the founding of the Weimar Republic did the Volkish ideas really come into their own. To be sure, it was at this time that these ideas acquired a mass political base. However, the prewar developments were also of great importance, for it was during this period that the ideology was elaborated and diffused. The Volkish ideas were not spread primarily through organized movements, but rather through personal relationships and small groups which infiltrated the official establishment itself. Above all, this period witnessed the institutionalization of the ideas, a factor overlooked by those who see them as existing in virtual isolation before 1918.² In order to be truly effective, a system of ideas must permeate important social and political institutions. And before 1918 the Volk-centered ideology penetrated one of the most important of such institutions, the educational establishment.

Education and youth play an important role in our story. German youth had stood in the forefront of the struggle for unification. Ever since the time of Father Jahn and the founding of the fraternity movement at the beginning of the nineteenth century, the cause of national unity had aroused their enthusiasm. Friedrich Ludwig Jahn, professor at the University of Berlin, had founded the fraternity movement (*Burschenschaften*) in order to propagate "Germanic culture" and to encourage young Germans to build up their bodies so that they could fight for their country's unity. This enthusiasm for unity reached its high point in 1817, when the fraternities assembled at the Wartburg castle to burn "foreign" books which had poisoned the genuine culture of the Volk.

For many young people such nationalism offered the only proper solution to the many social and economic problems that confronted them. Their disappointment with the results of the long-awaited unity, combined with the effects of the Industrial Revolution, produced a longing for a more genuine unity of the Volk. With the impatience characteristic of their age, youth became the vanguard of a truly Germanic revolution. The educational establishment constantly encouraged such a solution to the crises of German thought. The Youth Movement after 1918 continued the searching which the prewar Youth Movement had begun: a search for new social and political forms for Germany which would, to their way of thinking, correspond more truly to Germanic longings. This Youth Movement

*the power of the hypothesis - expatriate.
the metaphysical into ideology. "Professors German*

6

THE CRISIS OF GERMAN IDEOLOGY

was uniquely German, a microcosm of modern Germany. Starting around 1900, it captured the loyalty and imagination of youth until the Nazi seizure of power ended its story. At first the young people banded together for mere rambles in the countryside, but their activities soon became fraught with ideological purpose: to reconstruct the Volk along more genuine and natural principles than modernity offered. Before the war the youth groups had a membership of about 60,000; after the war this swelled to over 100,000. This was the elite of the bourgeois youth, and the Movement was a formative influence for many of the intellectual leaders born between the 1880's and 1920. The Youth Movement's influence was substantial among teachers and students, and we shall have occasion to devote much attention to it.

These are some of the principal ingredients which provided the dynamic for the uniquely German developments of our century. Their link with National Socialism may, at times, have been indirect, but the Nazi movement developed out of this context, adopting the slogan of the "German revolution" and making good use of its popular appeal. Here the trend in German thought which demands an ideology as the basis of all concrete action becomes important. What the National Socialists shared with other Volkish groups and with many of the youth was their mood, which in turn depended upon the ideological presuppositions we are discussing. For these presuppositions gave men and women their idea of their place in their country and society. It determined their image of themselves and of the world in which they lived. Such considerations seem much more important than the search for some individual precursors of National Socialism, which historians have detected in various figures from Herder to Wagner and Nietzsche.

The basic mood of the ideology is well summarized by the distinction between Culture and Civilization which was constantly on the lips of its adherents. A Culture, to recall Oswald Spengler's words, has a soul, whereas Civilization is "the most external and artificial state of which humanity is capable."³ The acceptance of Culture and the rejection of Civilization meant for many people an end to alienation from their society. The word "rootedness" occurs constantly in their vocabulary. They sought this in spiritual terms, through an inward correspondence between the individual, the native soil, the Volk, and the universe. In this manner the isolation that they felt so deeply would be destroyed. The external was equated with the present, disappointing society; the state was opposed to the Volk, and the divisive parliamentary politics contrasted with that organic unity for which so many Germans longed. Moreover, the external signified a

+

society which had forged rush to amass the benefit was directed at the core which was satisfied with Germany as it should be materialistic, for those who in an inner spiritual revivifying of the German Volk

The critique was that yet it was the bourgeois be sure, it was not the rejected, but those whom the wall—the retail merchant small, tradition-oriented panding industries or of power seemed to center by the artisan classes, status and who felt their modernity threatened to ready allies in the land owned by demands for a trade. Thus those who at a "German revolution," population. On the contrary to maintain their property classes. The notion of a these people, yet they were The tension between the equally fervent desire to appeal to a spiritual revolution without revolutionizing it was the "ideal" bourgeois which actually threatened the middle class. Instead an enemy within. This is why bulk so large in these pages stood for modernity in all Volkish thought sharpened to, the supposed "Jewish attitude toward the Jew thought and gave it a Jewish, or rather the stereot therefore central to any a

P. 1.
* *A German without ideology
is like a gelded dog - he doesn't
know his own feelings toward other
dogs and his master*

ern Germany. Starting
agination of youth until
t first the young people
untryside, but their ac-
purpose: to reconstruct
inciples than modernity
a membership of about
2,000. This was the elite
as a formative influence
between the 1880's and
was substantial among
casation to devote much

nts which provided the
ments of our century.
mes, have been indirect,
is context, adopting the
ag good use of its popu-
light which demands an
comes important. What
olkish groups and with
turn depended upon the
g. For these presupposi-
r place in their country
nselves and of the world
n much more important
s of National Socialism,
igures from Herder to

summarized by the dis-
hich was constantly on
swald Spengler's words,
t external and artificial
ceptance of Culture and
people an end to aliena-
ss" occurs constantly in
al terms, through an in-
al, the native soil, the
olation that they felt so
equated with the pres-
sed to the Volk, and the
h that organic unity for
the external signified a

society which had forgotten its genuine, Germanic purpose in its
rush to amass the benefits of the Industrial Revolution. This critique
was directed at the comfortable and complacent bourgeois society,
which was satisfied with Germany as it was and gave little thought to
Germany as it should be. Their preoccupation with the external was
materialistic, for those who had a true concern for the Volk believed
in an inner spiritual revival which would bring about the true flour-
ishing of the German Volk.

The critique was that Civilization had captured the bourgeois, and
yet it was the bourgeois themselves who had made this critique. To
be sure, it was not the haut bourgeois or the newly rich who ob-
jected, but those whom the Industrial Revolution had squeezed to the
wall—the retail merchant, but not the department-store owner; the
small, tradition-oriented entrepreneur, but not the director of the ex-
panding industries or of the large banks, in whose hands economic
power seemed to center. These middle-class bourgeois were joined
by the artisan classes, who were rapidly sinking to working-class
status and who felt themselves isolated as early as 1848. For both,
modernity threatened to destroy their bourgeois status. They found
ready allies in the landowners who saw their food monopoly threat-
ened by demands for a reduction of tariffs and for expanded world
trade. Thus those who advocated a return to Culture, who embraced
a "German revolution," did not come from the lower classes of the
population. On the contrary, they were men and women who wanted
to maintain their property and their superior status over the working
classes. The notion of a genuine social revolution was anathema to
these people, yet they were profoundly dissatisfied with their world.
The tension between their desire to preserve their status and their
equally fervent desire to radically alter society was resolved by the
appeal to a spiritual revolution which would revitalize the nation
without revolutionizing its structure. Ultimately, the Nazi revolution
was the "ideal" bourgeois revolution: it was a "revolution of the soul"
which actually threatened none of the vested economic interests of
the middle class. Instead Volkish thought concentrated upon another
enemy within. This is why the Jews and the Jewish question will
bulk so large in these pages, for the Jew was seen as the enemy. He
stood for modernity in all its destructiveness. Thus we will find that
Volkish thought sharpened and focused itself against, and in relation
to, the supposed "Jewish menace." It can be justly argued that the
attitude toward the Jew provided much of the cement for this
thought and gave it a dynamic it might otherwise have lacked. The
Jew, or rather the stereotype which Volkish thought made of him, is
therefore central to any analysis and understanding of this ideology.

R.T.

Politics built upon the soul
needs ~~an object~~ a target of
hated, or it turns soft like you

modern new-age philosophers
or your liberal environmentalists

He doesn't
know other
and his master

Moreover, in this instance the connection with National Socialism is a direct one. Hitler gave focus to his "German revolution" by making it into an anti-Jewish revolution. In a situation where revolutionary social and economic changes were excluded, the Jew became a welcome and necessary substitute toward which the revolutionary fervor could be directed.

Gerhard Ritter, the German historian, was far from the mark when he asserted that the ideological evolution which led to National Socialism was not typically German and that other countries also contained such movements.⁴ Although anti-parliamentarianism was a general European attitude between the wars (as was the longing for a society that would be neither Marxist nor capitalist), it took different forms in different nations. As ideologies varied so did their results. German Volkish thought showed a depth of feeling and a dynamic that was not equaled elsewhere.

X The Volkish movement triumphed in Germany because it had penetrated deeply into the national fabric. Rather than trying to explain away this fact, it would seem more profitable to ask how this could have been accomplished. This book will argue that the triumph grew out of a historical development, helped along by concrete causes, which resulted in an attitude of mind that was receptive to the solutions offered by Volkish thought; that January 1933 was not an accident of history, but was prepared long beforehand; and that if National Socialism had not taken the lead, other Volk-oriented parties stood ready to do so, for by that time Volkish ideas had captured almost the entire powerful German right.

X Not that the triumph of a different section of the right would have led to the same results, or that the fall of democracy could not have been avoided. But democracy had faltered ever since its founding and millions had sought refuge in Volkish attitudes. To say that January 1933 was not an accident of history does not mean to deny the importance of the actual mechanism of the Nazi seizure of power. But the way was prepared and we must look beneath the actual political context to understand the attitudes which led both to support and to acceptance.

Those who have stated that Germany was "unprepared" for Hitler's sudden rise to power are reacting against attempts to see in this event the logical culmination of all of German history.⁵ Our object is not such historical determinism. It is rather to show how one trend of German thought could become so strong that millions of people accepted it as the only solution to Germany's dilemma. Moreover, Volkish attitudes permeated the entire German right. Only eventually did the Nazi movement blanket the diverse Volkish long-

ings of all those who saw industrialization and the ato

Although, in this book, folding ideology to the a opments in Germany, it sl sary, precise relationship The Volkish thinkers did manner of political comm tended to detach them fro take new developments in

Volkish thought was, a man thought which tende The combination of roma idealism produced intelle *sub specie aeternitatis*. T day-to-day affairs. The cloth. If at times our disci ties of the time, it is beca detached. Again, the para self upon us. An ideology problems confronting the tive for the solutions to th the genius of Adolf Hitler political discipline and effie

Although millions of (captives of Volkish ideol and these were the ones w consent made that triumph write a book such as this i such emotion might not on sis, but, what is worse, it ideas treated here were ar deed satanic. Yet the impo the men and women who any usual definition, peopl neighbors.

In a sense this study is : such an extent by an ideol civilized attitudes toward t the nation was taken in by : accident or short-term rea is our story necessarily ov with us, beneath the surfac

* 1924

+

National Socialism is a "revolution" by making a revolution where revolution was not needed, the Jew became a victim of the revolutionary

Germany was far from the mark of a revolution which led to National Socialism and that other countries were not anti-parliamentarianism (as was the long-term goal nor capitalist), it took a long time to vary so did their policies varied so did their depth of feeling and a

Germany because it had a different approach rather than trying to exploit the masses to ask how this could be argued that the triumph of National Socialism was along by concrete steps that were receptive to the needs of the time, January 1933 was not an accident; beforehand; and that if it were not for the Volk-oriented parliamentary ideas had captured

the masses of the right would have been of democracy could not have been achieved ever since its foundation. To say that National Socialism does not mean to deny the Nazi seizure of power. Beneath the actual position, the Volkish led both to support

the "unprepared" for Hitler's attempts to see in German history.⁵ Our obligation is to show how one can understand that millions of Germans were in a dilemma. More than German right. Only the diverse Volkish long-

ings of all those who saw their spiritual roots dislodged through industrialization and the atomization of modern man.⁶

Although, in this book, an attempt has been made to relate the unfolding ideology to the actual political, social, and economic developments in Germany, it should be kept in mind that there is no necessary, precise relationship between these events and Volkish ideas. The Volkish thinkers did not respond to "real" developments in the manner of political commentators. In fact, the nature of their ideas tended to detach them from real events rather than to compel them to take new developments into consideration.

Volkish thought was, after all, heir to a long development in German thought which tended toward abstract rationalism and idealism. The combination of romanticism and the popularizations of German idealism produced intellectuals whose ideal was to view the world *sub specie aeternitatis*. Their concern was hardly with mundane, day-to-day affairs. The Volkish thinkers were cut from the same cloth. If at times our discussion seems to be detached from the realities of the time, it is because the figures with whom we deal were so detached. Again, the paradoxical nature of Volkish thought forces itself upon us. An ideology that was only vaguely relevant to the real problems confronting the German people ultimately became normative for the solutions to those problems. As we shall see later, it was the genius of Adolf Hitler to wed the Volkish flight from reality to political discipline and efficient political organization.

Although millions of Germans, mostly of the left, were never captives of Volkish ideology, there were other millions who were, and these were the ones who triumphed in the end or who by their consent made that triumph easier. It would have been simpler to write a book such as this in the heat of moral indignation. However, such emotion might not only have obscured a serious historical analysis, but, what is worse, it might have given the impression that the ideas treated here were an aberration, something abnormal and indeed satanic. Yet the important fact to bear in mind is that many of the men and women who came to hold these ideas were normal in any usual definition, people whom one might have considered good neighbors.

In a sense this study is a historical analysis of people captured to such an extent by an ideology that they lost sight of civilized law and civilized attitudes toward their fellow men. Eventually a majority of the nation was taken in by such self-deception. That this was no mere accident or short-term reaction should be plain at first glance. Nor is our story necessarily over and done with. Volkish ideas are still with us, beneath the surface, ready to be used in those extreme crises

which mankind constantly manufactures for itself. In the United States, for example, extremist groups who want to segregate Negro from white at all costs embrace the Volkish ideology, fusing anti-Negro with anti-Jewish sentiment. They hope to penetrate the right in the United States as the Volkish groups penetrated the right in Germany. Quite consciously they steal much of their material from German sources, thus helping to keep them alive in a new environment.⁷ Moreover, isolated Volkish groups continue to exist in Germany itself. These attitudes of mind are easier to instill than to erase from the national ethos.

Yet it is said that all of these are small fringe groups who have no chance of coming to power. History, it is said, does not repeat itself. However, in the history of the Volkish movement it was never the actual size of the Volkish groups which counted, but rather the institutions they infected and the mood that they spread and maintained until the time was ripe. This also is worth remembering, however low the fires may be burning at a given time. We can only hope, but not predict, that nowhere in the world will the Volkish ideology again serve as a solution to a crisis in human thought and politics; that it did so in modern Germany has been catastrophic for Germans and non-Germans alike.

P.

The Ideolog

CHAPTER 1

From Romanticism to the Volk

THE INTELLECTUAL and ideological character of Volkish thought was a direct product of the romantic movement of nineteenth-century Europe. Like romanticism, Volkish ideas showed a distinct tendency toward the irrational and emotional, and were focused primarily on man and the world. This outlook found a receptive audience. Rationalism had been discredited. The fine distinctions and restrictions of the intellectual systems and rational ideologies of the eighteenth century had been inundated by what many men took to be inevitable social and historic forces. The patient experimentation and intellectual discipline of the Enlightenment were succeeded by the ideal of revolution, and the concept of an intelligible God gave way to a pantheistic view of the universe.

A further and more basic impetus was given to the romantically inspired Volkish movement by the turmoil that accompanied the social, economic, and political transformation of Europe. Stimulated or shocked—depending upon one's partisanship—by the recurring revolutions in France, surrounded by an encroaching industrial society, men and women looked for a deeper meaning in life than the transitory reality of their present condition. The rapid process of European industrialization was indeed bewildering to them, accompanied as it was by the dislocation of the population, by the sudden obsolescence of traditional tools, crafts, and institutions, and by social maladjustment and political upheaval. The demands of an increasingly industrial society, with its new opportunities and restrictions, tended to strengthen the individual's feeling of isolation. This isolation, man's alienation from both himself and his society, occupied men as divergent as Tocqueville and Karl Marx.

Bewildered and challenged, men attempted to re-emphasize their own personality. But, since the rate of industrial transformation, as

A.H.

*pondering the problem
in 1924.*

well as its effects, seemed to evade the grasp of reason, and men could not easily make themselves part of the new social order, many turned from rational solutions to their problems and instead delved into their own emotional depths. The longing for self-identification, the individual's desire to fulfill his capacities, ironically heightened by the process of alienation, was accompanied by the contradictory urge to belong to something greater than oneself, a striving that inevitably circumscribed the individual's independence. The human condition was conceived as straddling two spheres—that of the individual on earth as well as a larger unit outside society in which man could find a universal identity. The latter came to represent the "real" reality, and since existing social conditions were bewildering and oppressive, romantics sought to find the larger, all-encompassing unity outside the prevalent social and economic condition of man. This larger unity was defined in terms of the cosmos. The universe itself was thought to embody the "higher reality," which inspired all that took place on earth. From a pantheistic perspective, in romantic, emotional terms, the world was viewed as tied to the cosmos by the transfer of the "living force" which radiated earthward and infused those who were attuned to it. As this life force flowed from cosmos to man, self-fulfillment was thought possible only to the extent to which man was imbued with this force and was in harmony with the cosmos from which it sprang.

These romantics, however, were not pure mystics concerned only with their own intensely personal connection with the universe—though they did esteem such German mystics as Meister Eckhart as precursors of their own spirit. Though they rejected their social environment, they did not exclude the possibility that it could be reconstituted along more harmonious lines. In Germany especially, where foreign occupation and the wars of liberation coincided with the wave of romanticism, an intermediary between the extremes of individuality and the quest for cosmological identity was found in the form of the Volk. Men like Father Jahn, Arndt, and Fichte began to conceive of the Volk in heroic terms during the wars of liberation against Napoleon. After the Congress of Vienna the idea of the Volk assumed added significance. It seemed as if the cold calculations of Continental power politics had triumphed over the quest for national unity: Napoleon had only initiated the process of Germany's subjugation; the Congress of Vienna completed it. Opposition to the social chaos of industrialization and urbanization was then reinforced by thwarted national aspirations. Some sought an outlet for their frustrations by linking the Volk to the cosmos as the true and deeper reality.

Idealized and transcended beyond contemporary realizations in Europe onto a level of unity of belonging were a tangible vessel for the life furnished a more satisfying unity while being in tune with Volk the intermediary betw

But if the individual was a repository of the "life force," how was this trinity actualized and the Volk was then. For the romantics, nature was spontaneous. It was in response to the emotions of the individual with nature since it too was linked to the cosmos. He could therefore find an inner resonance which he shared with nature. He felt a sense of belonging, in a sense the Volk did not have a unitary national unit. Not all manifestations gave the Volk Nature was defined as a more peculiar and familiar all others.

The landscape thus became the Volk through which it resounded. The spirit of the transcendent was charged with both an inner reflecting quite explicitly the values. Man was seen not as a tool with the ability to penetrate the tools of reason; instead, with nature, at one with it, being encouraged to confront and industrialization, man's longing. Not within the city, but in nature, was man's true nature and the Volk. And only in nature, would every man find his individuality.

asp of reason, and men could
w social order, many turned
and instead delved into their
or self-identification, the in-
ronically heightened by the
y the contradictory urge to
lf, a striving that inevitably
ence. The human condition
t—that of the individual on
ty in which man could find
represent the “real” reality,
bewildering and oppressive,
encompassing unity outside
dition of man. This larger
os. The universe itself was
which inspired all that took
ative, in romantic, emotional
e cosmos by the transfer of
ard and infused those who
d from cosmos to man, self-
he extent to which man was
ony with the cosmos from

ure mystics concerned only
ection with the universe—
ystics as Meister Eckhart as
ey rejected their social en-
ability that it could be re-
s. In Germany especially,
f liberation coincided with
y between the extremes of
ical identity was found in
n, Arndt, and Fichte began
uring the wars of liberation
Vienna the idea of the Volk
if the cold calculations of
over the quest for national
process of Germany's sub-
ed it.) Opposition to the so-
ation was then reinforced
ought an outlet for their
mos as the true and deeper

1924 A.H. - I am connected to the higher reality! +

Idealized and transcendent, the Volk symbolized the desired unity beyond contemporary reality. It was lifted out of the actual conditions in Europe onto a level where both individuality and the larger unity of belonging were given scope. The Volk provided a more tangible vessel for the life force that flowed from the cosmos; it furnished a more satisfying unity to which man could relate functionally while being in tune with the universe. Volkish thought made the Volk the intermediary between man and the “higher reality.”

But if the individual was tied to the Volk, which, in turn, as the repository of the “life force,” found a unity with the “higher reality,” how was this trinity actually expressed? Common to both the individual and the Volk was the romantic pantheistic concept of nature. For the romantics, nature was not cold and mechanical, but alive and spontaneous. It was indeed filled with a life force which corresponded to the emotions of man. The human soul could be in rapport with nature since it too was endowed with a soul. Every individual could therefore find an inner correspondence with nature, a correspondence which he shared with his Volk. In this way the individual linked himself with every other member of the Volk in a common feeling of belonging, in a shared emotional experience. Yet, after all, the Volk did not have universal dimensions, but was limited to a particular national unit. Not all of nature, therefore, but only its regional manifestations gave the Volk its character, potential, and unity. Nature was defined as landscape: those features of the environment peculiar and familiar to the members of one Volk and alien to all others.

The landscape thus became a vital part of the definition of the Volk through which it retained continuous contact with the life spirit of the transcendent cosmos. In this respect, the desired reality was charged with both emotional values and rural aspirations, reflecting quite explicitly the Volkish desire to escape from and to negate the validity of the century's increasingly industrial and urban values. Man was seen not as a vanquisher of nature, nor was he credited with the ability to penetrate the meaning of nature by applying the tools of reason; instead he was glorified as living in accordance with nature, at one with its mystical forces. In this way, instead of being encouraged to confront the problems cast up by urbanization and industrialization, man was enticed to retreat into a rural nostalgia. Not within the city, but in the landscape, the countryside native to him, was man fated to merge with and become rooted in nature and the Volk. And only in this process, taking place in the native environment, would every man be able to find his self-expression and his individuality. +

* An Lh. writer with this idea. Obviously, it could lead potentially to a dead end.

The term "rooted" was constantly invoked by Volkish thinkers—and with good reason. Such rootedness conveyed the sense of man's correspondence with the landscape through his soul and thus with the Volk, which embodied the life spirit of the cosmos. It provided the essential link in the Volkish chain of being. Moreover, rural rootedness served as a contrast to urban dislocation, or what was termed "uprootedness." It also furnished a convenient criterion for excluding foreigners from the Volk and the virtues of rootedness. In addition, the concept of rootedness provided a standard for measuring man's completeness and his inner worth. Accordingly, having no roots stigmatized a person as being deprived of the life force and thus lacking a properly functioning soul. Rootlessness condemned the whole man, whereas rootedness signified membership in the Volk which rendered man his humanity.

In addition to the restrictions imposed by the landscape and the region, the Volk was circumscribed in other respects as well. The romantics' increased interest in nature had been accompanied by a revival of the notion that history provided an explanation and a goal for man's development. In the Volkish interpretation of history, the Volk was a historical unit that had come down to the present from a far and distant past. As the nostalgia for the medieval past had played a cardinal role in romanticism, so the Volkish thinkers tended to contrast the idyllic medieval Volk with the actual modern present. In giving the Volk roots in the remote past, history also seemed to endow it with endurance. Napoleon and the European political reaction which opposed nationalism might be victorious, but only temporarily, for the Volk that had endured for centuries could not be destroyed nor permanently subjugated. This concept of historicity gave the individual a further link with the landscape and with membership in the Volk. It also expanded the concept of the landscape to include not only the mountains, valleys, trees, and fields, but also the legendary exploits of those who had lived within this "genuine" environment for centuries. The small towns, the villages, the peasant and burgher inhabitants, symbolized the connection between the history of the Volk and its fusion with the landscape. Historicity, consequently, joined nature in defining the Volk and gave it a foundation in observable fact. The concept of rootedness was also enriched by history in that it acquired a broader base: nature and historical tradition.

Such then were the components of the ideology that called itself "Volkish," a foundation for a mode of thought, an attitude toward life, which was to become of ominous importance in the development of modern Germany. In essence it was an ideology which stood

opposed to the progress and nineteenth-century Europe. It was an alternative to modernity, civilization which seemed to while cutting him loose from the exhausted and lacking vitality framework by charging it. It simultaneously gave new life to fillment by making it part of force. As this force, which passed through the Volk, it was a member of the Volk unit. This process of alienation from society by was vital to belong. It also in oneself a positive virtue in rootedness, both in nature (the history of the Volk's evolution) natural state of man which a true being—while this state of alienation according to the model of

The Volkish ideology, as it was of the nineteenth century, was one of its central ideas: the connection and the associated idea of thought was elaborated into nature and landscape was seen in historical novels, in *Die Tat*, the legends of romantic-Volkish landscape insofar as it is a coherent whole. But this can happen only when the man soul, if the soul recognizes its own rhythm." He continues, "equal to a distinct regional and in each race a countryside thus is." A further elaboration of the concept after World War, declared: "The landscape and becomes of value only when it attains value through the stream, the vessel, of which the landscape is a rough must be tamed, the wilderness-language countries, the energy and furnished the connection between itself and their

Volkish thinkers—the sense of man's soul and thus with cosmos. It provided

Moreover, rural ion, or what was uent criterion for of rootedness. In dard for measur- dingly, having no ife force and thus : condemned the ship in the Volk

andscape and the ts as well. The :ompanied by a ration and a goal n of history, the e present from a l past had played s tended to con- dern present. In o seemed to en- olitical reaction nly temporarily, ot be destroyed city gave the in- membership in cape to include also the legend- uine" environ- the peasant and een the history toricity, conse- it a foundation lso enriched by and historical

hat called itself ttitude toward n the develop- ry which stood

opposed to the progress and modernization that transformed nineteenth-century Europe. It used and amplified romanticism to provide an alternative to modernity, to the developing industrial and urban civilization which seemed to rob man of his individual, creative self while cutting him loose from a social order that was seemingly exhausted and lacking vitality. Volkish thought revitalized the social framework by charging it with the energy of the Volk. It simultaneously gave new life to the possibility of individual self-fulfillment by making it part of the creative process of a higher life force. As this force, which streamed from the cosmos, was transmitted through the Volk, it was imperative that the individual be a member of the Volk unit. This process of thought answered the problem of alienation from society by positing a suprasocial unity to which it was vital to belong. It also made belonging to something larger than oneself a positive virtue indispensable to personal salvation. Thus rootedness, both in nature (defined as the native landscape) and in the history of the Volk's evolution, was viewed as the regenerative natural state of man which transformed the individual into a creative being—while this state also reconstructed the contemporary nation according to the model of the Volk.

The Volkish ideology, as it emerged fully armed toward the close of the nineteenth century, was closely tied to the popularization of one of its central ideas: the peculiar and unique concept of nature and the associated idea of rootedness. From this base, Volkish thought was elaborated into a world view. The distinction between nature and landscape was summed up by Otto Gmelin, a writer of historical novels, in *Die Tat*, at that time one of the principal organs of romantic-Volkish thought: "A countryside becomes a landscape insofar as it is a coherent whole with its own characteristics. But this can happen only when it becomes the experience of the human soul, if the soul recognizes the rhythm of the countryside as its own rhythm." He continues, significantly, to reduce nature in general to a distinct regional and intelligible entity: "For each people and each race a countryside thus becomes its own peculiar landscape."¹ A further elaboration of the subject, written on the eve of the First World War, declared: "The landscape is something objective, neutral, and becomes of value only when we see it through our own spirit. It attains value through the strength of the life of our own soul, the vessel, of which the landscape becomes the object."² Nature in the rough must be tamed, the wild landscape sublimated. In the Romance-language countries, nature retained elements of a primitive energy and furnished the romantics with that exalting correspondence between itself and their souls which enabled the young Berlioz

to receive greater inspiration from the Roman Campagna than from the Roman conservatories of music. In Germany, however, that energy was reconstituted to produce more specific effects. Within the context of German Volkish thought, young Berlioz could not have been inspired by the Italian landscape. It was not his native land, which alone could stimulate the fusion of souls in creative expression.

In taming nature, Volkish thinkers rehabilitated it as a landscape filled with flora, fauna, villages, and small rustic peasant farms, entities which had lived within nature so long that they had become an integral part of the countryside. In 1806, Friedrich Ratzel, an often quoted writer, made this important point explicit, when in talking about the romantic awakening of a feeling for nature he viewed the process as "only a sign of the increased reacquaintance with our country, that is to say, with ourselves as a Volk. For how could you divorce from the very being [of nature] a Volk which for half a thousand years has worked, lived, and suffered on the same soil." He continues in the same vein to characterize nature as spontaneous, infusing it with the character and personality of the Volk. In denying that the German landscape is similar to that found in eastern France, the Netherlands, Jutland, Poland, Austria, and Switzerland, Ratzel remarks that this was true only "if one regards the landscape as merely nature, if one sees in man living within it only decoration, a bit of scenery." But, he concludes, the German landscape is different, for in it "a people inscribes its spirit and its fate as it does in its towns and houses."³

Ratzel's statement was significant, for he believed that the historical roots of the Volk were an integral part of nature, that, indeed, they had fused with nature's truly "genuine" qualities. This idea of a pantheistic integration was further extended by the prominent historian Heinrich von Sybel in his *Die Deutschen bei ihrem Eintritt in die Geschichte* (*The Germans at Their Entry into History*) (1863), in which he presented his thesis that "the source of Germanic religion is nothing else than a deep, warm sense of nature which alone introduced this Volk into human history and culture."⁴ But more famous and influential than Sybel's work was Theodor Fontane's *Wanderungen durch die Mark Brandenburg* (*Ramblings through Brandenburg*) (1862-82). Fontane's description of Brandenburg fused the history, architecture, and landscape of Prussia into an indivisible whole—the people as well as the land they cultivated and inhabited. At a high literary level, this work summarized the intrinsic connection between the creativity and politics of a people and the unique nature which encompassed them and gave them their roots. Fontane's

book became required reading and, indeed, has maintained its

However, it was not Fontane's work which became a thought, for he constructed a view of man and society as a landscape. In his famous *Land und Volk* (1857-63), Wilhelm Heinrich Riehl, a Volk which he claimed could live in a landscape. Riehl himself, (1823-97), was a professor at the University of Bonn and curator of Bavarian antiquities. He thought we will deal with, he argued, Riehl analyzed the variety in terms of the landscape the natural environment was held to be a reflection of the population's simplicity. The culture of a Volk was the very opposite of a mechanical society, rejected all artificiality and defined by man and thus devoid of the artificial alone gives meaning. Such a concept was seen as lacking in meaning, pointing to the disharmony among the newly developing, unrest and the democratic upsurge as well as for subsequent Volkish since it was infused with both the ideal and the real for the Volk. Any merely man-made destroy the ordained meaning of the individual and the Volk of significance.

But Riehl went beyond content of nature, Volk, and cosmos. He saw the society that the Volkish ideal with the ideal of nature, Riehl held the model for the social structure contrast between field and forest as equally natural difference between an integral part of the unspoiled, for maintaining the distinctions. Riehl desired was hierarchical in medieval estates.⁷ It reflected the

* SOLON - One
Other
in

in Campagna than from many, however, that en-
specific effects. Within the
Berlioz could not have
was not his native land,
als in creative expression.
litated it as a landscape
ntic peasant farms, enti-
that they had become an
riedrich Ratzel, an often
explicit, when in talking
or nature he viewed the
aintenance with our coun-
olk. For how could you
olk which for half a thou-
n the same soil." He con-
as spontaneous, infusing
Volk. In denying that the
in eastern France, the
Switzerland, Ratzel re-
s the landscape as merely
only decoration, a bit of
dscape is different, for in
it does in its towns and

believed that the histori-
of nature that indeed
"qualities. This idea of
ed by the prominent his-
hen bei ihrem Eintritt in
ry into History) (1863),
source of Germanic re-
se of nature which alone
culture." 4 But more fa-
Theodor Fontane's *Wan-
mbles through Brand-
of Brandenburg fused
russia into an indivisible
cultivated and inhabited.
ed the intrinsic connec-
a people and the unique
em their roots. Fontane's*

book became required reading for the German Youth Movement and, indeed, has maintained its popularity until this day.

However, it was not Fontane or Sybel or Ratzel but an earlier writer whose work became normative for a large body of Volkish thought, for he constructed a more completely integrated Volkish view of man and society as they related to nature, history, and landscape. In his famous *Land und Leute (Places and People)*, written in 1857-63, Wilhelm Heinrich Riehl discussed the organic nature of a Volk which he claimed could be attained only if it fused with the native landscape. Riehl himself, whose life spanned most of the century (1823-97), was a professor at the University of Munich and later curator of Bavarian antiquities. Like most of the men whose thought we will deal with, he came from a settled middle-class background. Riehl analyzed the various population groupings of Germany in terms of the landscape

The genuineness of the natural environment was held up to praise and credited with engendering in the population such qualities as sincerity, integrity, and simplicity. The culture of a Volk rooted in nature was posited as the very opposite of a mechanical and materialistic civilization. Riehl rejected all artificiality and defined modernity as a nature contrived by man and thus devoid of that genuineness to which living nature alone gives meaning. Such a contrivance—a city and its factories, for example—was seen as lacking genuineness and therefore as contributing to the disharmony among the population. For example, Riehl pointed to the newly developing urban centers as the cause of social unrest and the democratic upsurge of 1848 in Hesse. 5 For Riehl, as well as for subsequent Volkish thinkers, only nature was genuine, since it was infused with both the life force and historical meaning for the Volk. Any merely man-made improvement upon it would destroy the ordained meaning of nature and thereby rob both the individual and the Volk of significance and regenerative powers.

But Riehl went beyond contemplating the simple interpenetration of nature, Volk, and cosmos. He formulated important precepts for the society that the Volkish ideology envisaged. Starting once more with the ideal of nature, Riehl held up the unspoiled countryside as the model for the social structure he desired. He saw in the natural contrast between field and forest a justification for preserving the equally natural difference between social estates. 6 Contrasts that were an integral part of the unspoiled countryside were invoked as a basis for maintaining the distinctions among social classes. The society Riehl desired was hierarchical in nature and patterned after the medieval estates. 7 It reflected the romantic nostalgia for medieval

* Solen - Order it if possible.
Otherwise see if it
is in the library

times and found its justification in the historic tradition of the Volk residing in its landscape, an ideal which seemed to have been fulfilled in the Middle Ages. For Riehl this historicity was plainly evident in the web of ancient custom, which once had determined every man's place in society—and should do so again. The respective positions of lord and peasant had been fixed by time-honored customs as clearly as nature had divided field from forest. Riehl viewed the peasantry and nobility as the two estates which still lived according to the prescribed customs and which were, furthermore, an integral part of the landscape out of whose soil they drew their living.⁸

This medieval and rural utopia symbolized the intrinsic unity of people and landscape. But even Riehl realized that for his time the ideal had one glaring fault: it could not accommodate the "estates" which had joined the ancient groupings since the Middle Ages. In reflecting upon the changes and dangers of contemporary society, Riehl was aware that the old order had been drastically disturbed. To him, the bourgeoisie was a disruptive element that had challenged the "genuine" estates. In *Die bürgerliche Gesellschaft (Bourgeois Society)* (1854), he accused that class of disturbing ancient customs and thus disrupting the historicity of the Volk. Moreover, this new element was composed mainly of merchants and industrialists who had no close connection with nature. But not all hope was lost. The bourgeoisie could still be tamed and accommodated within the Volk. The small town, which had been a part of the historical landscape for centuries, had furthered the growth of indigenous traders, settled burghers, and small-scale merchants. Respectable and established merchant houses that could be traced back to those inauspicious beginnings could, therefore, find an honorable place among the original estates. Writers increasingly gave these merchant establishments a place alongside the peasantry who cultivated the soil. For Riehl himself it was axiomatic that the vast majority of Germany's great men had sprung from either the small town or the countryside.⁹ From this point of view, by virtue of the antiquity and solid virtues of the established merchant families the bourgeoisie acquired rootedness and integration into the harmony and the "genuineness" of the Volk. Many literary works portrayed the middle class in this favorable light. Gustav Freytag in *Soll und Haben (Debit and Credit)* (1855), the most popular German novel of the century, wrote of just such a merchant house and glorified it above those members of the nobility who had regarded their estates solely as a source of wealth to support their dissolute lives and had consequently become uprooted.

Having found a place for the middle class, Riehl and subsequent Volkish thinkers faced another problem in their structuring of the

social order of the Volk: class, the product of the counting for a sizable part working class, Riehl preser for the bourgeoisie; they to edness. However, in one chants: by regarding them mitted the workers to act i society, since, historically, own ends. In this vein Riel cooperative home-building Robert Owen's cooperative

Riehl regarded such coop as analogous to the medieva apprentice were parts of a enough, Riehl praised Rot workers and management in enterprises at New Lanarc which all members were st in which the factory owne master craftsman had playe class divested the workers o functions and became norm

Workers were transform more closely with the imagi sans they would acquire th craftsmen—partaking of th chant houses. Taking into temporary industrial worke the line of unionization, bu parcel out a small piece of la designed to improve the wo hance his contact with natu to transform him into an i would be those shared by al of the frustrations inflicted ineness of emotions and their ing sense of belonging wit sanctioned whole.

Rooted in the Volk, the w creative self, and would thus rather than as an alienated n and other Volkish thinkers,

1942

+

oric tradition of the Volk seemed to have been full of historicity was plainly evidence had determined every grain. The respective position by time-honored customs in the forest. Riehl viewed the Volk which still lived according to the forest, furthermore, an integral part of their living.⁸ Riehl viewed the intrinsic unity of the Volk that for his time the ideal was to update the "estates" which had existed in the Middle Ages. In reflecting on the working society, Riehl was disturbed. To him, the working class had challenged the "genuine" (*Bourgeois Society*) and the ancient customs and thus the new element of industrialists who had no place was lost. The bourgeoisie was dated within the Volk. In the historical landscape of the indigenous traders, settled and respectable and established to those inauspicious place among the original merchant establishments a place on the soil. For Riehl himself, Germany's great men of the countryside.⁹ From the solid virtues of the bourgeoisie acquired rootedness and "genuineness" of the Volk. The working class in this favorable light (*Merit and Credit*) (1855), Riehl wrote of just such a members of the nobility and the force of wealth to support the working class. Riehl and subsequent their structuring of the

social order of the Volk: the workers. Here was an essentially new class, the product of the last century, which was increasingly accounting for a sizable portion of the population. In dealing with the working class, Riehl presented the same arguments he had employed for the bourgeoisie; they too could be tamed and could acquire rootedness. However, in one respect he favored them above the merchants: by regarding them as a genuine estate. This distinction permitted the workers to act in concert, to some extent, in the Volkish society, since, historically, estates had acted as a unit to gain their own ends. In this vein Riehl praised the first of Germany's workers' cooperative home-building societies and even had a good word for Robert Owen's cooperatives.¹⁰

Riehl regarded such cooperative efforts on the part of the workers as analogous to the medieval guilds in which master, journeyman, and apprentice were parts of a supposedly harmonious order. Typically enough, Riehl praised Robert Owen, above all, for gathering the workers and management into one big family which ran his industrial enterprises at New Lanark. This was not a Communist family in which all members were supposedly equal, but a patriarchal family in which the factory owner played much the same role which the master craftsman had played in the past. This theory of the working class divested the workers of characteristics associated with industrial functions and became normative for the whole Volkish movement.

Workers were transformed into artisans so that they would fit in more closely with the image of their medieval counterparts. As artisans they would acquire the distinction of being settled and rooted craftsmen—partaking of the same honor granted the ancient merchant houses. Taking into consideration the problems of the contemporary industrial workers, Riehl advocated a reform, not along the line of unionization, but in the form of a grant which would parcel out a small piece of land to each worker. This measure was not designed to improve the worker's living conditions but rather to enhance his contact with nature, to root him in the landscape, and thus to transform him into an integral part of the Volk. His benefits would be those shared by all his fellows: natural simplicity, removal of the frustrations inflicted by an artificial urban way of life, genuineness of emotions and their uninhibited expression, and the rewarding sense of belonging within both a historically and cosmically sanctioned whole.

Rooted in the Volk, the worker would recapture his individual and creative self, and would thus be able to function as a medieval artisan rather than as an alienated modern proletarian. In the eyes of Riehl and other Volkish thinkers, this nostalgic image of harmony be-

HH
1942

1942

tween worker and master, of the industrial worker transformed into the rooted artisan, provided the solution to the social and economic tensions that erupted periodically. Cooperation was justified by history, Volk interests, and cosmic life forces, and hence was the alternative to class warfare. This idea grew in popularity and received increased expression throughout the history of Volkish thought—from Riehl in the mid-nineteenth century to August Winnig after the First World War.

Yet for Riehl a third class, dangerous to the body politic and unfit to be accommodated within Volkish society, had come into being. This group, identified as true "proletariat," consisted of the totally disinherited. Riehl differentiated this third group from the "genuine" working class by stigmatizing it as a pariah caste which not only was the unfortunate product of modernization but which itself entertained an anti-Volkish malevolence. Consequently, it was futile to extend them a saving hand. On the contrary, the proletariat was the enemy to be vanquished.

What precluded the integration of the proletariat into the system of estates was its instability, its restlessness. This group was a part of the contemporary population which could never sink roots of any permanence. In its ranks was the migratory worker, who, lacking a native residence, could not call any landscape his own. There was also the journalist, the polemicist, the iconoclast who opposed ancient custom, advocated man-made panaceas, and excited the people to revolt against the genuine and established order. Above all, there was the Jew, who by his very nature was restless. Although the Jew belonged to a Volk, it occupied no specific territory and was consequently doomed to rootlessness. These elements of the population dominated the large cities, which they had erected, according to Riehl, in their own image to represent their particular landscape. However, this was an artificial domain, and in contrast to serene rootedness, everything it contained, including the inhabitants, was in continuous motion. The big city and the proletariat seemed to fuse into an ominous colossus which was endangering the realm of the Volk: "dominance of the big city will be equivalent to the dominance of the proletariat."¹²

Such then was the threat that disturbed Riehl as well as subsequent Volkish thinkers. In their frame of reference the city came to symbolize the industrial progress and modernity that all adherents to the Volkish ideology rejected. It was the very opposite of rootedness in nature and, therefore, antithetical to the spirit of the Volk. Worse still, it represented the accomplishments of the proletariat; it was the concrete expression of proletarian restlessness. The fear of encroaching

urban centers became alarming rate at which asserted itself. The image the rootless elements, the antagonism to foreign prospector of internationalists who was credited with for wanting to become identity with all the large city interest. Within such a and the "world proletarian" bility and exercise a supernatural had been destroyed.

This animosity toward Volkish thought. At the domain of the Jews. "cities are the tombs of the devastated in the Second 1944, Joseph Goebbels the depth and duration of it is necessary to respect had survived the bombing anchored as securely as only with their annihilated status with the rooted people.

Such ideas secured a thought. Although the construed and their thoughtish movement, he was the founding of the Riehlman *Volkskunde* (1935). References to Riehl and out the history of the V standardization of many was a pioneer in localizing Volk. He also limited the individual expression with the true mystics who sought the true mystics who sought the individual demanded rootedness of the individual the attraction he exercised to a higher reality and at

* A.H. Their nature was to spend their childhood in a surely soon studying towards

* P.R. Lee

worker transformed into the social and economic was justified by his and hence was the alter- and received in- Volkish thought—from st Winnig after the First

the body politic and unfit, had come into being. consisted of the totally group from the "genuine" state which not only was but which itself enter- tainingly, it was futile to the proletariat was the

proletariat into the system his group was a part of ever sink roots of any worker, who, lacking a his own. There was t who opposed ancient cited the people to re- Above all, there was Although the Jew be- nity and was conse- quents of the population erected, according to particular landscape. in contrast to serene the inhabitants, was in proletariat seemed to fuse ring the realm of the equivalent to the domi-

As well as subsequent the city came to sym- at all adherents to the posite of rootedness in the Volk. Worse still, proletariat; it was the con- e fear of encroaching

urban centers became synonymous with apprehension over the alarming rate at which the proletariat increased in numbers and asserted itself. The image of the city always conjured up the dread of the rootless elements, their incompatibility with the Volk, and an antagonism to foreign persons or cultures. Volkish thinkers saw the specter of internationalism in the rapid expansion of the cities. Riehl, who was credited with this apocalyptic vision, criticized big cities for wanting to become international urban centers, to achieve equality with all the large cities in the world and form a community of interest. Within such a union, Riehl feared, the "world bourgeoisie" and the "world proletariat" would recognize their mutual compatibility and exercise a suzerainty over a world in which all that was natural had been destroyed, especially the estates.¹³

This animosity toward the city was an integral part of the rise of Volkish thought. At times it was expressed in the slogan "Berlin is the domain of the Jews," or in the remark of another writer that "cities are the tombs of Germanism."¹⁴ Not until the big cities were devastated in the Second World War did this hostility end. Then, in 1944, Joseph Goebbels made a statement which itself demonstrated the depth and duration of anti-urban influence on Volkish thought: it is necessary to respect the rhythm of life in the big cities which had survived the bombings. "Here the vital powers of our Volk are anchored as securely as in the peasantry."¹⁵ It is indeed ironic that only with their annihilation did the cities attain equal ideological status with the rooted peasantry.

Such ideas secured a place for Riehl in the history of Volkish thought. Although the statements of many famous men were misconstrued and their thought distorted by extremists in the later Volkish movement, he was not among them. Such superficial actions as the founding of the Riehl Bund (1920) and the Riehl Prize for German *Volkskunde* (1935) only symbolized a more profound influence. References to Riehl and restatements of his ideas are found throughout the history of the Volkish movement. He was revered for his standardization of many of the basic precepts of Volkish thought. He was a pioneer in localizing the cosmic spirit within the confines of the Volk. He also limited the romantic concept of the infinite forms of individual expression when he rejected the restlessness peculiar to the true mystics who sought to link their souls directly to the creator's. Instead he emphasized that the very life force that infused the individual demanded rootedness and abhorred motion. This circumscription of the individual's striving may well have accounted for the attraction he exercised upon those who wanted to link themselves to a higher reality and at the same time find rest in a rapidly changing

* P.T. Lewitt to Goebbels
Every pimple is a claim!

f.
in 19
from 1900

* 1943

society. Indeed, this was his most lasting and most appreciated contribution to the Volkish movement. A leading German educator, in his defense of National Socialism, summed up this feeling almost a century after Riehl: "With the victory of National Socialism the limitations upon the dynamic spirit of man, which at first frightened us are transformed into a feeling of restfulness. Freedom, for whose fate we feared, is renewed as it rises upward from a close-knit consciousness of Volk and Culture; our world of feeling had found fulfillment."¹⁶ Riehl's thought came to symbolize an end to the fear of alienation and chaos since it substituted the Volkish sense of individuality through belonging. The Volk was transformed into the vessel of the cosmic spirit and contained definite social limits within it.

In this formulation of the Volkish ideology, the concept of the peasantry came to play a cardinal role. Riehl himself had hopefully observed that Germans were beginning to sense how important the peasantry was for the nation. Writers were prophesying what statesmen were refusing to see with their own eyes: through novels and stories of village life the peasantry was knocking at the doors of political power. Riehl came to believe that through such literature the influence of the peasantry was becoming a real political force and that the process of national degeneration might yet be halted.¹⁷ Indeed, by the middle of the nineteenth century, German literature increasingly began to glorify the peasant as the man nearest to nature and therefore nearest to both cosmos and Volk. Writers began to construct the plots of their novels against the background of the native landscape. Thus Droste Hülstorf made the Westphalian Heide a particular domain of her fiction and Adalbert Stifter, another celebrated writer, laid his plots in the Bohemian mountains. Depicting the peasant as a Volk hero as well as an ideal German, Berthold Auerbach (1812-82) became the most influential chronicler of peasant life. In his stories he stressed the appealing simplicity of the peasants, with their reverent sense of tradition and their closeness to nature. He linked these qualities to the virtues of honesty, uncomplicated integrity, and love of family. This catalogue of virtues was part of the Volkish belief that those closest to the soil were the most genuine human beings, since they alone partook of nature and the historical landscape of the Volk; only they were attuned to the life spirit.

In Auerbach's writings the pantheistic life force took on religious overtones. Sketching one of the peasants as a "real German," Auerbach says of him that "even today he is a simple and just man, loyal and filled with faith."¹⁸ This faith which should be professed by the simple and just man was exemplified, in one of Auerbach's stories, by

a parson who ministered to the roughly good man, of a depicts him—the minister, believing that true session of a "sanctified he is able to tame even the plicity of his religion also the simple and good peasant of peasant heroes with the bach's work represents one of peasant virtues and combined the glorification of a Christianity not thus free to fuse with the cosmos.

Auerbach's works, however, show a different view of the peasant. In his stories he depicts the peasant as a rough, unrefined, and often cruel man. The virtues are peaceful by nature and the peasant is a creature of nature. The moral distinction is rather less lovable than the force, even of cruelty, with the German.

Jürg Jenatsch, the peasant novel of the same name (who bore within himself much truth in this. Jenatsch, and did his best to though Jenatsch struggle with dependence, the emphasis that it transformed force in itself. Force, which in conditions, now became a

* In *Der Wehrwolf* (1901) Hermann Löns eventually reaches its heights. Löns' "wolf" that rapine and pillage in the Thirty Years' War, executed and those of the Volk. The horrible age which becomes increasingly required solely for self-de

* Sued - weca

1910

e

ost appreciated con-
German educator, in
his feeling almost a
al Socialism the lim-
t first frightened us,
dom, for whose fate
close-knit conscious-
g had found fulfill-
end to the fear of
llish sense of indi-
formed into the ves-
cial limits within it.
the concept of the
nself had hopefully
how important the
mesying what states-
through novels and
t the doors of polit-
such literature the
political force and
yet be halted.¹⁷ In-
erman literature in-
n nearest to nature
riters began to con-
round of the native
halian Heide a par-
fter, another cele-
ountains. Depicting
German, Berthold
chronicler of peas-
simplicity of the
d their closeness to
honesty, uncompl-
of virtues was part
oil were the most
of nature and the
attuned to the life
e took on religious
al German," Auer-
and just man, loyal
be professed by the
erbach's stories, by

a parson who ministered to the peasants' spiritual needs. A thor-
oughly good man, of a "pure and beautiful nature"—as Auerbach
depicts him—the minister is unalterably opposed to Protestant ortho-
doxy, believing that true Christianity is signified solely by the pos-
session of a "sanctified heart." With his undogmatic faith, the parson
is able to tame even the wildest and most unruly peasants. The sim-
plicity of his religion also allows the parson to live and work among
the simple and good peasants on an equal basis and to infuse the lives
of peasant heroes with the same undogmatic faith.¹⁸ Whereas Auer-
bach's work represents only an early literary expression of the fusion
of peasant virtues and faith, later Volkish thought more explicitly
combined the glorification of the peasant with a simple heartfelt re-
ligion, a Christianity not hemmed in by theological orthodoxy and
thus free to fuse with the life spirit originating in the pantheistic
cosmos.

Auerbach's works, however, convey another early aspect of Volk-
ish thought. In his stories, the good and benevolent always van-
quishes evil. The virtues he acclaims and attributes to his characters
are peaceful by nature and recognizable to all men. But as the cen-
tury progressed, writers endowed their peasant heroes with an addi-
tional moral distinction, a virtue of ferociousness, making them
rather less lovable than Auerbach's men and women. An element of
force, even of cruelty, was introduced into the character of the "ideal
German."

Jürg Jenatsch, the peasant hero of Conrad Ferdinand Meyer's
novel of the same name (1876), has been called the kind of nationalist
who bore within himself the seeds of the First World War.²⁰ There is
much truth in this. Jenatsch worshipped force, wished his enemies
dead, and did his best to fulfil that wish by any and all means. Al-
though Jenatsch struggled for the just and noble cause of Swiss in-
dependence, the emphasis on the necessary violence was so distorted
that it transformed force from a tolerated means to a desirable end
in itself. Force, which was previously invoked only under extreme
conditions, now became a positive and lasting virtue.

* In Der Wehrwolf (1910) the most famous German peasant novel,
Hermann Löns eventually carried the glorification of brute force to
its heights. Löns' "wolves" were peasants who, accepting the fact
that rapine and pillage had become the law of the land during the
Thirty Years' War, executed their own judgment upon their enemies
and those of the Volk. There is little historically wrong in this, given
the horrible age which Löns describes. But as the novel unfolds it
becomes increasingly clear that the peasants' cruelty was not re-
quired solely for self-defense but that it represented one of their

* I liked - again, see what
we can get of their book-

1910 needs
the Volkish
influence

valid and genuine virtues. The bloodthirsty deeds are enveloped in an aura of satisfaction, as when a peasant recalls the days of the werewolves as "so terrible and yet so beautiful." ²¹

The peasant type that came to typify the truly Volkish individual not only embodied the virtues of simple justice and goodness but also was fascinated by force. This was a significant development which may well have arisen from the frustrations of those who wanted to actualize the Volk but whose hopes were continuously thwarted by the increasing tempo of industrialization. The story of the peasants who defended themselves against the bandits and marauders of the Thirty Years' War may well have been intended to illustrate the heroic Volkish personality defending the true order against the inroads of a materialistic and industrial society.

This evolution of the peasant image, however, also symbolized the fusion of something very basic in nature with the Volk hero. It glorified not only a rural but, more pertinently, a primitive civilization. In this case, the historical, the genuine, came to be associated with a primitivism which alone had strength enough to strip off the artificial veneer of man-made civilization: "What is culture, what meaning does civilization have? A thin veneer underneath which nature courses, waiting until a crack appears and it can burst into the open." ²² The crevice had opened with the disintegration of society during the Thirty Years' War. The peasants had discovered their aggressive, warlike instincts and broke through the superimposed layer of civilization. The author permits them to look down upon the other classes of the population and say to the bourgeoisie and the workers: "I am the tree and you are the leaves, I am the source and you are the flood, I am the fire and you are its reflection." ²³

In Volkish thought the image of the tree was constantly used to symbolize the peasant strength of the Volk, with roots anchored in the past while the crown aspired toward the cosmos and its spirit. The same symbol was easily transformed to represent the peasant as the Faustian man persistently striving to relate himself to the spirit of life. Dietrich Eckart, the man who exercised the greatest influence on Adolf Hitler in the immediate postwar years, adapted *Peer Gynt* with just such an idea in mind. The peasant boor of the original play became, in Eckart's hands, a simple, just, and genuine man struggling for salvation and giving himself to the cosmic spirit. With the addition of the Faustian aspect, the character of the ideal peasant was complete. Rootedness and proximity to nature embraced the simple social virtues as well as the elemental strength derived from primitivism. What emerged was the model for a Volk hero who alone, accord-

ing to Volkish ideology society.

As the Volkish hero was the enemy. At the ignited the uprooted came still more firmly mainly novels (which Jew in growingly dising volume depicted countryside in order. This was a most insidious peasant of his landed Volk, and the life for death. One of the most illustration—Wilhelm from Büttner) (1895) his thought. The outcast peasant becomes inside Jew sells the property factory on it. The reverently focused on chimes and factories: stared at the soil, the he had sold his body identified with modern ant, deprived him of the most genuine part the Jew had a further representative of industrial capitalists too), it peasants. And, of course the Jew's role, the tre vivid function: the Jew of the tree, seeking to

This image of the tree based on abstraction concrete reality. The many's agricultural reader or merchant of peasants who relied was hated most when ties and relied on him

See
p25

190

* L M C H

1924 +

deeds are enveloped in an
calls the days of the were-

the truly Volkish individual
justice and goodness but
significant development
frustrations of those who
hopes were continuously
rialization. The story of
against the bandits and ma-
all have been intended to il-
defending the true order
dustrial society.

ever, also symbolized the
with the Volk hero. It glori-
a primitive civilization. In
to be associated with a
to strip off the artificial
culture, what meaning
underneath which nature
and it can burst into the
disintegration of society
had discovered their ag-
the superimposed layer
look down upon the other
bourgeoisie and the workers:
the source and you are the

was constantly used to
Volk, with roots anchored
the cosmos and its spirit.
to represent the peasant as
ate himself to the spirit of
the greatest influence
years adapted *Peer Gynt*
boor of the original play
and genuine man strug-
the cosmic spirit. With the
of the ideal peasant was
ure embraced the simple
derived from primitiv-
hero who alone, accord-

ing to Volkish ideology, could shatter the complex of contemporary
society.

As the Volkish hero was concretely objectified in this manner, so
was the enemy. At the beginning of the movement, Riehl had des-
ignated the uprooted proletariat as the antagonist. After his day it be-
came still more firmly centered upon the Jew. Popular literature,
mainly novels (which sold into the millions), portrayed the alien
Jew in growingly distasteful stereotypes. Peasant novels in increas-
ing volume depicted the Jew as descending from the city into the
countryside in order to deprive the peasant of his wealth and land.
This was a most insidious development, for the Jew, in depriving the
peasant of his landed property, severed his bonds with nature, the
Volk, and the life force, and thus would inevitably bring about his
death. One of the most important books of this genre will serve as an
illustration—Wilhelm von Polenz's *Der Büttnerbauer* (*The Peasant
from Büttner*) (1895), a book Hitler felt had somewhat influenced
his thought. The outlines of its plot were to become conventional. A
peasant becomes indebted to a Jew and has his land foreclosed. The
Jew sells the property to a captain of industry, who in turn builds a
factory on it. The peasant hero hangs himself in the end, his eyes
reverently focused on his former land, soon to vanish beneath ma-
chines and factories: "The eyes which were leaving their sockets
stared at the soil, the soil to which he had dedicated his life, to which
he had sold his body and his soul."²⁴ In this framework the Jew was
identified with modern industrial society, which uprooted the peas-
ant, deprived him of his land, caused his death, and thereby destroyed
the most genuine part of the Volk. However, the animosity toward
the Jew had a further component, linked to the hatred of him as the
representative of industrial society (after all there were German Gen-
tile capitalists too), its agent who came into direct contact with the
peasants. And, of course, he was a foreigner. In this conception of
the Jew's role, the tree symbol of the sturdy, rooted peasant served a
vivid function: the Jew was usually pictured as the snake at the root
of the tree, seeking to destroy it.

This image of the tension between Jew and peasant was not merely
based on abstraction but had some foundation, however slight, in
concrete reality. The Jew functioned as middleman in many of Ger-
many's agricultural regions. Usually it was in his capacity as cattle
dealer or merchant of small products that he came into contact with
peasants who relied on his services or goods. As a moneylender he
was hated most when the peasants were in greatest financial difficul-
ties and relied on him to tide them over, as after a bad harvest. In

* ~~24~~ ~~25~~ ~~26~~

these capacities the Jew filled a need in the economic structure of many areas and represented a distinct and separate economic reality within the peasant world. The peasants were his debtors, and in bad times, no doubt, he collected his debts legally by foreclosure. There were many generous and charitable Jews engaged in such commerce; nevertheless, to the debt-ridden peasant, the Jew represented the most easily identifiable and immediately present element of the greedy power of modern capitalist civilization. Given these conditions, it is no coincidence, for example, that the first truly popularly organized anti-Semitic movement arose in the predominantly agricultural section of Hesse under the leadership of Otto Böckel. Nor is it astonishing that the large organization of agriculturalists, the Bund der Landwirte (Farmers' Union), was both Volkish and anti-Semitic. Thus the Jew's role in society, however exaggerated and distorted, identified him as the enemy of the peasant, and therefore also as the cause of the German people's misfortune. The Volkish cure was vividly presented: if the snake could be removed from the root of the tree, it would flourish and the strength of the Volk would cease to be sapped.

Besides being the enemy of the peasant, the Jew was also viewed as embodying rootlessness, the force most antithetical to Volkish values. Indeed, the uprootedness of the Jew, castigated by Riehl and others, was the clue to his true nature, which made him the enemy of the Volk. The increasingly violent attacks on the poet Heinrich Heine during the late nineteenth century merit attention in this context, for Heine came to symbolize the rootlessness of the Jew as contrasted with the rootedness of the Volk. In such accusations as "One never knows where one is with him," Heine's constantly questioning, inquisitive, and critically analytic mind was brought under attack. His search for solutions to contemporary problems that would usher in a progressively better society was viewed with repugnance by Volkish thinkers. In their minds this constituted advocacy of a violent change in the direction of modernity. Heinrich von Treitschke even went so far as to accuse Heine of having prepared the way for the Revolution of 1848.²⁵ The modern society that was brought in by such a liberal revolution was a negation of all Volkish values; it represented the uprootedness of Riehl's apocalyptic vision of encroaching big cities.

Heine's advocacy of change betokened a dissatisfaction with the past and constituted an attack on the hallowed historicity of the Volk. Worse, this attitude at times ran counter to Volkish aesthetic values. Heine's rootlessness, it was felt, compelled him to be dissatisfied with knowing what "powerful, good, and beautiful" meant; instead, he de-

sired to know only the beautiful, and the best. For, according to Volk products of man's self-intermediacy of the Volk the ancient and historic culture could negate its esse

Volkish critics equate They demanded that notions of the cosmic force dissatisfaction signified in one Volkish critic picture hands in pockets, before thereby linked to a shall of the "higher reality." and a constant longing for

Ironically, in a sense, revolution, Volkish thirst the contemporary society it was not Heine's kind movement advocated. It centered upon a break life spirit into the exist would revitalize the Volk and the most beautiful," and beautiful. These val themselves in the idyllic anew in a society conducting modernity to construct the society that and in communion with forces or uncharted seas, symbolized so well. This mess was to be abolished symbolized. To attain it snake at the root of the identification within the emerge victorious.

The initial forces of delineating its heroes, en rapidly, adding to its bas necessary emendations. The ideology was elevat

* D.T. which ~~cannot~~ be said of the ~~Abend~~ angels and equates — but the concept of —

→ not term in graph, if an Euler, the

the economic structure of
separate economic reality
were his debtors, and in
legally by foreclosure.
the Jews engaged in such
peasant, the Jew repre-
sented immediately present ele-
mentalist civilization. Given
example, that the first truly
arose in the predom-
the leadership of Otto
organization of agricultural-
(ation), was both Volkish
ery, however exaggerated
of the peasant, and there-
misfortune. The Volk-
could be removed from
the strength of the Volk

the Jew was also viewed
antagonistic to Volkish
castigated by Riehl and
made him the enemy of
on the poet Heinrich
attention in this con-
fession of the Jew as
In such accusations as
Heine's constantly
mind was brought un-
temporary problems that
was viewed with repug-
is constituted advocacy
modernity. Heinrich von
ine of having prepared
modern society that was
negation of all Volkish
Heine's apocalyptic vision

dissatisfaction with the
historicity of the Volk.
Volkish aesthetic values.
to be dissatisfied with
meant; instead, he de-

sired to know only the superlative, "the most powerful, the most beautiful, and the best."²⁰ This was dangerous presumptuousness. For, according to Volkish values, the good and the beautiful were products of man's self-identification with the cosmos through the intermediacy of the Volk, which, as a "higher reality" established in the ancient and historical past, could not change any more than nature could negate its essence.

Volkish critics equated Heine's attitude with a lack of reverence. They demanded that homage be rendered to the historic manifestations of the cosmic forces and the life spirit they embodied. Constant dissatisfaction signified irreverence, a sacrilegious disposition. Indeed, one Volkish critic pictured Heine, as the Jew, standing irreverently, hands in pockets, before a picture of the Madonna.²¹ Heine was thereby linked to a shallow materialism which ignored the existence of the "higher reality." His posture once more typified rootlessness and a constant longing for change.

Ironically, in a sense, while Heine was condemned for inspiring a revolution, Volkish thinkers themselves considered it essential that the contemporary society undergo a revolutionary change. However, it was not Heine's kind of change or social goals which the Volkish movement advocated. Their idea of a revolutionary dynamic was centered upon a breakthrough of nature's primitive forces and the life spirit into the existing society: a radical transformation which would revitalize the Volk. This change would not aim at "the best and the most beautiful," but would simply reveal the *eternally* good and beautiful. These values had always existed and had manifested themselves in the idyllic past; they needed only to be actualized anew in a society conducive to their growth. Heine was accused of advocating modernity while the Volkish movement aspired to reconstruct the society that was sanctioned by history, rooted in nature, and in communion with the cosmic life spirit. These were not new forces or uncharted seas, but realities obscured by the society Heine symbolized so well. This was the desired revolution. Modern restlessness was to be abolished by that rootedness which the peasant hero symbolized. To attain it, it was necessary only to exterminate the snake at the root of the tree and for men to recapture their self-identification within the Volkish ideology. Then the Volk would emerge victorious.

The initial forces of Volkish thought did not rest content with delineating its heroes, enemies, and goals. The movement developed rapidly, adding to its basic structure many new facets while making necessary emendations. Indeed, it acquired a dynamic of its own. The ideology was elevated into a Germanic faith, an achievement

as he said
gods and
myself —

→ not eternally is easier to
grasp if one can personify it.
Enter, the Jew!

for which two men bear a large share of the responsibility: Paul de Lagarde and Julius Langbehn. An analysis of their thought will show how the Volkish ideas were rapidly diffused through the population, a process that led ultimately to their triumph over all other ideologies.

CHAPTER

A Ger

THE FIRST SIGNIFICANT designed to realize the late-nineteenth-century expressed in terms of no jarring aspects of mo of a program. Here ce cation fostered a posi lective enterprise that on Volkish principles.

If the Volkish move a cranky scholar who to Paul de Lagarde; role was filled by Juli most unknown outsid played a central role which they fashioned by the many reference ature. Above all, sul thought they were a men had advanced.

Significantly, Lagar century, years which and economic power. gained in his youth, v cism. He decided to er came a leading author tions are still valid to be bitter toward th that he received his p

* JMCN -

+

IDEOLOGY

responsibility: Paul de
their thought will show
through the population,
over all other ideologies.

CHAPTER 2

A Germanic Faith

THE FIRST SIGNIFICANT organization of Volkish ideas into a system designed to realize the good society was achieved in the works of two late-nineteenth-century German writers. What had earlier been expressed in terms of nostalgia or as a literary and visual contrast to the jarring aspects of modernity, now was fitted out with the trappings of a program. Here concepts of religion, national creativity, and education fostered a positive identification of the individual with a collective enterprise that strove to bring into being a nation structured on Volkish principles.

If the Volkish movement can be said to have had a founder, it was a cranky scholar who had changed his name from Paul Böttischer to Paul de Lagarde; if the founder, in turn, had a prophet, that role was filled by Julius Langbehn. Until recently both men were almost unknown outside Germany, though Lagarde and Langbehn played a central role in popularizing Volkish concepts, some of which they fashioned themselves. Their importance is emphasized by the many references that were made to them in later Volkish literature. Above all, subsequent scholars, educators, and politicians thought they were acting in accordance with the principles both men had advanced.

Significantly, Lagarde's life spans the second half of the nineteenth century, years which saw Germany develop into a modern military and economic power. Many of his fundamental impressions were gained in his youth, which coincided with the heyday of romanticism. He decided to enter the world of scholarship and eventually came a leading authority in Oriental studies; some of his contributions are still valid today. However, Lagarde had sufficient to be bitter toward the establishment, for it was not until that he received his professorial appointment at Göttingen.

* JMcN - self 323 for +

1924

+

teacher at a gymnasium, an occupant of his talents. Langbehn, many ambitions, but they remained unappointed academicians. They established educational order that

Volkish thinkers, among them, who will be the subjects of later of Lagarde and Langbehn was not of their lives and theories.

Volkish movement belonged to the shared by many of their fellow fulminated against the academic hurried them on to a heightened individualism and rationalizing intellectualism of the contemporary society undoubtedly reinforced by their which they aspired. Their failure did not serve only to heighten their significance. They believed themselves, more learned than the propping their endowed chairs. This came on a feeling of mission, perained his professorship. At the contact with his fellows and beating him.²

Disappointments was added a disappointment of Germany had taken. Lagarde knew it had come about he saw in modernity. Political unity did not mean, spiritual unity. The superficial means did not prevent or through the agencies of industrial-urbanism. A true unity was thus little time left in which to

find the solution to this problem, only in a collection of essays *Schriften* (German Writings) attractive because he desired to in a more elemental manner: one of the life force to be found the life force came to be his para-

mount concern, since it alone, finding expression in the spirit of the nation, could provide the fabric of national unity. Neither a committed political leadership nor economic growth nor national prosperity necessarily reflected a unity and contentment among the general population.⁴ These were only superstructures, and false ones at that, which had been imposed without regard for the spiritual character and needs of the German nation. Reflecting this thought, Lagarde coined a sentence that was to echo and re-echo in all Volkish writings: "Germanism lies not within the blood but in the character."⁵ It was a matter of inner attitudes, inherent in the individual German, his Volk, and the nation—the modern political vehicle of the Volk.

When Lagarde wrote this he was unaware of the developments in racial thought that equated the outward expression of shape and form with the inner qualities of spirituality, making the one symbolic of the other. To be sure, racial thought was developing throughout the nineteenth century. But its real diffusion did not come until after 1870, when Lagarde's outlook on the world had already been formed. However, when later writers quoted Lagarde they assumed that he had been working within the context of racial thought and had simply emphasized the inner attitudes of the Aryan race. But this was not Lagarde's original, broader meaning. His concern was solely with the appropriate spiritual attitude necessary for the regeneration of the nation. For Lagarde viewed the nation as a spiritual essence, an ideal which bound the people together.⁶ Correspondingly, lacking genuine unity, the German state required a realignment of the spiritual forces to effect a true unity of the Volk. This requirement, in turn, would be met by a Germanic faith, which, in replacing contemporary materialism, would permit the flourishing of national institutions that reflected true inner attitudes. The advocacy of this religious doctrine was Lagarde's most important contribution to Volkish thought.

Lagarde's Germanic religion was founded on the rejection of traditional Christianity, which, he thought, had been stifled in orthodoxy. The spontaneous native piety of the Biblical fathers, which had imbued them with a natural sense of proximity to the Creator, had been displaced and abrogated by the introduction of laws, of prescribed traditions and practices. The law had been substituted for the spirit. In common with most Volkish thinkers, Lagarde blamed St. Paul for having enveloped untainted Christianity in sterile Hebrew law, thus stifling the original dynamic aspects inherent in the faith of Jesus Christ. Christ, Lagarde claimed, had stressed the dynamism of the inner spirituality of man and the importance of per-

1942

+

Lagarde set himself to re-apply it to the regen-

conceived in peculiarly historical development in- similar to the dynamic individual: from revela- relationship with God. a religious spirit, which tion. Yet, this revelation icism. Like all Volkish could be genuine only was derived from the olk. Personal revelation community, a concept spel to the community e Apostles were assim- to serve as the organic ne vital, religious spirit. re indeed the recipients creativity. God's king-

tion of Jesus was not the dogmatism of the y were held responsi- precepts extolled the each Volk to its own h man was linked di- lowed with a particu- ce with the creative ples. This Germanic but it also attributed and simplicity that ed with the Volkish man out of the dis- self. For inspiration should listen to the e wood and the har-

ety, the Volk could its character and in- dingly, would not , but rather as the

concrete expression of the common spiritual, emotional, and mystic- al qualities of the German people. The roots of Lagarde's ideas, of course, were anchored in his opposition to contemporary society. His appreciation of German history led him to propose a social struc- ture similar to the one advocated by Riehl. The leadership of the na- tion was to rest with a responsible and reinvigorated aristocracy. Al- though Lagarde did call for a charismatic figure as his bitterness toward contemporary society increased, such a leader was envisaged in terms of the existing monarchy. For Lagarde, as for Riehl, all of society was to be organized into medieval estates, with the working classes transformed into artisans.¹¹ This nostalgia found almost lyrical expression: "Oh, what a delightful time the Middle Ages were, when everything was learned under the guidance of masters."¹² This Old Germanic life, Lagarde thought, was delightful because it had been endowed with the genial harmony of personalized customs and traditions, instead of the alienation and impersonalism that were characteristic of contemporary modern society. The industrial age and modern values had fossilized the individual, just as St. Paul had deprived Christianity of creativity through his rigid laws.¹³ Sup- ported by a feudally structured social hierarchy, the Germanic religion was the antidote that would regenerate the Volk.

In this context, the concepts of freedom and individualism found an appropriately Volkish expression. Rather than the tradition- defying bourgeois-capitalist individual, it was the personality cir- cumscribed by Volkish forces of life and creativity that defined La- garde's image of freedom and individualism. By stressing the creative and religious aspects which shape the individual, Lagarde further ex- panded Volkish ideology. Man derived another advantage in belong- ing to the Volk: "Free is he who is able to follow the creative princi- ple of life; free is that man who recognizes and makes effective innate principles which God put within him."¹⁴

Beyond providing such safeguards as tradition, the historicity of the Volk, the genuineness of nature, and direct correspondence with God, Lagarde hoped to guide the German nation to its destiny while simultaneously guarding it from the disruption of revolution. It was true, according to Lagarde, that men who put their faith in a mystical, God-inspired unity did indeed abhor radical change. In fact, revolution, like an illness, was considered punishment for neglecting the inner self. Successful revolutions, like those in France, had de- stroyed the organic nature of the people and led to national sui- cide.¹⁵ However, Lagarde's rejection of revolutionary change had to be taken advisedly. In principle he attempted to preserve the organic character of the Volk, and accordingly denounced the radical forces

⊕ HH takes this up.

economic progress. Finally, it retained of contemporary precepts of his-

He used the term "state." However, the structure insufficient. If the political of the Volk, it was determined. As in revolution, the state opposed crushed like an of the will. And aspiration of the

epitomized by had retained a segment of

Jewish emancipation group on German business special taxes for were barred to in the army. "officer of the where academic

again after the road. With the these restrictions of 1848 to ws realized that e their firmest and liberals, other Volkish

ed until 1918. nor professors.

Emancipation became bound up, in the end, with both the advance of liberalism and the existence of the Weimar Republic.

Jewish assimilation had been opposed by many Gentiles from the very beginning, and the Jews tried to counter the opposition in a variety of ways. During the first part of the nineteenth century many sought acceptance through baptism, while others tried to modernize Judaism—rejecting many old customs in favor of a "religion of reason." The first approach to the problem was the more successful, although many Gentiles regarded baptism as a mere ruse to gain acceptance. Nevertheless, baptized Jews were equal citizens, and they obtained posts in universities and even in the military.

But, however great their efforts to assimilate, Jews for the most part were thought to be a "state within a state." To be sure, they did organize themselves, not just into religious communities, but also into larger groups whose purpose was to battle against the infringements on Jewish rights. Typically enough, the chief organizations of this nature did not begin on a national scale until the wave of anti-Semitism at the end of the century had once more endangered the hard-won Jewish equality. The Verband Deutscher Juden (Union of German Jews) was founded in 1904, but it eventually gave way to the so-called Central Verein (Central Organization), which became the principal non-religious German-Jewish organization until Hitler dissolved it. The Central Verein was a special target for the Volkish movement. It was, typically enough, dominated by liberalism, which seemed to confirm the suspected liberal-Jewish symbiosis which symbolized Jewish "materialism" to those concerned with national unity. But in Lagarde's time this organizational structure did not yet exist, and he saw Jewish separateness in religious terms.

Lagarde felt that their religion kept Jews separate, and that they were in fact a coherent and dangerous minority within the Christian state. We shall have occasion to refer to the view of Judaism as both mysterious and without ethical roots. If Jews wanted to be Germans, why did they not throw off a spiritually valueless faith which made them so obviously separate? The stronger the longing for national unity, the more burning became the preoccupation with the Jewish question. After the failure of 1848, anti-Semitism acquired a new momentum. This is the background against which Lagarde wrote, for his prime concern was with national unity. Here again the fact that this unity was described in spiritual and not merely political terms must be given due weight. The Jews did not form a separate political or economic group. Indeed, they voted for the usual parties and admired Bismarck's work. But spiritually they seemed to be

bound together by a non-Christian and non-Germanic religion. And it was in specifically religious, not racial, terms that Lagarde opposed the Jews. From a historical perspective, Lagarde admired the early Hebrews, seeing in them a people welded together in a true, spontaneously inspired, non-dogmatic religious spirit. However they had fallen from this state of beatitude as the spiritual cement was displaced by law and dogma. As was seen earlier, Lagarde felt that St. Paul the Jew had extended this selfsame legalism into the body of Christianity. For the Jews of his own day, Lagarde had only castigation. They had lost all true connection with the ancient Hebrews; they were fossilized, a living example of the spirit run dry. Pharisaical fundamentalism was now the essence of Judaism, based as it was on the literal observance of the laws. Since such a sterile religious attitude was incompatible with a vital mysticism, it could never fuse with the living and developing Germanic religion. By the same token, the Jews could never be Germans.¹⁰

Not only was the essential nature of the Jews incompatible with the inner character of the German Volk, but their national religion made them an irreconcilable foreign element on German soil. It also made them a danger to the regeneration of the Volk. While regarding Judaism as spiritually empty, Lagarde attributed conspiratorial motives to contemporary Jewry. The lack of a true religion meant a turning toward evil, a substitution of materialistic desires for inward faith. Lagarde seems to have believed that the Jews practiced ritual murder and he even declared that the Talmud and its prescriptions rendered the Jews a powerful weapon in the unavoidable power struggle.¹¹ The Jewish question was therefore not to be met with tolerance. Instead it was reducible to a mortal contest: either the Jewish or the "true" German way of life must prevail in the end. Since Lagarde saw the final struggle as a test of both physical and spiritual strength, he considered it imperative that the Germanic religion gain public acceptance, as only such a faith would infuse the Volk with the strength necessary for victory.

If at times Lagarde seemed to display an ambivalence toward the Jews, his less venomous attitude was by no means engendered by humane considerations. Rather, it was simply because he did not work within a framework of racial thought and was unfamiliar with the latest developments in that "science"; he thus lacked a vehicle for a more systematic vituperation. Then, too, several of the accusations against the Jews were not original with him. His willingness to believe the charge of ritual murder, for instance, came at a time when the Catholic professor August Rohling had thrown Central European Jewry into a panic by charging them with the practice and Lagarde

might very well have based Talmud put forward by this. On several occasions, however, he came to a number of exceptionally well-known Germanism. But these lay rare. In direct proportion to the fact that, *quo*, the Jew became the incarnation of the Jew, Lagarde possibly possessed was the extermination of the Jew paralleled his advocacy of pharisaical contemporary stat

Eventually, Lagarde's thought ideas of Volkish ideology—the horror of the Jew. However, distinguish him as a principal spirituality, upon a Germanic into the fabric of the Volk an outlines of the various forms of the later Volkish movement, the Volk with a dynamic faith grasp its destiny. The second, a sterile religion and a consequence of an international conspiracy on German soil, led to the propagation of Germans and Jews.

The influence of Lagarde's style—short, pithy phrases that He corresponded with many in less significant than the more whole of the Volkish movement and was widely acclaimed and First World War agricultural to enshrine and maintain Lagarde rendered by many distinguished implication was that of Eugen who coined the phrase "New Romanisms of Volkish thought, Lagarde were the finest of all the to contribute to the vitalization

Where Lagarde was often a junior, had a volatile style and apart in age (Lagarde was born knew each other socially and ca

1910

+

Y

ic religion.
garde op-
dmired the
r in a true,
wever they
nt was dis-
felt that St.
he body of
nly castiga-
t Hebrews;
dry. Phari-
based as it
ile religious
l never fuse
y the same

satiable with
nal religion
soil. It also
hile regard-
inspiratorial
igion meant
ires for in-
rs practiced
its prescrip-
unavoidable
t to be met
test: either
avail in the
th physical
e Germanic
ould infuse

toward the
endered by
he did not
amiliar with
vehicle for
accusations
gness to be-
time when
al European
and Lagarde

might very well have based his accusations on the analysis of the Talmud put forward by this fellow professor from Prague. On several occasions, however, he entertained the possibility that a select number of exceptionally well assimilated Jews might be converted to Germanism. But these lapses of "kindness" grew increasingly rare. In direct proportion to his growing bitterness against the *status quo*, the Jew became the incarnation of evil. Any humaneness Lagarde possibly possessed was eventually obscured by his call for the extermination of the Jews like bacillae.²⁰ This outburst clearly paralleled his advocacy of physical force and violence to crush the recalcitrant contemporary state "like an eggshell."

Eventually, Lagarde's thought came to contain the fundamental ideas of Volkish ideology—the primacy of the Volk and the abhorrence of the Jew. However, two contributions to the movement distinguish him as a principal theorist: his overriding emphasis on spirituality, upon a Germanic faith that knit the individual Germans into the fabric of the Volk and joined the complex to God; and the outlines of the various forms of anti-Semitism that became the heritage of the later Volkish movement. The first contribution endowed the Volk with a dynamic faith which led the nation to know and grasp its destiny. The second, which accused the Jews of possessing a sterile religion and a consequently materialistic nature, of entertaining an international conspiracy, and of being incompatible aliens on German soil, led to the prophecy of a mortal struggle between Germans and Jews.

The influence of Lagarde is partly attributable to his literary style—short, pithy phrases that were easily memorized and quoted. He corresponded with many important contemporaries, but this was less significant than the more general influence he wielded on the whole of the Volkish movement.²¹ Here he played a cardinal role, and was widely acclaimed and recognized to the extent that after the First World War agricultural settlements were founded specifically to enshrine and maintain Lagarde's Germanic religion. Homage was rendered by many distinguished people, but most important in its implication was that of Eugen Diederichs. This influential publisher, who coined the phrase "New Romanticism," so basic to future developments of Volkish thought, stated that the works of Paul de Lagarde were the finest of all the books he had published in his attempt to contribute to the vitalization of the Volk.²²

Where Lagarde was often pedantic and scholarly, Langbehn, his junior, had a volatile style and message. Though twenty-four years apart in age (Lagarde was born in 1827, Langbehn in 1851), they knew each other socially and communicated many thoughts in writ-

* When Hitler made that, he is
feverish, and a fall might
people equal to bacillae?

One must raise oneself above
concepts of magnitude.

ing. Langbehn himself has given us an appreciation of Lagarde which tells us something of the differences in approach between the two. He speaks of Lagarde's "sober and practical" methodology, which depressed him.²³ This evaluation was corroborated by Langbehn's closest friend and biographer, who commented that Lagarde lacked an "intuitive" sensibility.²⁴ This sense Langbehn certainly possessed. His *Rembrandt als Erzieher* (*Rembrandt as Educator*) (1890), written in an almost Nietzschean ecstasy, attracted a wide public, and not just among those committed to Volkish ideas. For Langbehn's work could be read chiefly for aesthetic reasons, as a clarion call for a new artistic creativity opposed to the sterility of German Wilhelmine art. Yet for Langbehn himself, such a call was an integral part of a world view both Germanic and creative, and as such it excited most of his contemporaries. More popular than Lagarde's work, for a time Langbehn's book was practically required reading among the young. Although his influence did not penetrate as deeply as Lagarde's, nor did it endure as long, it was spread more broadly. By the time the book had become passé, around the First World War, it had been read by millions. Many Germans today will still admit to the profound influence Langbehn exerted on their youth.

It was the absence of the historical dimension that distinguished Langbehn's contribution to the growth of Volkish, Germanic religious thought. Less historical-minded than Lagarde, Langbehn did not share that reverence for the past which permitted the scholar from Göttingen to rest his case on the existence of true spirituality among the ancient Hebrews or the genuine spiritual harmony epitomized by the Middle Ages in Germany. Similarly, lacking Lagarde's scholarly authority and objectivity, Langbehn substituted a veritable paean in praise of intuition, stressing the irrational, the mystical, and the subjectively intuitive.

Langbehn, too, was concerned with the incompleteness of German unity and the stifling of the Volk's true expression by the prevalent political and social institutions. This state of affairs, he thought, could be overcome if Germans were transformed into "artists," if they possessed a creative sensibility which would enable them to mold their individual characters in concert with the forms of nature and landscape. These artists would be creative solely because they understood the true nature of the Volk. Through it they would be infused with a "primal energy," the life spirit descending from cosmos to man, made assimilable as it passed through the Volk. Since Langbehn went further than his illustrious predecessor in rejecting the supremacy of reason in man, the life spirit he invoked was a truly mystical, an irrational force. Of course, Lagarde had also rejected

dogmatism and his German charted pantheistic course, his pronouncement reference and weighted man, the life spirit became "With a dose of mysticism."

By elevating his mysticism transcended Lagarde's spiritualism current in history spiritualism, a theodicy of the life spirit. Upon nature as eternally ent vital ether. They he world and that its myst "true science" of theosophy foremost representative of theosophy as a r from the beyond. Lang extrasensory world, superstitious, for he could

He was, however, fascinated the remarkable Swedish eighteenth century had turned Madame Blavatski as a Swedenborg also upheld himself communed with genuine reality. However theosophy that directly a man, and the world were According to the Swedes and nature were spiritual perfect correspondence inner spiritual world. Man's the correspondence, sin whereby the life-giving and the God of the universe.²⁷ In this manner Swedenborg spiritual things; for to judge was a deception of the senses.

Langbehn's peculiar appreciation of the influence of the Swedenborg's view that every man a world or a heaven tend

D.T. The race was this to the Mosaic of

~~Salmon - order of passage. Published in the 1910s~~

pleteness of German
on by the prevalent
s, he thought, could
to "artists," if they
able them to mold
forms of nature and
y because they un-
they would be in-
ending from cosmo-
e Volk. Since Lang-
sor in rejecting the
nvoked was a truly
le had also rejected

* "With a dose of mysticism one can gild the life of a nation." 25

He was, however, fascinated by the cult of Emanuel Swedenborg, the remarkable Swedish engineer who by the middle of the eighteenth century had turned into a religious mystic. Recognized by Madame Blavatski as a forerunner of her own theosophical beliefs, Swedenborg also upheld the primacy of the extrasensory world and himself communed with those whom death had brought closer to that genuine reality. However, there was another aspect to Swedenborg's theosophy that directly appealed to Langbehn: the concept that God, man, and the world were one unity, that all shared in the same essence.

According to the Swedish mystic, all extensions of mind and body and nature were spiritual phenomena. Consequently, there exists a perfect correspondence between outward manifestations and the inner spiritual world. Man's soul, the sentient substance, was the link in the correspondence, since it stood at the center of the process whereby the life-giving fluid flows between outward manifestations and the God of the universe without whom nothing could live or be wise.²⁷ In this manner Swedenborg stressed the substantial quality of spiritual things; for to judge reality by material outward appearances was a deception of the senses.²⁸

Langbehn's peculiar appreciation of Swedenborg further reflected the influence of the Swede on the whole Volkish movement. Swedenborg's view that every man was a microcosm containing within himself a world or a heaven tended to portray the individual in the terms of

D.T. The source of our strength
was this ~~triumph~~ ^{triumph} for to believe
in the Marxism, the Primacy, the Singularity
of existence, when in fact

* Willis Constantine. Yes, but more
cautiously. The mysticism must
remain mysterious — it must not
enter the argument but people feel it rather
than discuss it.

(A.H. *myself.*
H. W. W. W.)

- constructive nature of
our mispolitics - how
early for us to consider -

✓ Cal. try if not
only local but so
in the double and.

The root of A.H.'s ideas
for the future.

1924

Volkish ideology. The "cosmic thinker" anthropomorphized the world, gave it a human form and sensibility by considering individuals as spiritual phenomena that were integral parts of the whole cosmos. Moreover, Swedenborg believed that there existed many heavens whose relative proximity to God was due to the spiritual intensity of the particular society man had inhabited while on earth. For Langbehn this allowed for a more extensive elaboration of Volkish individuality. The lives of cosmos and man were seen as parallel to each other.⁴⁰ Langbehn believed that such a concept of man and the universe provided the solution to the "riddle of the world." Above all, it provided an organic approach to life, an intimately mystical, a creative approach: "the organic is the artistic."⁴⁰

Whereas Swedenborg had applied his mysticism on a universal basis, Langbehn restricted the fusion of the individual with the spiritual world to the region of northern Germany. To the Volkish thinker it came as no surprise that Swedenborg had spent a great deal of his life in that region. In fact, it was proof that man, the environment, and the idea were mysteriously interdependent—as kindred spirits in interplay with a kindred soil. In this respect, the Swede was considered the embodiment of the "ideal German type." The mystical ideas formulated by Swedenborg were appropriated by Langbehn, but they were regarded as appropriate only to the northern German landscape, where, in Langbehn's view, the spirit of the Volk continued to function in a vital manner. Correspondingly, only individual members of this Volk could become truly organic, creative partners in the cosmic relationship.⁴¹ Swedenborg, transformed by Langbehn into a German mystic whose function was equated with that performed by the medieval mystic Meister Eckhart, became pivotal in providing the Volk with the spiritual mysticism that would lead it to its goal.

This fascination with Swedenborg was to continue throughout the development of Volkish thought, complemented by an equal attraction to the theosophy of Madame Blavatski. These theories were akin to the Volkish ideology which defined and clarified the mystical connection between the individual and the cosmos. They, too, could be reinterpreted in a way that made the Volk a necessary intermediary in the vital transfusion of spiritual substances. The soul was viewed as the essential spontaneous element—and only the Germans possessed a soul, since, according to the Germanic faiths of Lagarde and Langbehn, the Jews had long ago forfeited their souls, whereas the French had lost theirs in a revolutionary conflict. Though the existence of ghosts was denied by Volkish thinkers, whatever remained of such spiritualistic theories was incorporated in the dominant ide-

A.H.
↓
1924

* For A.H., it meant blood.
Spiritual intensity did not
exist w/o blood.

ology. In Swedenborg's rejecting disembodied self-centeredness of the doc Volkish thought—namely the person and function cated in other Germanic verse participate in a direct Christianity was facilitated popularity of pantheism: the primacy of a Creator. However, in whatever manner transformed, for Langbehn was a mystical union of in

Basing his arguments on the regeneration of the in This regeneration, this be the ethos of the Volk, wa enhance the development manifested itself only in th of a garden, or the enjoyn Rembrandt was chosen as ganic artist. As with Swe in relation to the geograph and the popular peasant tracter.⁴² Langbehn had sele creativity, because he car geographical expression w Netherlands. Here the Vo tality which linked man to nature-Volk relationship were the pillars of politica governed their mutual relat

In addition to sharing Ri nature in the social relation also admired the Middle monarchy as the proper fo concepts of nobility only themselves into artists as a " earlier Volkish thinkers like social customs, peasant virt Langbehn regarded this hisi ment of a Germanic religio that came from the extras

...morphized the
...dering individ-
...f the whole cos-
...zed many heav-
...piritual intensity
...on earth. For
...tion of Volkish
...en as parallel to
...of man and the
...world." Above
...ately mystical,

...a universal ba-
...th the spiritual
...lkish thinker it
...deal of his life
...vironment, and
...d spirits in in-
...was considered
...tical ideas for-
...behn, but they
...German land-
...olk continued
...dividual mem-
...ve partners in
...by Langbehn
...with that per-
...ime pivotal in
...ould lead it to

...throughout the
...equal attrac-
...ries were akin
...mystical con-
...too, could be
...intermediary
...l was viewed
...Germans pos-
...f Lagarde and
...t, whereas the
...ugh the exist-
...ever remained
...dominant ide-

ology. In Swedenborg's case, interestingly enough, in addition to rejecting disembodied spirits Langbehn also discarded the Christ-centeredness of the doctrine. This exhibited another tendency in Volkish thought—namely, to substitute the image of the Volk for the person and function of Christ. In Langbehn's theology, duplicated in other Germanic religions, the Volk and the God of the universe participate in a direct relationship.⁸² This distortion of orthodox Christianity was facilitated, it will be remembered, by the earlier popularity of pantheism and various spiritualist cults which stressed the primacy of a Creator whose existence subsumed that of Christ. However, in whatever manner such spiritualistic superstitions were transformed, for Langbehn and his successors the Germanic religion was a mystical union of individual, Volk, and cosmos.

Basing his arguments on these mystical tenets, Langbehn called for the regeneration of the individual through membership in the Volk. This regeneration, this belonging and molding oneself according to the ethos of the Volk, was to make man creative. The Volk was to enhance the development of the native aesthetic instinct even if it manifested itself only in the construction of a peasant hut, the layout of a garden, or the enjoyment of traditional dances, songs, and tales. Rembrandt was chosen as the example, the epitome of the simple, organic artist. As with Swedenborg, so here, Rembrandt was viewed in relation to the geographical and social environment, the landscape and the popular peasant traditions that shaped his inner spiritual character.⁸³ Langbehn had selected a Dutch painter to epitomize German creativity, because he came from Niederdeutschland, a borrowed geographical expression which denoted northern Germany and the Netherlands. Here the Volk had provided that pulsating, organic vitality which linked man to the universe and the Demiurge. Here the nature-Volk relationship was still intact; the peasants and nobility were the pillars of political and spiritual life, while ancient customs governed their mutual relationships.⁸⁴

In addition to sharing Riehl's and Lagarde's emphasis on the role of nature in the social relationships of the Volk, Langbehn, like them, also admired the Middle Ages. He came out in strong support of monarchy as the proper form of government and changed the earlier concepts of nobility only to include those who had transformed themselves into artists as a "natural aristocracy."⁸⁵ However, whereas earlier Volkish thinkers like Riehl had nostalgically located traditions, social customs, peasant virtues, and Volk bravery in the feudal era, Langbehn regarded this historical period as representing the embodiment of a Germanic religion which rested on a mystical life force that came from the extrasensory world and revealed itself in the

* A.T.
My intellectual task was to substitute
the German Nation for the Volk—with
one broad stroke A. H. could claim
to purify it by eliminating the Jews.

1924

forces of nature and landscape. These forces, in turn, had eternally imprinted themselves on the character of the Volk and race.

Ideas of race played a greater role in Langbehn's theology than in Lagarde's. Race and the vitality of nature were viewed as equivalent forces. To support his position, Langbehn quoted Benjamin Disraeli as saying that "race is everything." Consequently, if nature and race are identical, then the Germanic life spirit must perforce be racial. All Volkish virtues, the physical as well as spiritual, were considered nature's eternal gifts transmitted through blood inheritance. Race was a pervasive and decisive force.³⁶ The outward appearance of the Volk, as expressed in its physical and spiritual culture, was seen as bearing the imprint of the inner qualities, as the signature of the soul. Langbehn even told his readers that investigations into human facial characteristics were a valid part of historical research.³⁷ Gone was the possibility that as long as only cultural differences prevented assimilation into the Volk, all who lived in Germany, Jews excepted, could become true Germans. The essentially non-racial anti-Semitism of Lagarde had been superseded; emphasis upon racial incompatibility had become an indelible part of Volkish ideology.

As regards the Jews, there was a distinct intensification of antagonism in Langbehn's thought. In his earlier writings he had expressed a tolerance of orthodox Jews living within the boundaries of the German nation. He considered them a separate people who abided by and maintained their own unique law. Assimilated Jews, however, had trespassed beyond their natural limitations and by infiltrating the body of the Volk they were polluting the purity of its blood inheritance. These Jews, identified as the "pest and cholera," had to be exterminated.

In later editions of his book this "finely discriminating" prejudice was obliterated. Instead he expanded the section on the Jews and wrote a condemnation that included all of Jewry.³⁸ Indeed, he became increasingly obsessed with anti-Semitism. As his utopia failed to materialize, his frustrations drove him to imagine that there existed powerful interests deliberately obstructing the fulfillment of the Volk. The Jews bore the brunt of his frustrated hate. They were pictured as the archhounds opposed to the regeneration of German "artists." Embodying materialism and modernity, the Jews automatically opposed the inner character of the German nation. And that was clearly understandable, for they had become estranged from the vital flow of the life spirit and their souls had petrified. Since they lacked a soul and could not re-establish contact with the life force, it was impossible for them to retain basic virtues like honesty and loyalty. These virtues were part of the "genuine" force of nature

1924

+

which the Germanic race Jews were simply the worst Germans.³⁹

Whereas Lagarde had personally unstable. His admission to him an inflexibility that coming to terms with any he shocked his friends by races and the reintroduction as this would not seem to his theories on race, and that posterity viewed Langbehn

Moreover, Langbehn was in the socio-political the Momme Nissen, who lived, I had to obey," in relationship between the friends.⁴² This personal id into a yearning for a leadership of the Volk. In the end into the dictatorship of the recently in Volkish literary contemporaries, the Vienna appearance of "the great Langbehn, living in dire poverty, an idea that found expression

Eventually, the prophet produced by a life spent in world view was resolved tranquility. Langbehn converted this conversion was a glory of the Church⁴⁴ exerted his hysterical and erratic still a young man, in 1907.

In their respective work thematic framework for future Germany was undergoing in politics, culture, and economy formed this crisis, actually of ideology. They accepted primacy of man's inner emotion of his personality. As a cor nature of man, properly circ

* A. W. J. of com

um, had eternally
nd race.

theology than in
wed as equivalent
Benjamin Disraeli
f nature and race
erforce be racial.
were considered
ritance. Race was
ance of the Volk,
is seen as bearing
of the soul. Lang-
uman facial char-
87 Gone was the
reverted assimila-
s excepted, could
anti-Semitism of
d incompatibility

ication of antag-
he had expressed
oundaries of the
ople who abided
d Jews, however,
d by infiltrating
y of its blood in-
olera," had to be

ating" prejudice
on the Jews and
deed, he became
pia failed to ma-
ere existed pow-
nt of the Volk.
They were pic-
on of German
e Jews automa-
tation. And that
anged from the
petrified. Since
ct with the life
ues like honesty
force of nature

which the Germanic race alone had retained and could exemplify. Jews were simply the would-be oppressors and eternal enemies of the Germans.³⁹

Whereas Lagarde had been merely crotchety, Langbehn was personally unstable. His admiring biographer, Momme Nissen, attributed to him an inflexibility that excluded compromise and prevented his coming to terms with anything.⁴⁰ He quickly went to extremes. Thus he shocked his friends by advocating the subjugation of the "lower" races and the reintroduction of slavery.⁴¹ However, an opinion such as this would not seem to be inconsistent with a logical extension of his theories on race, and that is precisely the light in which Volkish posterity viewed Langbehn's message.

Moreover, Langbehn was dictatorial, both in his personal life and in the socio-political theories he advanced. His disciple Benedict Momme Nissen, who lived with him, wrote that "when he commanded, I had to obey," indicating that there was a master-apprentice relationship between them, contracted when they had become friends.⁴² This personal idiosyncrasy was transmuted in his ideology into a yearning for a leader who would ruthlessly actualize the longings of the Volk. In the end, in fact, his medieval social ideal dissolved into the dictatorship of the Volk.⁴³ This substitution occurred frequently in Volkish literature, as in the writings of one of Langbehn's contemporaries, the Viennese Guido von List, who called for the appearance of "the great one who comes from above." At times, Langbehn, living in dire poverty, regarded himself as just such a Messiah, an idea that found expression in his messianic style of writing.

Eventually, the prophet and Messiah gave up his quest. The tension produced by a life spent in constant pursuit of security in a mystical world view was resolved by a submergence into orthodox Christianity. Langbehn converted and joined a Catholic order. Undoubtedly this conversion was due to the attraction which the medieval glory of the Church⁴⁴ exercised upon him. In the folds of the Church, his hysterical and erratic spirit found rest, and there he died while still a young man, in 1907.

In their respective works Langbehn and Lagarde provided a systematic framework for future Volkish ideas. They had sensed that Germany was undergoing rapid change in all areas of life—in society, politics, culture, and economy. The two Volkish prophets transformed this crisis, actually the birth pangs of modernity, into a crisis of ideology. They accepted the romantic imperus and its premise: the primacy of man's inner emotions, which were the genuine indicators of his personality. As a corollary they stated that this inner spiritual nature of man, properly circumscribed by the Volk, could transform

* A. W. of course, lives with this-
He thinks of the failure of Langbehn
and wonders if it could apply to him
1910

g from his inner se-
ethical potential.⁴⁹
al—that is, the urge
ment” which had its
ing to the laws of
it was to transgress
injury on his own

ethical society on
tinually developing
y that lived by the
his as the process
but he too went to
ed the Volk as the
a. Instead of using
deal society would
merely execute the
rimus inter pares.⁵¹
ded up by linking
the Volk. Perhaps
which would allow
ality in the ethical
e had rejected in
the ethical values
Volk in this man-
edom as circum-
n it had developed
though he shared
e different results.
ould engender an

unit. Egidy's pro-
that the necessary
rough education.
and uninhibiting
for good, and the
this end he advo-
which he hoped to
ary schools) that
r status.⁵² In this
s with an educa-
l prescription to
nic religions. Al-

though Lagarde had also condemned German school systems, he had been less specific about the way these institutions might be used to bring about the triumph of his religion.

On the whole, Egidy left his theories open to several interpretations. His humanitarianism, for instance, could be regarded as subordinate to his emphasis upon the Volk. Likewise, the virtues of his ethical society could be interpreted as those genuine virtues which the Volkish movement strove to achieve through its Germanic faith. Above all, there were Egidy's educational ideas, which could become powerful weapons in the hands of the Volkish movement. Egidy himself sought his ethical goals in a Volkish political structure.

Several important men who were directly influenced by Egidy made just such interpretations. Hermann Lietz, one of Egidy's closer disciples, played a key role, as we shall see, in institutionalizing Volkish thought through education.⁵³ Others joined in as well, men such as Ferdinand Schöll⁵⁴ and Kurt Wilhelmi.⁵⁵ We shall hear more of these men later; they are mentioned here only to show that the men around Egidy were concerned with educational problems. All in all, Egidy proved to be a catalyst whose advocacy of school reform became, in spite of itself, a Volkish cause. That his influence came to be felt indirectly, through his disciples, does not detract from the Volkish tendency inherent in his mystical ideas.

However, there was a third realm—in addition to spiritualism and education—that drew Egidy into closer identification with the Volkish movement: the Jewish question. On this subject he shared something of Lagarde's ambivalence. Egidy ridiculed the assertion that half a million Jews could possibly corrupt fifty million Germans.⁵⁶ Applying his ethical presuppositions, he claimed that those Jews who had a capacity for an inner spiritual development would fuse with Germanism, thereby negating their distinguishing Jewish traits. But it was this, his acceptance of the supposedly objective uniqueness of the Jews—an acceptance that necessitated the qualifying consideration: “those nobler Jews who had a capacity for inner spiritual development”—that indicated Egidy's view of the Jews in general.⁵⁷ He accepted the stereotype of the Jew and in that context asked the typically Volkish question: How could the Jews, with their spirit of usury and love of ostentatious materialism, have gotten the upper hand in Germany? The conclusion was simple, and also Volkish: the German people must share the guilt for such a state of affairs and consequently must expiate their sin.⁵⁸ “If we fifty million Germans can purify ourselves, Jewry will wither away.”⁵⁹ Whether or not Egidy's concept of purification was bound up with the triumph of ethical humanitarianism did not in the end matter for the Jews who would

* The effectiveness of the *Geist* depended upon this all-embracing quality of the Volk.¹³ The community of the Volk constituted that unity for which the soul yearned. Its existence and vitality were a prerequisite for that intuitive grasp of the cosmos which signified the function of the true *Geist*.

Quite naturally, the peasant ideal, historicity, and culture played pre-eminent roles in Diederichs' concept of the Volk, as they had for the other romantic and Volkish thinkers. The publisher was himself of peasant stock. Revealingly, he wrote in a personal memorandum: "I have always felt close to mother nature. Partly out of the tradition of my forebears, partly out of the core of my spiritual orientation: This has involved within me a desire to anchor myself in reality in order to find from it the path to the cosmic-metaphysical."¹⁴ Pride in his peasant origin was combined with an interest in German cultural history. In discussing the science that would probe the origins of the German Volk (*Stammeskunde*), he maintained that its primary evidence consisted of what the peasants had to say about themselves. Furthermore, the historical needs of such a science necessitated the use of old myths and sagas. Only through these media, Diederichs felt, could the soul of the Volk communicate with the city dwellers, who, unfortunately, had lived for too long away from the soil.¹⁵ To further such a cultural revival and integration, Diederichs undertook to edit ancient German myths and sagas, since only these literary forms had captured the spirit of an age when Germanic culture was still pure.¹⁶ In line with this effort, he published *Der Wehrwolf*, whose author, Hermann Löns, he held in high esteem.

All this has the familiar Volkish ring about it. But in certain respects Diederichs differed with the more popular, extremist movement. Although the submergence of the New Romanticism into the Volk provided the answer to the German crisis of ideology even for Diederichs, he drew a line at accepting the narrow Volkish precepts which claimed a special uniqueness for the German nation. For him, the true community of the Volk was not equivalent to a population united simply by powerful political or national interests; nor was racial uniqueness the sole force that cemented the interests of the nation. It was here that Diederichs displayed his greater broadness of mind. What Volkish thinkers restricted to a purely German inheritance and prerogative, Diederichs by the same logic extended to other nations, other peoples. He viewed the new racial theories with some ambivalence, but race, to be sure, was something with which the true metaphysical impulse chose to interact. However, more than race and the metaphysical impulse was required for the formation of

* A.H. — he would achieve this all-embracing quality

the spiritual base of the were possessed by Ger cosmic entity, there w clusive rights to such a Diederichs, meant rende counterparts could be fo

The cosmic orientati mount importance in d And though such a feeli the privilege must not separate the various cos their different cultural nationalistic categories. time as a stage in the ev otherwise chaotic longi were not yet creative. upon the past, they ter those ideals which eman sisted of those who reall together by a shared e strength and heightene the property of one nat or national purity was spiritual life. Diederichs his admiration for Chin tue of their anti-imperie new life and direction to

Such ideas seem to c soil and the Volk. In Diederichs' thought, a to the Jews. On the one ha were indispensable to t the continent, they for thus softened the discor the other hand, he treat eign race. Their ethos v and their cosmic sense d diffused outward. In E priority and penetrated ascribed to the Jews a c the whole Volkish mov from which they intelle ity. It is partly in these

A scene be about the by the Dron

this all-embracing Volk constituted that and vitality were a mos which signified

and culture played Volk, as they had The publisher was in a personal mem- ure. Partly out of ore of my spiritual e to anchor myself cosmic-metaphysi- with an interest in e that would probe de), he maintained peasants had to say ds of such a science nly through these Volk communicate lived for too long eival and integra- n myths and sagas, e spirit of an age with this effort, he n Löns, he held in

But in certain re- , extremist move- Romanticism into s of ideology even grow Volkish pre- erman nation. For ivalent to a popu- onal interests; nor ed the interests of his greater broad- i purely German in- t logic extended to hacial theories with g thing with which e, however, more than t the formation of

the spiritual base of the nation. Although all the necessary elements were possessed by Germans and their *Geist* was an indispensable cosmic entity, there was nothing that had decreed Germany's exclusive rights to such a relationship. Being Germanic, according to Diederichs, meant rendering allegiance to a New Romanticism whose counterparts could be found even among Slavs, Celts, and Jews.¹⁷

The cosmic orientation of the nation and the Volk was of paramount importance in determining whether they possessed a *Geist*. And though such a feeling could emanate only from a rooted people, the privilege must not be confined too narrowly. In attempting to separate the various cosmic identities that distinguished peoples and their different cultural heritages, Diederichs tried to avoid narrow nationalistic categories. He regarded the nationalistic furor of his time as a stage in the evolution of cosmic law, a process crystallizing otherwise chaotic longings. But such nationalistic aspirations alone were not yet creative. Merely historically oriented and focused upon the past, they tended to ignore the immediate dynamism of those ideals which emanated from the soil. The true community consisted of those who really lived in the *Geist*; its members were bound together by a shared experience of the absolute which gave them strength and heightened their sense of life.¹⁸ As the *Geist* was not the property of one nation or race to the exclusion of others, racial or national purity was not a prerequisite for an enjoyment of the spiritual life. Diederichs' tolerance in this area can be traced partly to his admiration for Chinese, Indian, and Islamic ideas, which, by virtue of their anti-imperialistic orientation, he thought could impart a new life and direction to European culture.¹⁹

Such ideas seem to contradict the important emphasis upon the soil and the Volk. Indeed, there was a certain ambivalence in Diederichs' thought, a tension best exemplified in his attitude toward the Jews. On the one hand, he rejected anti-Semitism, since the Jews were indispensable to the peoples of Europe—dispersed throughout the continent, they formed a link between the various countries and thus softened the discord produced by the growing nationalism. On the other hand, he treated the Jews as a distinctly different and foreign race. Their ethos was determined by their Near Eastern origins and their cosmic sense derived from a static center, the law, and then diffused outward. In Europe, on the other hand, cosmic feeling had priority and penetrated inward to the center, the Volk.²⁰ Diederichs ascribed to the Jews a characteristic that was similarly projected by the whole Volkish movement: they lived according to a sterile law from which they intellectualized and suffocated their inner spiritual-ity. It is partly in these terms that modern anti-Semitism has to be

A scene between A.H. & Diederichs
about the Jews. A.H. refuses
by the Dionysian people indulgence
A.H.

check Home
(1919 at neg?)

understood: Germans searched for a uniqueness to distinguish themselves from aspects of modernity they disliked. They wished to draw out of their personality and national heritage new forms and insights whose validity could be proved by their relationship to an eternal, cosmological entity. Consequently, since they rejected all mechanization and industrialization, they ascribed intellectual and "Oriental" qualities to the people who had supposedly forced modernity upon the Germans—the Jews. Since Diederichs ascribed racial differences to Jews and Europeans but also held that Jews performed an indispensable function in Europe, his views seem ambivalent and indeed confusing. However, that Diederichs could undisturbedly tolerate such contradictory ideas can best be understood in the context of his ever-increasing occultism. Though he would personally reject such an association, his peculiar emphasis on the cosmic and metaphysical led him precisely in this direction.

At the beginning of his publishing venture, Diederichs had abandoned the concept of theosophy as too narrow and had dropped the term "theosophical" from the title of his publishing house.²¹ Behind this lay his rejection of the existence of ghosts, a belief entertained by the kind of spiritualism popular in his day. Nonetheless, the basic precepts of the cosmological outlook he embraced were close to theosophical thought. This was especially true when he talked about forces arising from the earth, extrasensory forces that captivated one's senses, and he came to believe in mystical fluids that united the individual with the community. To be sure, these were not (as they were for theosophists) electric currents flowing from the cosmic ether, but the similarities were undeniably significant. Diederichs saw the same laws contained in history: history not as a chronicle of facts but as a thickening of events which exemplified the universally valid laws of life. The life force, the cosmic reality, was the essence of the historical process.²² In entertaining such concepts, Diederichs came close to sharing Langbehn's identification with spiritualism and with the theosophical painter Fidus' view that the artistic impulse to produce a painting and the stimulation communicated by the completed work of art are matters of extrasensory perception.²³ Indeed, Fidus came to be associated with Diederichs professionally, illustrating many books brought out by his publishing house.

The sun was another image with theosophical connotations that Diederichs used, but he preferred to regard the cult he built around it as traceable to the Volk rather than to spiritualism. The festival of the changing sun, an old Germanic custom, was endowed by Diederichs with new meaning and was celebrated yearly among his circle of young adherents. Thus, a Volk custom and spiritualistic

symbolism became intertwined. "My view of God is this, The rays of the sun represent visible substance transferred from the cosmic beyond and added, typically without need to think about this. I only of the Geist."²⁴

This trend in Diederichs' great importance in the development of worship will occupy us again as we acclaim him as an authentic Germanic meaning. In a mythic North, who truly yearned for the source of the seemingly foggy Volkish journals, which seemed to be of considerable readership, Germans.²⁵

Diederichs' own faith was of Eckhart, not those of the mystical and individualistic pietism. His argument in fact that the individual's soul could apprehend the divine emanate from the sun. And knowledge it gains from a direct connection in the framework of a Germanic faith and strict dogma. He had been simply a law giver, not a prophet. Instead, he was the signifier that could be apprehended. This was true Christianity, not a perversion? Here the sun was the sign. He accused St. Paul of error and dogmatism.²⁷ This line of thought provided an added rationale.

Diederichs' attitude toward the sun was hostile and he even admitted nervousness.²⁸ He published works of historical and traditional concern on the other hand, not on the sun also taken up by enthusiasts.

* If the work of preparation is done, a scene in Eckhart, Diederichs and A. H. could be very good.

1919 day? +

ss to distinguish them. They wished to draw new forms and insights tionship to an eternal, rejected all mechanizational and "Oriental" forced modernity upon ribed racial differences vs performed an indisambivalent and indeed undisturbedly tolerate ood in the context of ould personally reject the cosmic and meta-

Diederichs had aban- v and had dropped the lishing house.²¹ Behind ts, a belief entertained Nonetheless, the basic braced were close to : when he talked about es that captivated one's ids that united the in- ese were not (as they ving from the cosmic significant. Diederichs y not as a chronicle of plified the universally lity, was the essence of concepts, Diederichs tion with spiritualism w that the artistic im- communicated by the isory perception.²³ In- derichs professionally, blishing house. tical connotations that he cult he built around ritualism. The festival om, was endowed by brated yearly among stom and spiritualistic

symbolism became intertwined. Diederichs himself wrote to a friend: "My view of God is this, that I regard the sun as source of all life." The rays of the sun represented material infused with the *Geist*, a visible substance transferring invisible heat. After all, the rays came from the cosmic beyond and bestowed actual warmth upon man. He added, typically without really committing himself: "I do not want to think about this. I only want to experience within me the growth of the Geist."²⁴

This trend in Diederichs' philosophy contained an element of great importance in the development of the New Romanticism. Sun worship will occupy us again, for in the Volkish movement it was acclaimed as an authentic religious expression with cosmic and Germanic meaning. In a mythological manner, the Germans of the North, who truly yearned for the sunlight to penetrate their perpetual mist and fog, were said to have a special hunger for knowledge of the source of the seemingly sacred light. And even present-day Volkish journals, which still communicate their ideology to a not inconsiderable readership, acclaim the sun as the sole God of the true Germans.²⁵

Diederichs' own faith was Christianity according to the teachings of Eckhart, not those of the Bible. In essence it was a mixture of mystical and individualistic precepts, a fusion of solar cultism and Christianity. His argument in favor of this belief stated that only the individual's soul could appreciate and understand the life forces that emanate from the sun. And since the soul was linked to the Volk, the knowledge it gains from a personal mysticism can have meaning only in the framework of a Germanic Christianity.²⁶ Diederichs, like Lagarde and Langbehn, saw Christianity split along the lines of spontaneous faith and strict dogma. Christ, accordingly, could not have been simply a law giver, even though he was a Jew, and divine at that. Instead, he was the sign and symbol of the cosmic spirit, a spirit that could be apprehended only in a quasi-mystical union with it. This was true Christianity according to Diederichs. How then had it been perverted? Here the publisher again echoed Volkish reasoning. He accused St. Paul of encasing the true theology in a strangling dogmatism.²⁷ This line of thought, of course, was truly Volkish and provided an added rationale for a deepened anti-Semitism.

Diederichs' attitude toward conventional Christianity was quite hostile and he even admitted that the very name of Christ made him nervous.²⁸ He published works demonstrating the falsity of the historical and traditional concept of Christ. His own metaphysical ideals, on the other hand, not only found ideological expression but were also taken up by enthusiastic young adherents who, at Jena, joined

* It makes little sense to discover him

together in what was called the Sera Circle. The circle, under Diederichs' guidance, celebrated the yearly festival associated with the changing of the sun, and since its members were part of the Youth Movement, it also emphasized folk music and dancing. Diederichs himself never disguised the circle's essentially heathen aspects. On the contrary, he reveled in its pseudo Greek and Roman settings, its wild Dionysian dances, and its colorful red banner with a flaming gold sun in the center.²⁹ Part of this display was geared to shock the philistines in the small university town, to give the circle an anti-bourgeois bent. But the greater part was a direct expression of Diederichs' sincere belief in the genuinely spiritual, or *geistige*, nature of the cult.

Diederichs' penchant for the occult significantly colored other areas of his ideology, as it related to culture, civilization, social organization, and politics. Specifically, he envisaged that his "idealism of deeds" would be effected by a small group of initiates who had perceived and fully comprehended the mystical intermingling of active, tangible forces with the cosmological elements that were symbolized by the sun. These men, imbued with their mystical concepts, would form what Diederichs called the "secret yet open *Bund* of those who have the *Geist*."³⁰ They were secret insofar as they constituted a self-conscious and dedicated cell; open in that they created a public forum to propagate their views. The effectiveness of such organizations was clearly perceived by Diederichs in records of analogous sects drawn from the annals of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. It was indeed to this age that he went for inspiration on the subject and found a historical parallel in the order of the Rosicrucians and the *illuminati* which had flowered during the seventeenth century.³¹ It is surely significant that ideas, cults, and theories which in the rest of Europe were simply passing fads became associated in Germany with serious world views.

That only a small number of men were required to form the circle of initiates also reflected Diederichs' elitist tendencies. Indeed, he believed that as few as a dozen metaphysically oriented men could make a decisive impact on the public. To initiate greater numbers would be to spoil the uniqueness and individuality of the cult as well as to contradict the natural division that raised the noble few above the common multitude. In this respect, it is not surprising that Diederichs proclaimed his adherence to the romantic notion of the inherent superiority of culture over civilization and the comparable values of their origins: "Democracy is civilization, while aristocracy equals culture."³² Needless to say, Diederichs considered himself part of the aristocracy with a commensurate responsibility to reviv-

talize the cultural life already being implemented in the Sera Circle, and the public forum?

Diederichs applied the state. Culture and the nation, since joint alone could implement the revitalization of the considered merely the segment of the Volkish powerful, super-patriotic (Germans), who opposed was a servant of the C wrote, one cannot place living organism on an deed different, then the his Volkish counterpart when he called for an profound cultural for neither his cult nor the ceptance of the status they persistently demand

As a replacement for the grounded nation guided a hierarchy established posed of professions, he allowed for universal education would be the characteristic aristocratic his writings and the important elitist tinge: of initiates and the intelligentsia who had to be educated that of the Volkish and their rejection of the themselves the great : the power of large n part of modernity depended for realizing the revolt to the intrinsic nature whose elitism did not succeed where they had

* Tells A. H. of the twelve first men of the Jews, and the *Harmoniker Bund* of Berlin is A.H.G. after receding

→ a totally offensive kind of thinking, A. H. decided. Volkish philosophy was filled with bugs, measles, cubicle-racks, mages, and various other distractions

circle, under Diederichs associated with the were part of the and dancing. Diederichs heathen as Greek and Roman red banner with splay was geared own, to give the was a direct ex-ely spiritual, or

ly colored other on, social organi- his "idealism of tes who had per- ingling of active, were symbolized ystical concepts, t open *Bund* of far as they con- hat they created tiveness of such records of anal- and seventeenth r inspiration on ler of the Rosi- ring the seven- ts, and theories ads became as-

form the circle ies. Indeed, he ted men could reater numbers the cult as well ble few above ising that Diederichs of the in- he comparable ible aristocracy idered himself bility to revi-

talize the cultural life of Germany. This obligation, he felt, was already being implemented. For did not the initiates form the Sera Circle, and the publishing house and *Die Tat* provide the public forum?

Diederichs applied a similar framework and system of values to the state. Culture and the aristocracy were to form the bulwark of the nation, since jointly they reflected the interests of the Volk and alone could implement the "idealism of deeds" which would permit the revitalization of the Volk.³³ The state and political activity were considered merely means to an end, a view that was basic to a large segment of the Volkish movement, though it was not shared by the powerful, super-patriotic organization called the *Alldeutsche* (Pan-Germans), who opposed Diederichs in this respect.³⁴ At best, the state was a servant of the *Geist*, of the Volk and its interests. After all, he wrote, one cannot place the forms of organization and the soul of a living organism on an equal plane.³⁵ If the two phenomena were indeed different, then they could also be viewed as incompatible. Like his Volkish counterparts, Diederichs made exactly such a division when he called for an open confrontation between the state and the profound cultural forces inherent in the Volk. In ideological terms, neither his cult nor the Volkish movement ever advocated the acceptance of the *status quo*. In fact, before and especially after 1918 they persistently demanded a revolutionary overthrow of the state.

As a replacement for the state, Diederichs envisaged a culturally grounded nation guided by the initiated elite. The society would be a hierarchy established according to estates, or corporations, composed of professions, trades, skills, and other occupations. Though he allowed for universal suffrage, the dominant body in the new nation would be the chamber of corporations, which would provide the indispensable aristocratic principle of government.³⁶ In this respect his writings and the ideas of the Volkish movement shared an important elitist tinge: on the one hand, there were the select, the initiates and the intelligentsia; on the other, the vast mass of outsiders who had to be educated and led. Both ideologies, Diederichs' and that of the Volkish movement, were aristocratic in nature. With their rejection of the modern, industrial, mass society they denied themselves the great advantage of the modern mass movements—the power of large numbers. Their opposition to the "masses" as part of modernity deprived them of the only really effective means for realizing the revolution they desired. But that, of course, was due to the intrinsic nature of their elitist presuppositions. The Nazis, whose elitism did not suffer from the same handicap, were able to succeed where they had only laid the ideological basis. When the Na-

after 1918

+

Diederichs
cult
H

tional Socialists assimilated the Volkish ideology, this obstacle was removed and both swept on to victory under the banner of a thousand-year future for the Volk.

However, there was a difference between Diederichs' elitism and that of the rest of the Volkish movement which made his own more positive and effective in the propagation of their mutual ideological precepts. It contained an activist drive, a messianic dynamism, to effect certain changes in the immediate situation. In some respects this ingredient could be compared with the stress Egidy placed upon education. Diederichs realized that even though a mystical disposition on the part of individuals would produce some changes in the group character, by itself the metaphysical impulse that would illuminate life could effect nothing. Consequently, he was prone to admonish the older romantics for having ignored the fact that this impulse had to be transformed into an "idealism of deeds."³⁷ Logos would have to become a deed, a determined act. A dialectical interchange, a tension between matter and spirit, was inevitable, and indeed desirable. It rendered the individual's inwardness more dynamic and made his urge toward unity in the community of the Volk all the more meaningful.³⁸ In short, Diederichs was more cognizant of the reality around him and made use of its malleability more so than the earlier Volkish prophets.

But the Volkish movement was quick to grasp the initiative and make up for lost time. Its emphasis on effecting a change in "external reality," in the here and now, increased and became an important element in the popular appeal of the ideology. In the years during which Diederichs wrote—before, during, and after the First World War—the Volkish movement felt compelled to act against its enemies, domestic and foreign. After all, this was the time when Germany's economic and social problems were aggravated, when a general disorientation and chaos seemed to have reached a climax, when the prophecies of Germanic apostles like Langbehn and Lagarde seemed verified.

Diederichs, as we have described him so far, was of course important in other respects besides his direct connection with the Volkish thinkers. Some of his ideas did in fact run parallel to—albeit on a more respectable, intellectual, and moderate plane—the more extreme ideas of the Volkish movement. But although his ideas at times were too subtle for the movement and although, significantly, he never belonged to the association of Volkish publishers, Heinrich von Gleichen's influential journal, *Gewissen*, could write after Diederichs' death that he had been in profound harmony with the spirit of his times.³⁹ It was, above all, through his contacts in the publishing world,

among authors and a ble, influence.⁴⁰

Many of his authors as Diederichs did him and even scholarly who indulged in a pi the concept of "my seemed to be the cru tempt to solve them. authors (though D whose early work : relatively precise for Jewish context. He through which con preterd by the soul : whose soul function ened feeling for nat tained in each partic and cognizant of all absolute, of the divi lute through the co forces which stand l cept of metaphysic and further defined which the soul surge

The elemental my could acquire the s For Buber, it was n Jewish mystics from of the Jewish Volk. like Eckhart truly u manic Volk. With mythos drives the sc ity. The God Yahw cosmic deity, is now of humanity, the Lo for unity and subtr than that of Diede Volk was and remai notwithstanding, th those which went to

It was not Dieder considerable influer

ology, this obstacle was
er the banner of a thou-

Diederichs' elitism and
uch made his own more
their mutual ideological
nessianic dynamism, to
ation. In some respects
ress Egidy placed upon
h a mystical disposition
ie changes in the group
: that would illuminate
was prone to admonish
ct that this impulse had
87 Logos would have to
interchange, a tension
id indeed desirable. It
ynamic and made his
olk all the more mean-
ingzant of the reality
ore so than the earlier

asp the initiative and
a change in "external
became an important
. In the years during
fter the First World
ict against its enemies,
me when Germany's
, when a general dis-
a climax, when the
and Lagarde seemed

, was of course im-
ction with the Volk-
rallel to—albeit on a
:—the more extreme
ideas at times were
nificantly, he never
ers, Heinrich von
ite after Diederichs'
ith the spirit of his
ie publishing world,

among authors and artists, that he wielded a wide, if not always tangi-
ble, influence.⁴⁰

Many of his authors reflected the same concern for mystical forces
as Diederichs did himself. Generally they were of the same moderate
and even scholarly character, except for those of Hermann Löns,
who indulged in a more extreme and irrational expression. Through
the concept of "mythos" some of these authors formulated what
seemed to be the crux of the world's problems and of Diederichs' at-
tempt to solve them. Martin Buber, more of a friend than one of his
authors (though Diederichs published one of his many books),
whose early work and thought was linked to this school, gave a
relatively precise formulation of the meaning of "mythos" within a
Jewish context. He considered it an eternal function of the soul
through which concrete events grasped by the senses were inter-
preted by the soul as divine and absolute. Correspondingly, a man
whose soul functioned genuinely necessarily experienced a height-
ened feeling for nature's irrational forces as communicated and con-
tained in each particular experience.⁴¹ Thus he would be sensitive to
and cognizant of all his experiences as lying within the context of the
absolute, of the divine. The mythos, then, linked man to the abso-
lute through the continuous intervention of the divine and cosmic
forces which stand behind it. Although this is also Diederichs' con-
cept of metaphysical experience, it was Buber who elucidated it
and further defined the mythos as the elemental state of being from
which the soul surges forth in the quest for unity outside itself.

The elemental mythos was contained in the Volk, where alone it
could acquire the stature commensurate with its potential power.
For Buber, it was not contemporary Jewry, but rather the medieval
Jewish mystics from Poland, the Chassidim, who typified the mythos
of the Jewish Volk. Similarly, for Diederichs only German mystics
like Eckhart truly understood the metaphysical impulse of the Ger-
manic Volk. With the Volk as the receptacle, Buber tells us, the
mythos drives the soul on to ever deeper unity with the cosmic real-
ity. The God Yahweh, who already was cast in the role of a national
cosmic deity, is now broadened to become the God of "all," the God
of humanity, the Lord of the soul.⁴² In many respects, Buber's longing
for unity and submergence into the spiritual essence goes further
than that of Diederichs. For Diederichs the containment in the
Volk was and remained more central than for Buber. The difference
notwithstanding, the ideas that went into Buber's Zionism paralleled
those which went to comprise the New Romanticism.

It was not Diederichs himself but one of his authors who exercised
considerable influence upon Martin Buber. Arthur Bonus is for-

Diederichs, Eckhart, & A. H.

*Buber does not appear
but is discussed.*

*Afterward, Hitler is much affected
by Buber's return of concrete events
etc → 000*

gotten today, but in Diederichs' and Buber's early years his impact was extensive. He was one of the original cosmic thinkers in search of the mythos, which he too hoped would resuscitate the suppressed emotional nature of humanity; and he too thought that it had finally manifested itself in the form of the New Romanticism to become the way of the future. For Bonus the mythos also had its roots in the proximity of man to the "all," to nature, to his own life, and to fate. It was an ethereal force, which in neither Bonus' nor Diederichs' cosmology could find a place within legal formulations or the dogmatism of orthodox Christianity. And although the older mythos, that of the Biblical fathers and the ancient Germans, had tolerated terms and emotions such as "guilt," "repentance," and "grace," since then the mythos had undergone historical transformations that had made it unreceptive to the old, confined piety.⁴³ Even in the form of the Reformation, which it had assumed when it burst into human history on one of its rare occasions, the mythos was unacceptable to contemporary needs. All these previous manifestations had been merely transitory episodes; but they were nonetheless the true moments from which humanity had drawn its breath and life.⁴⁴ For Bonus as for Diederichs, the Volk comprised the primary community through which the mythos expanded to manifest itself as the ideal love of all mankind.⁴⁵

The religious undercurrents of the mythos were twofold: Christianity and a Germanic faith. As the metaphysical impulse emanated from the Volk, where alone it found a basis for self-realization, its character would bear the mark of particular peoples. Christianity would inevitably have to undergo a process of Germanization, in which the true mythos of the age could come into being and the individual could manifest his ethical potential. Clearly then, for Bonus, as for the Volkish ideologues and prophets, a Germanic Christianity was an integral part of the New Romanticism.

Bonus, however, deserves more detailed consideration on two additional counts that distinguish him from Diederichs. First, he placed great emphasis on the importance of the human will. According to him, it was this faculty which facilitated man's contact with the mythos and strove for community in the Volk. For Bonus, as for the Volkish thinkers to a lesser degree, the will signified that personal dynamic which was the cement of the Volk's faith.⁴⁶ Such considerations reflected a Kantian influence, on the one hand, and a Nietzschean re-emphasis, on the other. The latter had indeed been appropriated by the New Romantics. Karl Joel's book *Nietzsche und die Romantik (Nietzsche and Romanticism)* (1905), published by Diederichs, praised Nietzsche as the most romantic soul of all times,

as a man who had an was achieved by equa of the soul to penetr: New Romantics, was tastic moral fluctuat alone could produce richs' tension betwee as Bonus' emphasis up Thus Nietzsche was a and furthered the tre New Romantic yearn

Small wonder that sche (1918) and, late: the transformation o Nietzsche of Nationa was senseless without upon the internal bec necessity of struggle the material and the s richs and Bonus, was struggle. The element depicted in Hermann ground. Hitler was i will" in the service of

Bonus' second imp: science from true re history, religion, an study and disciplined this manner to be tec The scholarly examir merely quantitative i problems of existence a recognizable purpo: aged man's intellect t man's sensitivity to t might perform an au those aspects of the within him. These h steed to deal with i supplemented the stre accomplishment. The r to a rejection of scie significant and meani

*D.T. A.H. T
to the Cosm
the voice
Russia. b

ly years his impact
ic thinkers in search
itate the suppressed
ht that it had finally
anticism to become
o had its roots in the
wn life, and to fate.
us' nor Diederichs'
lations or the dog-
the older mythos,
mans, had tolerated
and "grace," since
ormations that had
ven in the form of
burst into human
was unacceptable to
estations had been
netheless the true
ath and life.⁴⁴ For
primary commu-
nifest itself as the

as a man who had an unlimited passion for the *Geist*. This distortion was achieved by equating Nietzsche's power of will with the passion of the soul to penetrate the cosmic essence. Here, according to the New Romantics, was a soul full of great tensions, capable of fantastic moral fluctuations, and able to feel that lust and sorrow which alone could produce an irresistible urge toward the infinite. Diederichs' tension between the material and the spiritual forces, as well as Bonus' emphasis upon the will, became boundless romantic passions. Thus Nietzsche was adopted into the pantheon of New Romanticism, and furthered the trend toward activism that was so much a part of New Romantic yearnings.

Small wonder that it was possible for Ernst Bertram in his *Nietzsche* (1918) and, later, Alfred Bäumler to take the next logical step: the transformation of the passion into an advocacy of force. The Nietzsche of National Socialism was the great battler for whom life was senseless without the good fight. The New Romantics' accent upon the internal became, in the end, a blatant praise of force, of the necessity of struggle to realize the new utopia. The tension between the material and the spiritual, a dichotomy accepted by both Diederichs and Bonus, was then resolved into the glorification of violent struggle. The element of force engrained in the Volkish ideology, as depicted in Hermann Löns' *Der Wehrwolf*, had moved to the foreground. Hitler was to call this urge an expression of the "heroic will" in the service of the Volk.

Bonus' second important contribution was his sharp separation of science from true reality. By science he meant the knowledge of history, religion, and nature that is acquired through scholarly study and disciplined learning. He considered the insights gained in this manner to be technical information of value only to the herd.⁴⁷ The scholarly examination of religion, for example, would provide merely quantitative information; it could never solve the higher problems of existence.⁴⁸ If the achievement of formal knowledge had a recognizable purpose, it was essentially negative. It only encouraged man's intellect to strive against his visions. That is, it fossilized man's sensitivity to the cosmic forces. However, such knowledge might perform an auxiliary function if it permitted man to perceive those aspects of the cosmic vision which created doubts and fears within him. These hindrances could then be overcome by a will steeled to deal with them.⁴⁹ Thus, acquired knowledge, at its best, supplemented the strength of the will; at its worst, it was a petty accomplishment. The rejection of empiricism implied here amounted to a rejection of science—indeed, of all human knowledge—as insignificant and meaningless. In this respect, the New Romanticism

ation on two ad-
s. First, he placed
ill. According to
contact with the
or Bonus, as for
gnified that per-
faith.⁴⁶ Such con-
one hand, and a
had indeed been
k Nietzsche und
(), published by
soul of all times,

NOT

1941
D.T. A.H. trusting his sensitivity
to the cosmic forces "he listens to
the voice that calls him to attack
Russia. He does not know it is D.T. A.

1941 +
I do not even know
and Henry just following order

A.H.
K

followed its predecessor in exhibiting a strong streak of anti-intellectualism.

For the numerous parallel developments to be found in the Volkish ideology and in the ideas of Diederichs and Bonus, there are a significant number of dissimilarities. Racial ideas, for example, figured minimally in the thought of these men. They would have deplored, as did some of the Volkish thinkers, the crude racial ideas of the Nazis—ideas which nonetheless had thrived within the Volkish movement and eventually ripened for the Nazi harvest. But, above all, the elitism of these men was irreconcilable with the use of the mass movement introduced by some later Volkish groups and carried to victory by the Nazis. In the end though, one is tempted to ask whether there really did not exist a logical development from one to the other. What had been an element of anti-intellectualism in Bonus and Diederichs was transformed by the National Socialists into an irrationality that the "herd" could grasp and act upon. What had been a sophisticated ideology for these men was for the Nazis a system of thought whose rejection of acquired knowledge facilitated the use of mass propaganda.

Although these differences should be taken into consideration, it is the similarities that are significant. When, as in this case, sufficient material is available, the historian can perceive a trend of causality, of interconnection between similar and especially contemporary phenomena. He can also evaluate the complementary nature of the several systems of thought and the responsibilities they share for the final use to which they were put. Was Germany unique in Europe? Other nations had movements similar to the New Romanticism. Barrès and Maurras in France also called for an internal renewal of their nation, a transformation that would entail both a metaphysical religious conviction and political action.⁵⁰ But this impetus never penetrated as deeply as in Germany, nor did it lead to the same end. It is important to clarify this once again, since German historians, of late, have been happy to point out parallels with other Western nations. Yet, even though these may have shared certain elements with the New Romanticism, the chemistry of the German movement was quite different. In Germany, the romantic, Volkish ideology established a frame of reference which reached deeper into the nation.

CHAPTE

Ancien

THE SENSE of a glorious the New Romanticism was its rootedness in night. Rootedness in equally ancient lands imprint of the people tion of youth, of the terated, heroic, and thrust into history. It would consequently h with its youth. The h reaffirmed this imperat historical ties, that ot prived of its roots. Th ing, a fixation of one where traditional virt Tacitus were the Germ

In the Volkish thin they turned to history of the past to the moc and their favorite autl came to be Tacitus. T historian wrote was co the desired implication propaganda within a Tacitus was primarily tues of fresh strength : eracy, Volkish authors the favorable descripti

cial stock and purity, as well as to their religious outlook and mythology.

The Roman propagandist became the prophet expounding the ancient purity of Germanic virtues. In many respects, it was exactly this emphasis on purity that was stressed by the Volkish movement. After all, in *Germania*, Tacitus had described the Germans as people who had not mixed with other tribes, who, according to modern terminology—precisely the sense in which it was used—had retained the distinction of being a special Volk. Other arguments were derived from this ancient description to substantiate such a rationale. Houston Stewart Chamberlain used such arguments, and as he was the most influential of racial theorists (accepted despite his English origins), what he had to say about Tacitus became normative. For Chamberlain the Roman's work confirmed the racial purity of the original Volk. As additional evidence, Chamberlain cited Tacitus' description of the physical homogeneity that distinguished the Germans.² From Tacitus' unfavorable depiction of the Jews—which the Volkish historians connected with the belief that the Jews were racially impure—was derived the concept that enmity between Germans and Jews was time-honored and eternal. It followed that the contrast between good and evil, between being German and being Jewish respectively, was indeed enshrined in antiquity and must be retained as a precept of the modern Volk.

But Volkish thinkers did not rest satisfied with showing that the history of the ancient Germans provided the indispensable antecedent to the present Volk. If the Goths had been so heroic in antiquity, if they had surpassed such prestigious and powerful nations as Greece and Rome in strength and endurance, then they must have represented an absolute value. The Germanic tribe's entrance into historical consciousness, correspondingly, could not have been simply an accidental, fortuitous, or even evolutionary occurrence. It was something greater. Its appearance was motivated by more profound and eternal forces.

It was in this context that Volkish ideologists noted that Tacitus had written at a time when the Germans made their historical debut. His descriptions, therefore, took on an added meaning and constituted more than just a chronology of historical events. They became in practice the prophetic words of an apostle preaching the inception of a government by a great, exceptional people. Thus, Chamberlain could assert that the virtuous, victorious Germanic tribes had appeared on the historical stage just in time. While Rome was deteriorating in its degeneracy, the heroic men from the North scourged the slothful civilization and saved humanity. The envigo-

rating force of the German dawn for humanization, and Roman power. Chamberlain only depicted efficient use of this power all the degeneracy that "chaos of the peoples unfortunately not established quered peoples and to culture and virtues as to

That the Germans Romans were readily a mans are taken to be they did not accept the dic man had also asserted the contrary, it was no mans had had a unique scribed it? Moreover, money did not signify this time, it was state- versity of ways. As th the Germans, it was c the inception of time entered history as a Greece and Rome. T cient Greeks into Ger classical heritage. Sim been led by Germanic a tree growing from herit anything; it was genius that had ever ex

Even before Chamberlain's historical lessons, exemplified by the virtues that history over Rome. History formed into the present generation. This processing the period of turn-

Felix Dahn's immens (Rome) (1867), illustrated by Königsberg, inspired by the concept

A. H. quota Tacitus, or, better, Chamberlain quota him during their meeting. Ch: "I have many Jewish friends, but I am firmly obliged to point out to them that the last belief of Tacitus and modern-day historians is that the enmity between Germans and Jews is time-honored and eternal. The Jews, as a people at the least are two thousand years old and more, the

few as a force for good in modern society must be at least here on this continent since a thousand years to early.

1923

+

1923

1923

+

ligious outlook and myth-

ophet expounding the any respects, it was exactly y the Volkish movement. ed the Germans as people ho, according to modern it was used—had retained ther arguments were de- stantiate such a rationale. rguments, and as he was cepted despite his Eng- acitus became normative. med the racial purity of hamberlain cited Tacitus' at distinguished the Ger- of the Jews—which the f that the Jews were ra- at enmity between Ger- nal. It followed that the eing German and being in antiquity and must be

d with showing that the ne indispensable antecede- en so heroic in antiquity, werful nations as Greece they must have repre- e's entrance into histori- ot have been simply an occurrence. It was some- by more profound and

gists noted that Tacitus de their historical debut. ded meaning and con- orical events. They be- n apostle preaching the ceptional people. Thus, riorious Germanic tribes e. While Rome was de- nen from the North humanity. The envigo-

rating force of the Germans embodied a "saving angel, the giver of a new dawn for humanity." ³ Rome, the seat of a distinguished civilization, and Roman power fell to the inheritance of the Germans. Chamberlain only deplored that the Nordic race had not made more efficient use of this power, that it had failed to completely eradicate all the degeneracy that surrounded it, thereby putting an end to the "chaos of the peoples." In other words, the ancient Germans had unfortunately not established themselves as the sole rulers of the conquered peoples and territory; they had not imposed their superior culture and virtues as the only standards of excellence.⁴

That the Germans had inherited temporal power from the ancient Romans was readily accepted by Volkish thinkers, and if the Germans are taken to be the Goths, it was, in fact, historically true. But they did not accept the view held by the early romantics, that Nordic man had also assimilated the cultures of Rome and Greece. On the contrary, it was now argued, the reverse was the case. The Germans had had a unique culture of their own. Had not Tacitus described it? Moreover, their appearance which dissolved Roman hegemony did not signify that they had lain dormant until then. Prior to this time, it was stated, they had influenced human events in a diversity of ways. As the genuine, as the solely pure race of peoples, the Germans, it was claimed, represented all that was creative since the inception of time. From the very beginning, before they had entered history as a group, Germans had affected the cultures of Greece and Rome. This theoretical assertion transformed the ancient Greeks into Germans and divorced modern Greeks from their classical heritage. Similarly, Rome in its glorious period must have been led by Germanic leaders. In essence, the German Volk was like a tree growing from particularly profound roots: it could not inherit anything; it was the sole repository of all creativity and any genius that had ever existed.⁵

Even before Chamberlain, Volkish thinkers attempted to draw historical lessons, examples, and analogies to apply to the present. The contemporary Germans, in their view, had to reidentify themselves with the virtues that had carried the ancient Germanic tribes to victory over Rome. History was telescoped: the heroic past was transformed into the present to infuse a similar heroism into the modern generation. This process of idealization was especially influential during the period of turmoil that preceded the unification of Germany.

Felix Dahn's immensely popular novel, *Kampf um Rom* (*Fight for Rome*) (1867), illustrates this well. The author, a professor of history at Königsberg, made early German history his specialty. Inspired by the concept of the Volk, he produced a lively rendition

* Chamberlain w Hitler

*

of the early trials and achievements of the German people. The novel, overflowing with an enthusiastic passion for the Volk and the fatherland, was distributed by Dahn to isolated German communities in the Tyrol with the express purpose of preventing them from being Italianized and absorbed.⁶ The author's enthusiasm for the Germanic forebears, their beliefs and virtues, eventually caused the Catholic Church to charge him with responsibility for a revival of the Wotan cult in Germany. A conscientious Protestant, Dahn disclaimed any such purpose.⁷ We can easily believe that Dahn had no formal connections with the cult. However, he cannot evade responsibility for having drawn popular attention to a glorified German past in which the mythology, the moral, ethical, and social values, and the physical qualities of the Goths were extolled. It seemed to him and to his readers that these marks of distinction were sadly lacking in modern Germany.

Written just after Italy had achieved unification, the novel exhorted Germany to do likewise. Through its recital of the struggle for supremacy between the Goths and the Romans, it attempted to depict that celebrated national valor which had carried the Goths (used interchangeably with Germans) to victory. In the account of the German conquest of Italy during the Dark Ages, the novel's protagonist was, in fact, the entire Gothic nation. The blond, manly exterior of these people mirrored a purity of soul, which furnished the sufficient reason for their success (symbolically, the "Italianized" daughter of King Theodoric becomes infected with the debauchery of the Romans and eventually drowns in a Roman bath). Contained within this purity of race were also the elements of honesty and courage which, in the struggle against the rationality and calculating cleverness of the prefect Gethagus, caused the defeat of this Roman. But it was the physical prowess relentlessly employed in the pursuit of victory that distinguished the early Germans from the effete and debauched Romans, and enabled them to serve as models for modern Germany.⁸

Diederichs claimed that the ancient Germanic virtues had been forged, tempered, and strengthened in this mortal and bloodthirsty conflict between the two peoples.⁹ Dahn doubtless would have concurred. Indeed, the idealized combat of old rendered more attractive the Volkish idea of the indispensability of the good fight, of the war that steeled the nerves and character of a nation. In a spirit similar to that found later in Löns' *Der Wehrwolf*, Dahn praised war as creating the heroes that are celebrated in legends, poems, and history. He also stressed an additional quality possessed by the ancients: their peasant roots.¹⁰ The reasoning again runs true to Volkish form; the

Germans are inherently of the soul and historicity in the Nazi period expressed the were still searching for the mus were fighting each other tled peasant culture."¹¹ By movement, this fusion of an adoration of a primitivist and loyalty as much as sword.

If Dahn, who styled himself the logical consequences not. As the ancient German of the Volkish tree than religious beliefs, mythology failing source of primeval were lacking in modern symbolism, such as the ruins as that of Mittgart, a place man, assumed an immediate sociologist Eugen Dühring'sification with the past which *Judenfrage* (*The Jewish Question*) gods of antiquity were still of old. They had endured which they were replaced rich's had indulged in talk actively longed to recap marked trend toward a complete

As a central part of this trend, a sharp rise in the late 19th century. It played an important role as early as 1848. The symbolism and attributed some had a more positive A common explanation of northern peoples, inhabitants longing for the sun, which conceptual center of the plastic argument, most people been invoked as recently stated by the National Socialist exile in Egypt, a man who

A. H. Love
speaker of the

the German people. The passion for the Volk and the isolated German community purpose of preventing them the author's enthusiasm for virtues, eventually caused responsibility for a revival of Protestant, Dahn disbelieve that Dahn had no responsibility, he cannot evade responsibility to a glorified German past, and social values, and the needed. It seemed to him and his generation were sadly lacking in

nification, the novel ex-
its recital of the struggle
the Romans, it attempted
which had carried the Goths
victory. In the account of
Dark Ages, the novel's
nation. The blond, manly
of soul, which furnished
ologically, the "Italianized"
ted with the debauchery
(Roman bath). Contained
elements of honesty and
rationality and calculat-
caused the defeat of this
relentlessly employed in
the early Germans from
abled them to serve as

manic virtues had been mortal and bloodthirsty; doubtless would have considered more attractive the good fight, of the war on. In a spirit similar to the praised war as creation, *poems, and history*. He by the ancients: their to Volkish form; the

Germans are inherently of peasant stock, as reflected in the fusion of the soul and historicity in the roots of the Volk. As one writer of the Nazi period expressed the thought: "At a time when the Semites were still searching for their promised land and Romulus and Remus were fighting each other, our fatherland already possessed a settled peasant culture."¹¹ Both in the popular mind and in the Volkish movement, this fusion of peasant and ancient Germanic traits led to an adoration of a primitivism that encompassed such virtues as honesty and loyalty as much as it extolled the "righteous" power of the sword.

If Dahn, who styled himself a national liberal, hesitated to espouse the logical consequences of an idealization of the past, others did not. As the ancient Germans represented people closer to the roots of the Volkish tree than their modern counterparts, so the ancient religious beliefs, mythology, and gods also came to represent the un-failing source of primeval strength and genuineness, qualities that were lacking in modern religious doctrine. Consequently, ancient symbolism, such as the rune and the swastika, and old legends, such as that of Mittgart, a place believed to be the original home of Nordic man, assumed an immediate and urgent importance. The eminent sociologist Eugen Dühring only extended Dahn's passionate identification with the past when, in his bitter book against the Jews, *Die Judenfrage (The Jewish Question)* (1880), he wrote that the Nordic gods of antiquity were still sentient, vital forces residing in nature as of old. They had endured even through the years of neglect, years in which they were replaced by Christianity.¹² Where men like Diedrichs had indulged in talk about a Germanic Christianity, others, who actively longed to recapture the roots of Germanism, displayed a marked trend toward a committed heathenism.

As a central part of this growing paganism, solar occultism experienced a sharp rise in the late nineteenth and the early twentieth century. It played an important role in Diederichs' thought and had adherents as early as 1848. At that time, C. H. Carus reflected on solar symbolism and attributed the inequality of the races to the fact that some had a more positive attitude toward the sun than had others.¹³ A common explanation of the origin of sun worship contended that northern peoples, inhabitants of foggy regions, expressed a natural longing for the sun, which, to them, represented light, hope, and the conceptual center of the cosmos. Such is the tenacity of this simplistic argument, most popular at the turn of the century, that it has been invoked as recently as 1955. At that time it was succinctly restated by the National Socialist Johann von Leers, residing in secure exile in Egypt, a man who had learned nothing and forgotten nothing.

A.H. loves it when Dedrich speaks of this -

mulating their racial
dic book *Juden sehen*
t to Nordic peoples
eneral, as proved by
egy period when the
g contemplative epi-
ike from the clouds,
ctoriously ascending
ad given way to the
n its recurrence had
ebirth.¹⁴

concept of *karma* (re-
out the increasingly
it collection of Ger-
gods with a startling
popular inspirational
elungenlied. Brought
a special favorite of
1920's, the *Edda* was
lications devoted to
e studies transformed
irgin Mary into the
rthday of Christ as a
light, from the king-

the sun cults and Ger-
irrational. They en-
plausible reality—as,
of Leers, who stated
nder that those who
Leers did not skirt
it.¹⁷ Yet this nonsense
hat revealed some of
hostility to modern
such ideas attractive
occultist beliefs. The
rationalistic romanti-
er of men receptive
s of national heritage,
essential to another
t provided a link be-
that spanned a thou-

sand years of neglect. The past, which Christianity had done its best to destroy, could be recovered and applied to the present needs of the Volk through occultism. Occultism was the chalice that quenched their thirst, and at the same time made irrelevant anything that historical scholarship might do to show events in an entirely different light.

The most influential of such occultist groups gathered in Vienna during the last two decades of the nineteenth century. Their mentor was the Austrian Guido von List, a private scholar obsessed with the desire to prove that Vienna was the holy city of old. (Significantly enough, List's ideas originated in a German border region which was subject to constant interaction with the neighboring Slavic lands.) List, in a manner that should now be familiar, combined nature and history, with nature as the divine guide emanating a continuous life force. Whatever was closest to nature, so ran the formula, was closest to truth. The German Aryan past was closest to all that was true, to all that was laudatory and worthy of emulation. In this Germanic past, materialism and rationalism had found no sanction; indeed, they were purely moden afflictions.¹⁸

But how was contemporary man to recapture the past? According to List, all that was required was immediate participation in the landscape that still bore the indelible traces of the glorious Germanic civilization. "We must read with our souls the landscape that archeology reconquers with the spade. . . if you want to lift the veil of mystery [that of the past] you must fly into the loneliness of nature."¹⁹ Nature was the guide to the divine, since the search for truth must of necessity follow in the footsteps of her creative will. This appreciation of landscape, however, required a more profound initiation. It was necessary that one become infused with the historical past of the Volk, with the most genuine part of the life force, ancient Germanic wisdom. The wisdom had been suppressed by the strictures of Christianity; indeed, that alien dogma had attempted to eradicate it as a vestige of paganism. But it still existed, permeated with the life force, though in a dormant state. The task of historians and Germanists was to revive it by deciphering the ancient script and symbols, and to convey its meaning to modern Germans. In furtherance of this end, List himself published a study of the runic symbols in 1908 as well as a two-volume work entitled *Deutsch-mythologische Landschaftsbilder (German Mythological Landscape Pictures)* (1891), in which he reconstructed Austria's Aryan past. The mythology in question was that of the German gods, who, during the Goths' conquest of the Western world, had determined the fate of man. One

chapter, for example, dealt with traces of Germanic religious sites in the environs of Vienna—evidence of the presence of ancient Germanic culture in the heartland of Austria.

In his investigation of the language that would pierce the centuries of Christian oppression, List boasted that he had discovered the *kala*, or secret language of the Germans. Since some of the *kala* words also occurred in the Kabala (a series of ancient books of Jewish mysticism), List also claimed that these works were part of the ancient German wisdom that had survived Christian persecution. His *Secret of the Runes* (1908) gave rise to the ideas of his disciple, Philip Stauff, an assiduous writer for German Volkish publications, who thought that this secret language had survived more tangibly in the wooden beams of old buildings. This theory was advanced in Stauff's book, appropriately entitled *Runenhäuser* (Rune Houses) (1913).

List's emphasis on using purely mystical means to arrive at a system of intuitive history brought him close to the ideas of the theosophists. Like Madame Blavatski, List claimed to possess a "secret science" which, by means of the life force—in Blavatski's case it was an omnipresent vital ether—unveiled the past. His emphasis on solar symbolism, a belief that all impressions necessarily come from an extrasensory world, and communication with the ghosts of a bygone age further reflected an especially close connection with theosophy. In some instances, both movements were linked by a common membership. Johannes Baltzli, the founder and moving spirit of the Guido von List Society, figured importantly in theosophical publications, while the chief financial supporter of the society was likewise an avowed spiritualist.²⁰

However, occultism affected List and his disciples in other ways as well. One of them was in the realm of political theory. List was associated with the Schönerer group of anti-Semitic pan-Germanists and contributed to their official publication.²¹ Like Schönerer, he dreamed of a political system that, sanctioned by natural and ancient custom, would revitalize the Volk and institute the appropriately Germanic form of government. At the center of this vision stood the figure of a leader, a "strong man from above," one whose advent was inevitable. He also believed—another indication of the influence of occultism—that this leader would arise reincarnated, "reborn," from among the gallant dead of the ancient battlefields. List shared the concept of *karma*, which was basic to such a belief, with Madame Blavatski, as shown in his account of his dream of the messianic leader published in the pages of *Prana*, a German theosophical journal.²² This idea of a *Führer* had added significance in that it supplied

a goal for List's longings of national disturbance entered era of the 1920's the largest union of white-cc gehilfen Verband (Gerr this "almost forgotten m age of darkness."²³

From Austria, List's id those figures one encow difficult to explain to n mensch, a man who nev live in poverty without c pact on his fellow men ' lieu was the artists' quacoterie of like-minded j tury. The poet Stefan G as was a promising youn of the ornaments of Ger

This circle in which S celebrated in Franziska 2 Dames Aufzeichnungen describes the members "the cosmics." They dis the individual, along wi Instead, the greatest va common to all persons c posedly found in the ble in turn, was equated, on that created the true lif while, creative persons equated Germanism an racial characteristics ex man Volk. The emphas cient German cult of ti vive. By so doing, they substance—though thei by a desire to flaunt the chose a different path, l youthful convictions 2 elaborate a more detai that further on.

Supported financially meager existence whil

* A. H. 's belief during 49 W I.
D. T. keeps feeding it to him
A. H. has fantasies of the warrior he was once.

He thinks like this on the 3 kilometer walk to the front w messag.

D.T. occasionally reinforces this thought without knowing the answer.

all the
memb
dead.

+

manic religious sites in
presence of ancient Ger-

uld pierce the centuries
ad discovered the *kala*,
me of the *kala* words
cient books of Jewish
orks were part of the
ristian persecution. His
e ideas of his disciple,
i Volkish publications,
ived more tangibly in
eory was advanced in
äuser (Rune Houses)

eans to arrive at a sys-
the ideas of the theoso-
o possess a "secret sci-
Blavatski's case it was
His emphasis on solar
arily come from an ex-
he ghosts of a bygone
ection with theosophy.
id by a common mem-
ing spirit of the Guido
osophical publications,
ociety was likewise an

disciples in other ways
cal theory. List was as-
emitic pan-Germanists
21 Like Schönerer, he
by natural and ancient
tute the appropriately
of this vision stood the
one whose advent was
tion of the influence
eincarnated, "reborn,"
pattichelds. List shared
a belief, with Madame
ream of the messianic
nan theosophical jour-
nain in that it supplied

a goal for List's longings and provided a concrete way out in times of national disturbance and unrest. And it was indeed in the disoriented era of the 1920's that List enjoyed something of a revival. The largest union of white-collar workers, the Deutschnationale Handelsgelhilfen Verband (German National Union of Apprentices), praised this "almost forgotten man" for having shed light and hope into the age of darkness.²³

From Austria, List's ideas filtered into Germany by way of one of those figures one encounters in the Volkish movement who are so difficult to explain to modern readers. Alfred Schuler was a *Luft-mensch*, a man who never earned a penny and somehow managed to live in poverty without caring—above all, one who exerted great impact on his fellow men without ever publishing a line. Schuler's milieu was the artists' quarter of Munich, Schwabing, where a whole coterie of like-minded people had gathered at the turn of the century. The poet Stefan George was an important figure in the group, as was a promising young man named Ludwig Klages, later to be one of the ornaments of German philosophy.

This circle in which Schuler moved and was looked up to has been celebrated in Franziska zu Reventlow's autobiographical novel, *Herrn Dames Aufzeichnungen* (*Mr. Dame's Notebook*) (1902). In it she describes the members of this esoteric group, who were known as "the cosmos." They distinctly frowned upon individualism and held the individual, along with his precious idiosyncrasies, in low esteem. Instead, the greatest value was placed upon the primeval substance common to all persons of the same race. It was a racial substance supposedly found in the blood of the peoples.²⁴ This racial characteristic, in turn, was equated, on a philosophical level, with a cosmic principle that created the true life and was necessarily present in any worthwhile, creative personality. Like List, the members of this circle equated Germanism and race; the life spirit was identical with the racial characteristics exemplified by the common blood of the German Volk. The emphasis on blood was directly derived from the ancient German cult of the Druids, which this group attempted to revive. By so doing, they hoped to become infused with the primeval substance—though their eccentricity was not insignificantly affected by a desire to flaunt their heathenism. George, to be sure, in the end chose a different path, but Schuler and Klages remained loyal to their youthful convictions and experiences. Klages, in fact, went on to elaborate a more detailed cosmic philosophy, but we shall discuss that further on.

Supported financially by Gustav Freytag's son, Schuler eked out a meager existence while giving some public lectures in Munich and

940 I.

to him
arrives he
source.

all them WWI — "I am a
member of the ~~callant~~ dead
dead. For the idea is Venus
that lives in I at the front.

1922

Dresden. The most significant of these may have taken place at the Bruckmanns' private house in Munich in the year 1922.²⁵ During this year, Adolf Hitler was a regular guest at the house and it is altogether likely that he heard some of Schuler's ideas from the Schwabing oracle himself. In his ideas and lectures, Schuler closely followed the concepts and hypotheses formulated by List. He too rejected all academic scholarship in favor of an inner correspondence with Germanic antiquity. Schuler, however, subtly twisted or reformulated some ideas; for example, he identified the life force inherent in nature more closely with that flowing in the blood. Moreover, he placed greater emphasis on the outward cultural expression of the Volk spirit. For instance, he claimed that the life force could be aroused and vitalized through a participation in heathen rituals and through the medium of spiritualism. He had earlier even tried to cure Nietzsche's madness by means of an ancient Roman rite of spirits.²⁶

In his lectures Schuler condemned urbanism and equated it with the intellectual's materialism which perverted true creative thought. In opposition to the cosmopolitan intellectual stood the adept whose "idealism" stemmed from the mysterious call of the blood, from the source of the genuine creative instinct. It was only through the ancient wisdom diffused in the blood, Schuler claimed, that he personally had "lived" antiquity, that he had known it intimately and had actually "seen" the life of long ago. His Germanic blood had allowed him to "see with his soul," to experience deeply what Christianity with its alien dogmatism had for so long repressed. However, this interaction with the Germanic past could not be attained in any meaningful way by the individual on his own. Life, as understood by Schuler and his fellow mystics, could only be lived meaningfully in unity with others, in concert with the "initiates"—that is, the members of the Volk. It functioned best on a wide basis, the way towns and houses together formed a part of the landscape.²⁷ This organic unity had been known in the heathen times of old. It was the task of the contemporary generation of Germans to strive to recapture it.

Another link between List and Germany was supplied by an eccentric character named Tarnhari. Whereas Schuler was at least sincere, Tarnhari, in all probability, was simply a crook and an opportunist. He introduced himself to List as the reborn leader of the old Germanic tribe of the Völsungen. Enraptured, List attentively lent his ear to Tarnhari's ancient memories of tribal history and found that, "singularly enough," they corresponded with results from his own "research."²⁸ That he believed Tarnhari itself speaks volumes for the quality of his thought. Tarnhari went on to make a career in

the Volkish movement. He cause by publishing a *Swastika* displayed an astral figure of a man kneeling in a landscape of nature, and Volter representation. Like m: Tarnhari, around the turn sect. And like those of the reled with everyone invol action. To obtain funds, that could be used as stamp such picture showed Baldu other portrayed Thor, the were executed for him by I vocate of a Germanic ideolo vorite student of the Wilhel of respectability and corre his admirers and advocate Dietrich Eckart, Hitler's n Socialist party.²⁹ And, ind office was not untainted by of reference.

But still we say that such tional, the insane. What is these viewpoints were accl cal. Schuler himself admitte and primeval forces in a p and powerful enough to be his humility, Schuler attril reminded of Thomas Mann showed such ideas in their guided or was he half mad; relevant and does not accou seriously by too many "inte so far as to consider the sa but that would fail to expla society likewise thought th in fact be implemented with

In Germany, List's ideas other Volkish precepts. M subtle changes or emphasize who participated, and in wl sible political alternatives fr

* P.T. This is what he went away with after hearing Schuler - that Germanic blood would allow one to see with one's soul.

+

ve taken place at the year 1922.²⁵ During at the house and it Schuler's ideas from and lectures, Schuler formulated by List. or of an inner corre- er, however, subtly ple, he identified the a that flowing in the the outward cultural claimed that the life participation in heal- alism. He had earlier ns of an ancient Ro-

and equated it with true creative thought. stood the adept whose f the blood, from the only through the an- imed, that he person- it intimately and had ic blood had allowed ly what Christianity essed. However, this t be attained in any t. Life, as understood be lived meaningfully es"—that is, the mem- basis, the way towns scape.²⁷ This organic old. It was the task of ive to recapture it.

as supplied by an ec- huler was at least sin- crook and an oppor- born leader of the old , List attentively lent al history and found with results from his itself speaks volumes n to make a career in

the Volkish movement. He made an ideological contribution to the cause by publishing a *Swastika Letter* from Leipzig, whose title page displayed an astral figure with a sun-drenched swastika floating over a man kneeling in a landscape. The combination of sun worship, exaltation of nature, and Volkish faith could hardly have found a better representation. Like many members of the Volkish movement, Tarnhari, around the turn of the century, attempted to organize a sect. And like those of the others, it too broke down, since he quarreled with everyone involved instead of getting down to concerted action. To obtain funds, Tarnhari printed and sold small pictures that could be used as stamps. All were of a Volkish character. One such picture showed Baldur, the Germanic god of light, while another portrayed Thor, the god of action, of strength. (The pictures were executed for him by Ludwig Fahrenkrog, himself an eager advocate of a Germanic ideology, who, oddly enough, had been the favorite student of the Wilhelmine painter Anton von Werner, a model of respectability and correct taste.) But Tarnhari, like Schuler, had his admirers and advocates. In fact, his principal advertiser was Dietrich Eckart, Hitler's mentor in the early days of the National Socialist party.²⁹ And, indeed, the world view Hitler carried into office was not untainted by Schuler and Tarnhari's Germanic frame of reference.

X

But still we say that such beliefs verged on the magical, the irrational, the insane. What is important, however, is that at that time these viewpoints were acclaimed precisely *because* they were magical. Schuler himself admitted that the actual realization of the cosmic and primeval forces in a person could make that individual strong and powerful enough to be considered a magician. Not famous for his humility, Schuler attributed such powers to himself.³⁰ One is reminded of Thomas Mann's *Mario and the Magician* (1929), which showed such ideas in their terrible reality. Was Schuler simply misguided or was he half mad? That either might be true is not really relevant and does not account for his influence. For Schuler was taken seriously by too many "intelligent" persons. Of course, one could go so far as to consider the sanity of the audience just as questionable; but that would fail to explain why such a large sector of respectable society likewise thought that these ideas did reflect reality and could in fact be implemented with honor and justice.

In Germany, List's ideas, spread by Schuler, intermingled with other Volkish precepts. Many people accepted them. Some made subtle changes or emphasized some points while ignoring others. But who participated, and in what manner, in deriving respectable, plausible political alternatives from these ideas? The Volkish movement

* 1945 in the Book Bunker
Hiller remembers the book.

was like a spiderweb. The men who entertained these mystical ideas knew one another personally and borrowed from one another's works. Moreover, they contributed to one another's journals. When *Die Sonne*, a periodical advocating the Nordic world views we have discussed, was founded in 1923, its contributors represented a number of subtly varying viewpoints, but all were united in the common effort. Among them were the National Socialist Darré, the racial theorist Günther, the ardent Volkish novelist Kapherr, and the conservative Deutschnationale Dr. Paul Bang, who will occupy us later. Furthermore, once the Weimar Republic had been established, the small coteries in Jena, Vienna, and Munich broadened out to include much of the political right. Not all accepted the Germanic visions of a List or a Schuler, but it is astonishing how many did. Beneath the respectable mien of serious gentlemen in top hats coursed a mystical ideology of Germanism and race. The more desperately frightened they were by the direction the Weimar state seemed to be taking—into economic crisis and possibly eventually into Communism—the more they turned to the concepts, slogans, and rationale of the Volk and all that it signified.

Both literature and art effectively diffused the cult of Germanism among the population at large. By this route it penetrated the national bloodstream, especially in popular novels such as Hermann Burte's *Wiltfeber, der ewige Deutsche* (*Wiltfeber the Eternal German*) (1912). The hero rejected the bourgeois values of those around him and took up a search for the Volk, for those of his people who could be vitalized with the true feeling of Germanism. He attempted to resurrect a world that was being strangled by modernity. The world of the past was more genuine and beautiful than contemporary reality. Its civilization was epitomized by the peasants who had tilled the soil for centuries past. In contrast, the hero felt that his own century had become debased, that the ugly was exalted instead of the naturally beautiful, that the herdlike masses dominated religious feeling and aesthetic taste. In Wiltfeber's eyes, this degeneracy symbolized the death of the Christian God and the dissolution of the covenant of the Old Testament. These had to be supplanted by a Germanic Christianity through which the springs of the Volk's salvation could flow again. A Germanic god must rule again: it only remained for Germans who still felt him in their souls to raise him to the appropriate stature. The narration of the story abounded in Germanic symbols and even contained a new version of the *Götterdämmerung*: the hero and his beloved die high on a rock, destroyed and consumed by a thunderbolt. Modeled presumably after the god Thor, Wiltfeber represented a Germanic hero leading a people who were still

"healthy" enough to y
opposed rule by the he

Burte went on writi
Wiltfeber's popularity.
of which he made the
Samson was the supern
he received from the w
became a supporter of
admiration of Goethe,
allegiance of great nati
Goethe in his grasp of t

To Hermann Burte
Blunck, who, if not as
lific of the Volkish no
though he relied more
Die Urwatersaga (*The*
sun was portrayed as th
existed such a sensitive
when it receded at nigh
Blunck's heroes also so
ogy, and it was on beha
see a resurgence of the
scends the worldly, as t
tribution of our Volk to

Blunck came to the
founded, in 1903, an as
pose was similar to tha
the re-establishment of
nature. He often expres
ment and frequently pu
contribute to Adolf Stö
was fairly typical of ma
tributed to the Volkish
detail, Blunck mirrored
that was typical for Ge
and eventually became t
(Corporation of Author
Burte was, he was never
possible to share Volkish
problem which will occu
women believed in the V
Germanically oriented
whole. Blunck's anti-Ser

entertained these mystical ideas borrowed from one another's or one another's journals. When the Nordic world views we have contributors represented a number all were united in the common Socialist Darré, the racial theologist Kapherr, and the conservative who will occupy us later. Further had been established, the small had broadened out to include accepted the Germanic visions of how many did. Beneath the top hats coursed a mystical more desperately frightened war state seemed to be taking ventually into Communism—slogans, and rationale of the

fused the cult of Germanism but it penetrated the national elites such as Hermann Burte's *Wiltfeber the Eternal German*—his values of those around him those of his people who could Germanism. He attempted to shed by modernity. The world more useful than contemporary reality the peasants who had tilled the earth felt that his own century exalted instead of the nature-dominated religious feeling this degeneracy symbolized dissolution of the covenant supplanted by a Germanic of the Volk's salvation could again; it only remained for to raise him to the appropriately bounded in Germanic symbol the *Götterdämmerung*: the destroyed and consumed by the god Thor, Wiltfeber a people who were still

"healthy" enough to yearn for the Volk leaders and kings, and still opposed rule by the herd.

Burte went on writing, but none of his later novels ever attained *Wiltfeber's* popularity. Many of his works developed the sun myth, of which he made the Old Testament Samson a physical symbol; Samson was the superman whose power depended upon the strength he received from the warmth of the sun's rays.³¹ In his old age Burte became a supporter of Hitler; as Frederick the Great could enlist the admiration of Goethe, so he maintained Hitler should command the allegiance of great national poets. Burte felt that he was superior to Goethe in his grasp of the significance of the organic Volk.³²

To Hermann Burte we must add the younger Hans Friedrich Blunck, who, if not as popular as Burte, was certainly the most prolific of the Volkish novelists. His approach was similar to Burte's, though he relied more directly on the ancient German sagas. In his *Die Urvatersaga (The Legend of the Primeval Father)* (1934), the sun was portrayed as the mother of all life; according to legend, there existed such a sensitive relationship between the sun and life that when it receded at night the king would be subject to "bad hours." Blunck's heroes also sought after God, the God of German mythology, and it was on behalf of the German Volk that Blunck wanted to see a resurgence of the ancient godheads. "The Romantic who transcends the worldly, as the mystic did the scholastic, is the great contribution of our Volk to the idea of creation."³³

Blunck came to the Volkish movement as a youth. At school he founded, in 1903, an association called Die Germanen, whose purpose was similar to that of the contemporary Youth Movement—the re-establishment of spiritual and physical contact with Germanic nature. He often expressed a deep admiration for the Youth Movement and frequently published in its journal.³⁴ Later he went on to contribute to Adolf Stöcker's various publications. His development was fairly typical of many young people who entered and later contributed to the Volkish movement. As we will shortly see in greater detail, Blunck mirrored the predominant radical turn to the right that was typical for German youth. He too went the whole gamut and eventually became the president of the Reichsschrifttumskammer (Corporation of Authors) under the Nazis. But not being a racist, as Burte was, he was never fully at ease in the Third Reich.³⁵ For it was possible to share Volkish attitudes without being a racist. This is a problem which will occupy us in future chapters, for some men and women believed in the Volk but also held that certain privileged and Germanically oriented Jews could become a part of this mystical whole. Blunck's anti-Semitism became muted and subdued and the

ment. Art was tied to the Volk, but a slightly more contemporary one, with more refined aesthetic sensibilities. However, more important for our purposes was the art style initiated by Karl Höppner, who went under the name of Fidus. Though his art was singularly personal and inimitable, his influence was widespread; there was hardly a Volkish publication from the beginning of the century on that did not at some time print one of his pictures. But he was especially popular among the youth, who, enamored of his art, filled their various journals with it. He represented a combination of interest in the Volk, nature, and spiritualism—in this case, theosophy—that inevitably made him an important spokesman of the ideas we have been discussing in this chapter.

Fidus referred to his work as "temple art." It attempted, and according to its claims achieved, the highest form of aesthetic expression. This art was to make visible the invisible; it was to give form to the sacred spiritual and Volkish elements that make up man; it was to impart to people a belief in a "mystical ocean," a belief in worlds beyond and transcending our own, so that they could draw from these worlds the necessary strength to live and to command. Nature alone could not convey sufficient vitality, according to Fidus. Painting had to transmit the quintessence of life; it had to communicate that which was beyond the senses.⁴⁷

In his art Fidus attempted to answer the most sacred of man's questions. He himself believed that the beauty and truth of the higher worlds were transmitted to him through a life force, a mystical impetus derived from the cosmos.⁴⁸ This was reflected in the themes of his paintings. Theosophical symbols which concentrated on ethereal forces abounded. His motifs included sun-drenched Egyptian sphinxes, landscapes penetrated by glaring rays of the sun, and naked, golden youths striding into the sun's rays. The last motif was most frequently elaborated. His "Wanderers in the Sun," for example, portrayed a nude boy and girl striding forth, their bodies sun-drenched and surrounded by green plants. His most famous painting depicted the nude figure of a young man on a cliff, poised as though about to fly off into the air, while the sun looms large behind him, drenching his nude form. Fidus thought that this painting had captured the hope of youth in touch with the cosmos. Whether it did or not, it became one of the favorite pictures of the German Youth Movement.

But why was Fidus' work more popular than the other Germanic art forms? First, it had a stimulating intellectual quality which the others lacked. Not a rational intelligence, in the sense that it at-

tempted to portray subjecting the tools of reason to a torical background. Fidu denied the value of such a purely emotional, intuitive the execution and appreciation in Fidus' work an i easily recognize the sym and communicate them in fied audiences.

Second, Fidus' style within framework his paintings w impressionism and expressi Like all Volkish artists, F and romantic art styles, th was insufficient"; the cosm only when he pictured the tend toward abstraction. I sophical symbols and Volki his canvasses represented a ing current in the German became the typical Aryan i from racial thought, an ide and echoes of the Greek id tive strength, which, as w cruelty; while the Greek id dispensable harmony to the complexity in painting was the degenerate expressioni Fidus helped to further, bec as representing the urge for nature; but we shall turn to t

However, it was not only Volkish sympathizers who ideals of beauty. He was pra multitudinous voice of the band joined the chorus.⁵¹ B Fidus dolefully complained t to Adolf Hitler, even before nored.⁵² The slight was inc policy when Rosenberg trea journals rejected his pictures

A. H. masterbates over this

afternoon (p. 85-86) A. H. rejects him
A. H. masterbates over this

slightly more contemporary abilities. However, more im-
 le initiated by Karl Höppner,
 Though his art was singularly
 was widespread; there was
 beginning of the century on
 of his pictures. But he was
 ho, enamored of his art, filled
 esented a combination of in-
 sm—in this case, theosophy—
 t spokesman of the ideas we

le art." It attempted, and ac-
 est form of aesthetic expres-
 visible; it was to give form to
 s that make up man; it was to
 ocean," a belief in worlds be-
 t they could draw from these
 d to command. Nature alone
 ording to Fidus. Painting had
 d to communicate that which

ne most sacred of man's ques-
 ury and truth of the higher
 ough a life force, a mystical
 s was reflected in the themes
 which concentrated on ethe-
 ded sun-drenched Egyptian
 ag rays of the sun, and naked,
 ys. The last motif was most
 s in the Sun," for example,
 ag forth, their bodies sun-
 ts. His most famous painting
 1 on a cliff, poised as though
 sun looms large behind him,
 t that this painting had cap-
 e cosmos. Whether it did or
 ures of the German Youth

lar than the other Germanic
 tlectual quality which the
 ce, in the sense that it at-

H. rejects him

tempted to portray subjects that could only be understood by ap-
 plying the tools of reason, stylistic analysis, or biographical and his-
 torical background. Fidus and his Volkish confrères vehemently
 denied the value of such a rationalistic approach; in their view, only
 purely emotional, intuitive, and irrational forces had any function in
 the execution and appreciation of a work of art. Rather, there was
 present in Fidus' work an intelligibility according to which one could
 easily recognize the symbols and the intended mystical message
 and communicate them in an intelligent manner to larger and divers-
 fied audiences.

Second, Fidus' style worked in his favor. Within the ideological
 framework his paintings were actually highly realistic. He abhorred
 impressionism and expressionism, which were then in great vogue.⁴⁹
 Like all Volkish artists, Fidus drew his impetus from romanticism
 and romantic art styles, though, as he put it, painting "nature as it is
 was insufficient"; the cosmic life spirit must enter the picture.⁵⁰ Yet
 only when he pictured the cosmic spirit as a cross of light did he
 tend toward abstraction. To the romantic genre he added his theo-
 sophical symbols and Volkish world view. The figures that dominated
his canvasses represented a concept of male beauty that was becom-
ing current in the German Youth Movement and which eventually
became the typical Aryan image. Essentially, it combined ideas taken
from racial thought, an idealization of ancient Germanic strength,
and echoes of the Greek ideal of physical beauty. It exalted a primi-
tive strength, which, as we have seen, often acquired a twist of
cruelty; while the Greek ideal of bodily proportions supplied an in-
dispensable harmony to the Germanic form. In all this, intellectual
complexity in painting was considered un-German and best left to
the degenerate expressionists. The love for the nude body which
Fidus helped to further, became important in the Youth Movement
as representing the urge for the genuine which required a return to
nature; but we shall turn to that aspect shortly.

However, it was not only the Youth Movement but the majority of
 Volkish sympathizers who felt that Fidus' paintings realized their
 ideals of beauty. He was praised as highly as Ellerbeck was, and the
 multitudinous voice of the Deutschnationale Handlungsgehilfen Ver-
 band joined the chorus.⁵¹ But the National Socialists rejected him.
Fidus dolefully complained that when he had stretched out his hand
to Adolf Hitler, even before the Nazi seizure of power, he was ig-
nored.⁵² The slight was incorporated into official Nazi "aesthetic"
policy when Rosenberg treated him with contempt and the Party
journals rejected his pictures. The stated reason for this hostile atti-

tude was furnished by a Nazi publication which decried Fidus' occultism as a "trance without a body." It also bemoaned the fact that he had become the "victim of the occult," and had been made to sacrifice his more valuable Volkish didactic talents.⁵³

Why suddenly this sophistic distinction? Surely National Socialism had a good dose of the occult within its own ranks. Heinrich Himmler, for instance, believed in *karma* and thought himself a reborn Henry the Fowler of medieval fame.⁵⁴ The overriding reason seems to be the Nazis' feeling that Fidus' paintings lacked that obvious one-to-one relationship between image and desired reality provided by more tendentious Volkish and Nazi artists. His specifically theosophical overtones and formulations were his undoing. And although Fidus had attempted to marry theosophy and extrasensory perception to the Volk, the life force of the cosmos, it seemed to the Nazis that this spiritualism could have dangerous separate existence.⁵⁵ Moreover, Fidus did not emphasize the blatantly Germanic; his temples lacked the specific Germanic symbols and emblems and his astral symbolism was not purely Volkish in content—though Fidus thought that he, in his own way, had achieved just such a connection. Of course, Hitler's own artistic tastes figured significantly in the rejection of Fidus. The Führer's tastes were more sober; his favorite architectural styles more classical and monumental; he preferred to see occult symbolism confined to cultish party rites, and not allowed to invade everyday artistic expression. Yet, in spite of this official disfavor, the ideal beauty of the proportioned and harmonious figure which Fidus popularized became assimilated in National Socialist stereotypes of the ideal German; however much they rejected Fidus' spiritualist aesthetics, they enthusiastically espoused his Aryan prototypes.

This general and sometimes esoteric discovery of the old Germans had nothing to do with historical scholarship; indeed, scholarship was looked down upon as a tool of research and rejected in favor of the intuitive. It was, as we have seen, a part of the mystical ideology of Volkish thought and New Romanticism. In fact, it accentuated certain elements of these outlooks: the urge for historical identification and spiritualism, now made explicit in occultism and theosophy. All these factors combined to help objectify the Volkish ideology in the use of cultish rites in outdoor theaters. In Fidus, as we have seen, the ideology was communicated with considerable impact through the visual arts. From this consideration, however, although we have touched on it in passing, we have omitted a discussion of the specifically racial component. It was of such importance

as to merit separate membership in the Gefusing oneself with the was capable of becoming

like
mastering

+

as to merit separate and detailed analysis. In the Volkish concept, membership in the Germanic society was not solely a matter of fusing oneself with the cosmos; race took precedence. Not everyone was capable of becoming a cosmic personality, an Aryan god.

MAN IDEOLOGY

ation which decried Fidus' oc-
 'It also bemoaned the fact that
 ecult," and had been made to
 idactic talents.⁵³
 tion? Surely National Socialism
 its own ranks. Heinrich Himm-
 and thought himself a reborn
 14 The overriding reason seems
 paintings lacked that obvious
 e and desired reality provided
 izi artists. His specifically the-
 s were his undoing. And al-
 y theosophy and extrasensory
 of the cosmos, it seemed to be
 dangerous separate existence.⁵⁵
 the blatantly Germanic; his
 symbols and emblems and his
 ish in content—though Fidus
 achieved just such a connec-
 tes figured significantly in the
 were more sober; his favorite
 monumental; he preferred to
 sh party rites, and not allowed
 1. Yet, in spite of this official
 rtioned and harmonious figure
 imilated in National Socialist
 ver much they rejected Fidus'
 ally espoused his Aryan proto-
 ic discovery of the old Ger-
 l scholarship; indeed, scholar-
 l of research and rejected in
 ve seen, a part of the mystical
 v Romanticism. In fact, it ac-
 tlooks: the urge for historical
 ade explicit in occultism and
 to help objectify the Volkish
 outdoor theaters. In Fidus, as
 municated with considerable
 is consideration, however, al-
 ng, we have omitted a discus-
 nt. It was of such importance

CHAPTER 5

Racism

WHEREAS THE GERMANIC visions of history, the foundations of a Germanic Christianity, and solar cultism all shared an explicit anti-rationalist base, the concept of race, at least at its inception, did not. As it was conceived, the idea of race was essentially and respectably scientific. It was first used, in the eighteenth century, to classify various species of plants, animals, and tribes. Today anthropologists still use it as a means of classification. Of course, the concept of race has suffered adulteration throughout its history. It has been, and still is, a pernicious concept only when used to derive internal qualities from external differences; in other words, when the concept is transposed from a scientific to a metaphysical level.

Not surprisingly, during the age of romanticism and Social Darwinism just such a transposition was made. After all, the era did emphasize the internal, inherent, and inalienable virtues of man. The external was thought to be only a reflection of deeper spiritual forces. The body mirrored the soul; it was its signature. As we have seen, landscape and geography were considered indispensable to the Volk soul. To these, however, was added the concept that the very physical characteristics of people rested on the nature of their inner selves. Consequently, Volkish thinkers and pseudo-scientists began to detail the various component parts that represented the outward signs of the true racial soul. Artists, as we saw in the last chapter, portrayed the ideal of Aryan beauty; Fidus' depictions, for example, were physical images of inner Germanic beauty modeled after a racially "ideal type."

Philosophically, Volkish authors and racial theorists did not need to go far from their native traditions to find an honorable, respectable basis for their theories. They were inspired in part by certain tenets in Kant's speculations on race which seemed to give them

license to elaborate further. V in the writings of Kant which factors and held that geograph were accompanied by an "inn applied in correlating landscap ever, two relatively recent scie Volkish ideology more fully: a

Early anthropological thoug tribes and nations in which va and inferiority were postulated logical concepts were infused which depart from strict scien applied in order to relate exter in a more systematic way. The as a part of anthropology was From the time of Franz Josi ferences such as those found i dicate inherent differences. Gal he could discover the moral a through the configurations an theory did not remain without Germanism announced that th long and narrow, this physic criterion for Aryanism. Subse the whole physical structure of race.

To the growing body of rac actual "Aryan" distinction. Th English linguistic roots Germ that both peoples had stemme one of the early proponents of audiences during the period 18 that the Aryan forebears of t by an irresistible impulse and ha home in the region of India. desirable qualities of self-reliance of the migration.¹ (That the Ar Oriental land became a favorite thinkers. Indeed, it served to in organic, biological base, to tie birth] and solar mysticism to t race. The connection was espec fused a large number of mystic

* Dr. T. Precisely. It is the pernicious in which we are interested! and the metaphysical having it - yes

might say - organic difficulties in finding any sure foothold in reality lends itself admirably to the pernicious. For the Jews were the children of the devil - Adolf's metaphysics

license to elaborate further. Volkish theorists found a theory of race in the writings of Kant which was based primarily on geographic factors and held that geographically determined racial characteristics were accompanied by an "inner life force." This Kantian tenet was applied in correlating landscape and the Volk soul. In the end, however, two relatively recent sciences realized the objectification of the Volkish ideology more fully: anthropology and philology.

Early anthropological thought attempted a racial classification of tribes and nations in which various contingent values of superiority and inferiority were postulated. By the nineteenth century, anthropological concepts were infused with romantic precepts and values which depart from strict scientific criteria. Various techniques were applied in order to relate external characteristics to internal qualities in a more systematic way. The introduction of cranial measurements as a part of anthropology was of major importance in this respect. From the time of Franz Joseph Gall (1758-1828), physical differences such as those found in cranial shape were presumed to indicate inherent differences. Gall, the founder of phrenology, thought he could discover the moral and intellectual predispositions of men through the configurations and protuberances of their heads. This theory did not remain without consequences. When the adepts of Old Germanism announced that the skulls of their ancestors had been long and narrow, this physical distinction soon became a prime criterion for Aryanism. Subsequently, as can be seen in Fidu's art, the whole physical structure of a person was thought to indicate his race.

To the growing body of racial theory, philology contributed the actual "Aryan" distinction. Through an examination of German and English linguistic roots German philologists postulated the theory that both peoples had stemmed from a common root. Max Müller, one of the early proponents of the theory, in his lectures to English audiences during the period 1859-61 expounded on the hypothesis that the Aryan forebears of the Anglo-Saxons had been impelled by an irresistible impulse and had driven westward from their original home in the region of India. The two peoples had developed the desirable qualities of self-reliance and independence as a direct result of the migration.¹ (That the Aryans originated in a mysterious, semi-Oriental land became a favorite theme of writers and later Volkish thinkers. Indeed, it served to interlace the cultural structure with an organic, biological base, to tie the theosophical ideas of *karma* [re-birth] and solar mysticism to the same soil that had nourished the race. The connection was especially emphasized by philologists who fused a large number of mystical Indian symbols with the gods of

history, the foundations of a man all shared an explicit anti-least at its inception, did not, as essentially and respectably nineteenth century, to classify tribes. Today anthropologists of course, the concept of race history. It has been, and still is to derive internal qualities from, when the concept is trans-level.

racism and Social Darwin-

After all, the era did emanate virtues of man. The notion of deeper spiritual forces. signature. As we have seen, it is indispensable to the Volk concept that the very physical nature of their inner selves. pseudo-scientists began to detail the outward signs of the last chapter, portrayed actions, for example, were typically modeled after a racially

racist theorists did not need to find an honorable, respectable, inspired in part by certain which seemed to give them

1923 (H)
the ancient Germans. One of the more explicit results was the frequent use of Indian names to designate Germanic societies, as when Willibald Hentschel, in 1923, gave his order for the development of true Aryans the name Artamanen, after the Indian sun god Artam.

All these factors entered into what some Volkish theorists called the "mystery of race." But it would have been incomplete without that cosmic emphasis which runs through the old and the New Romanticism. A complete theory was first presented in workable form in the writings of the French diplomat Arthur de Gobineau, who employed a specifically racial context as the setting for human history. This mid-nineteenth-century theoretician denied that the institutions of Christianity, governments, and ideas—which he termed "superstitions"—were the functional agents of history, or the causes of the rise and decline of civilizations. Race alone was the deciding factor. To Gobineau, purity of race meant strength for survival, for mastery and domination of lesser races; while intermingling of racial lines would result in a rapid decline of culture and national prowess, culminating in racial death.

According to Gobineau, history showed that races rose to power in their pure state and fell when they had become contaminated. The purest contemporary race, Gobineau noted, was the Aryans, a race whose inward qualities were inseparably linked to its external appearance—a relationship true of all races—and who possessed that vigor and genuine vitality which, to the Volkish thinkers, the German peasant so bountifully exhibited. The desire for force and conquest was part of their nature. In this respect, they represented the aristocracy in a world of lesser, conquered races. However, they too, like earlier anthropologically distinct groups, were subject to contamination by lesser blood, to a process of bastardization by which the lower races infiltrated the ranks of the aristocracy. The historical law that dealt with this recurring process held that admixture of races was inevitable and would result in racial extinction. Characteristically, Gobineau forecast racial death with greater certainty than racial revival. This was amply evident in his major work, *Essai sur l'inégalité des races humaines* (1853), which concentrated on the cause of the decline of civilization. Though he was a prophet of doom and did not, as did his successors, extol the Aryans' coming glory, the message of his theory was quite clear: a race must stay pure. Democracy, an extension of racial admixture, must be prevented at all costs.²

Though Gobineau set the stage and supplied all the essential props, his thought remained virtually unnoticed in contemporary Germany. The ideological base had not evolved sufficiently to necessitate such a

superstructure. The V and New Romanticism deepened and directed theories had to be refiners of interest to the p Social Darwinism that social struggle among vival. Similarly, politic man unity had taken an industrial progress had stage fully set for pen

Not until 1894 was ineau's ideas into Gern a society to honor his and in Germany. The never really flourished either, but there it rece Wagner circle, of wi Schemann, active on tain the support of this racial theory.⁴ In the many can be the recept

Although its members and 50 institutions disproportionately high ineau's works that acc were distributed gratis copies of his specifically whereas the more popu Thus, neither the size o of Gobineau's works r Rather it was the presti the society. The Wagn widow, Cosima, and, a proponents of racial vi Moreover, a disproportion were schoolteachers. A than 36 per cent of all l fession,⁷ out of a memb perfect. The support Germans, which includ position to disseminate t Personally Schemann

1909
Hitler brooding on the nearness of the death of the German race.

+

ults was the fre-
ocieties, as when
development of
ngod Artam.)
theorists called
omplete without
nd the New Ro-
workable form
Gobineau, who
for human his-
ied that the in-
which he termed
y, or the causes
as the deciding
for survival, for
intermingling of
re and national

rose to power
aminated. The
Aryans, a race
its external ap-
possessed that
akers, the Ger-
force and con-
represented the
ever, they too,
ubject to con-
tion by which
The historical
ixture of races
racteristically,
than racial re-
sur l'inégalité
the cause of
of doom and
ing glory, the
pure Democ-
vented at all

essential props,
ury Germany.
essitate such a

superstructure. The Volkish version of old romanticism, Germanism, and New Romanticism had to sink roots first. Romanticism had to be deepened and directed toward the Volk. Secondly, anthropological theories had to be refined and made more applicable to cultural matters of interest to the public; they also had to be wedded to a growing Social Darwinism that applied the scientific theory of evolution to the social struggle among men and extolled the virtues of calculated survival. Similarly, political dissatisfaction with the direction that German unity had taken and social tensions arising from commercial and industrial progress had to make themselves felt. Only then was the stage fully set for penetration (modified, to be sure) of his ideas.

Not until 1894 was there a concerted attempt to introduce Gobineau's ideas into Germany. In that year, Ludwig Schemann founded a society to honor his name and revive his theories both in France and in Germany. The French branch received little support and never really flourished.³ It was not generally popular in Germany either, but there it received the wholehearted support of the Richard Wagner circle, of which Schemann was a member. In addition, Schemann, active on the board of the Pan-Germans, was able to obtain the support of this significant conservative group for the cause of racial theory.⁴ In the end, his assertion proved correct: "Only Germany can be the receptacle for Gobineau and his ideas."⁵

Although its membership was small (by 1914 there were 360 members and 50 institutions subscribed), the influence of the society was disproportionately high. However, it was not the popularity of Gobineau's works that accounted for his influence; though his works were distributed gratis to schools and to the army, only a thousand copies of his specifically racist work had been distributed by 1919, whereas the more popular *Renaissance* reached double that number.⁶ Thus, neither the size of the society's membership nor the popularity of Gobineau's works really accounted for his impact in Germany. Rather it was the prestige and influence of the groups that supported the society. The Wagner circle, led after the composer's death by his widow, Cosima, and, above all, the Pan-Germans were significant proponents of racial views founded partly on Gobineau's writings. Moreover, a disproportionately large number of the Pan-Germans were schoolteachers. According to a survey made in 1906, no less than 36 per cent of all local chairmen belonged to the teaching profession,⁷ out of a membership of about 21,000. The combination was perfect. The support of an important pressure group, the Pan-Germans, which included a large number of teachers, who were in a position to disseminate the racist ideas in the schools.

Personally Schemann gave himself wholeheartedly to the further-

*A.H. The positive factor implicit
in his negative ideas.*

*Could take place as
Adl's thoughts in 1924-1925*

ance of the cause. He had a typical Volkish mentality, a private scholar who since his youth had considered science distasteful and looked upon values derived from technology and science as blasphemous manipulations of the forces of nature.⁸ His personal nostalgia for the small, idyllic German town of his youth reflected itself in his ideology. In 1925, Schemann asserted that if Germans could rid themselves of the conceit that big cities, machines, and the emancipation of Jews were landmarks in the progress of humanity, then all would be well.⁹ For him, the hateful modernity was represented by emancipated Jewry, mechanization, and urbanization, while Gobineau's racial theories and values were a prophetic force for liberation from the nightmare. And though his writings did not meet with outright success, Schemann was not as ineffectual as this criterion might suggest. He admired and was heavily influenced by that apostle of Germanism, Paul de Lagarde. He wrote a biography of Lagarde and helped to popularize his thought. In addition, in books and articles he glorified Wagner as the advocate of the Volk—an image widely propagated by Wagner's wife, Cosima. He also had influence among the Pan-Germans, and especially on their leader, Heinrich Class, a close personal friend.

Like the Pan-Germans, Schemann actively participated in, or extended his support to, many right-wing causes. In 1920 he endorsed the putsch attempted by Wolfgang Kapp and, under Hitler, wrote a eulogy of it.¹⁰ The Nazis called him into the *Reichsinstitut* for modern history and on his eighty-fifth birthday the Third Reich awarded him the Goethe Medal for his services to the nation and the race.¹¹ Politics figured only peripherally in Schemann's life, which was wholly devoted to an advocacy of the racial ideal. With his impact in the upper social circles and especially among educators, Schemann helped to awaken the younger generation to the ideas of race, directing their receptive minds to reading works extolling racial purity and warning against the dangers of racial degeneration.

As we have already indicated, there were two main reasons why Gobineau did not become the immediate father of German racial thought: the tenor of the times and the lack of the Social Darwinist ingredient. Later on, at the turn of the century, another development interfered. By 1900 there were several rival racial theories current in Germany. Most of them had grown with the refinement of anthropological criteria and had incorporated elements of the "survival of the fittest" axiom of the Social Darwinists. They were correspondingly more optimistic about the direction history was taking. Instead of concentrating on the inevitability of racial contamination and the consequent decline of civilization, these theorists looked toward

a developing race that with its own uniqueness.

Of these, Houston Stewart Chamberlain was the most contrary, because he yearned for Chamberlain was the son of his life on the Continent to symbolize his deep attachment to the Continent was heightened and suffered from nervous more severe English climate made his home in Germany.

At first he was fascinated to have become a scientist fused his scientific training with Darwinism which was a transformation from science to encounter with the world where he devoted himself to Wagner's world view. He became dedicated to the cause.

Like Schemann's, Chamberlain's circle at Bayreuth, was of the Germanic race. With Germanism, and this tradition, who transformed the rite after the seizure of power.

Chamberlain himself visited the scene, Hitler visited the scene and kissed his hands. But the triumph of his prophetic righteously indignant against the unfolding of the race would bring it into being claims for the bright future trace of resignation in his.

Without doubt, his indisputable success of Chamberlain (*Foundations of the Nineteenth Century*) which had a deep impact than just the explanation

1933

+

mentality, a private science distasteful and ad science as blasphemy. His personal nostalgia reflected itself in his plans could rid them of the emancipation anxiety, then all would be represented by emanation, while Gobineau's hope for liberation from the past met with outright this criterion might be used by that apostle of geography of Lagarde. Religion, in books and the Volk—an image he also had influence over. Air leader, Heinrich

participated in, or excluded. In 1920 he endorsed under Hitler, wrote a *Lehrinstitut* for modern Third Reich awarded religion and the race.¹¹ In his life, which was. With his impact in educators, Schemmann the ideas of race, distilling racial purity religion.

The main reasons why of German racial he Social Darwinist rather development theories current in the movement of anthropology of the "survival of the fittest" were correspondingly taking. Instead contamination and racists looked toward

a developing race that would save Western culture and stamp it with its own uniqueness.

Of these, Houston Stewart Chamberlain was the most important. Unlike Gobineau, Chamberlain analyzed the totality of civilization, not because he was concerned with its decline, but, on the contrary, because he yearned for a better, more beautiful racial future. Chamberlain was the son of an English admiral, but he spent most of his life on the Continent and eventually became a German citizen to symbolize his deep attachment to that country. His attraction to the Continent was heightened by necessity, for he was chronically ill and suffered from nervous disorders which were aggravated by the more severe English climate. Except for long periods in Geneva, he made his home in Germany.

At first he was fascinated by plant pathology, and he might well have become a scientist had it not been for his health. Instead, he fused his scientific training with a mystical love of nature and a Social Darwinism which was so typical of much radical thought. This transformation from scientist to radical racist was catalyzed by his encounter with the work of Richard Wagner. From 1882 on, Bayreuth became the "home of his soul" and later his real home as well, where he devoted himself to the preservation and dissemination of Wagner's world view. He married Wagner's daughter, and his life became dedicated to the development of his racial theories.

Like Schemmann's, Chamberlain's ideas were stimulated by the Wagner circle at Bayreuth, with its focus on the Ring cycle as the gospel of the Germanic race. Wagner himself was regarded as the prophet of Germanism, and this tradition was carried on by his daughter Winifred, who transformed the Bayreuth festival into a National Socialist rite after the seizure of power in 1933.

Chamberlain himself was a great admirer of Hitler. In a dramatic scene, Hitler visited the paralyzed and dying apostle of Germanism and kissed his hands. But Chamberlain died in 1927 and did not see the triumph of his prophecies. He wrote as the prophet of the future, righteously indignant against the forces which forestalled the inevitable unfolding of the new race and full of praise for that which would bring it into being. Tenacious in thought and persistent in his claims for the bright future, Chamberlain never showed the slightest trace of resignation in his work.

Without doubt, his inflexible optimism contributed to the tremendous success of Chamberlain's *Die Grundlagen des XIX. Jahrhunderts* (*Foundations of the Nineteenth Century*) (1900). In this work, which had a deep impact on Volkish thought, racism became more than just the explanation of the rise and fall of civilizations. It be-

1924

came the hope of mankind, the fulfillment of its aspirations. Chamberlain's reasoning also transcended that of earlier racists in that it merged the streams of science and mysticism. He provided the New Romanticism with a scientific base and thus lent the tone and the goals of science to his racial theories. In the end, it was the mysticism that won out, eventually doing violence to the scientific method. Even anthropology, the century's new science, had progressively cloaked racial theories in a scholarly and academically respectable mantle. Interestingly enough, another area from which Chamberlain's *Foundations* drew a semblance of respectability was Kantian philosophy—particularly for arguments in favor of the existence of intrinsic racial values. Chamberlain held that Kant, who believed in reason and pragmatism, also postulated an essence of things, the *Ding an sich*, which was outside empirical comprehension. Chamberlain used Kant to the following effect: On the one hand, there was a German science which determined, with the utmost accuracy, that which existed empirically; on the other hand, there was a Germanic religion, which bestowed infinite vistas upon the German soul. In terms of importance, the religion took priority, since it alone could fathom the true essence of things. As it also functioned in the realm of ideas, it served to keep science within its proper limits, and at the same time appropriated empirical evidence in support of itself.¹² Through their inner selves, which were enveloped in a mystical Germanism, Chamberlain asserted, men could determine the meaning of the external world. Thus, throughout his long book Chamberlain called upon the Germans to "drench" the external world with that religion which symbolized their own ideals. As in the New Romanticism, the impetus toward an "idealism of deeds" came from within man through his mystical contact with the cosmos.¹³ In a sentence that summed up his thought on the subject, Chamberlain declared that nothing could be more dangerous for man than to possess a science without poetry or a civilization without culture.¹⁴

However, Chamberlain also thought that science had its merits, though of a limited nature. All his declarations on religion and race were made with a great show of learning, and rested upon a base that had purposely been scientifically researched. In Germanizing Christianity, for instance, he brought forth scholarly arguments which denied the Jewishness of Christ on the grounds that Galilee had been inhabited by heathen, non-Jewish tribes.¹⁵ In regard to race, he used a scientific base to prove its absolute nature, its totality, which encompassed both internal and external appearances. At the end of the nineteenth century, he wrote, no scholar could ignore the fact that skull measurements and the external appearance of the brain decisively

+

influenced the concept of the human mind. He went the analogy, a building in its construction; the "ideas" inherent in the structure.

Chamberlain's thesis easily lent itself to excess. It was the subject of many of his most absurd conclusions. Such was the case with his theory of the painter, who in 1912 attacked the idea that a person's physiognomy was a scientific instrument, called a physiognomy, of a human instance, according to the ceding chin and mouth and any creativity.¹⁸

In this manner, the acquired a visual form; Villigen's "scientific" impact of Fidos or the standard fare in the peasant Volkish movement. They comprehended not only in the be made popular through distinguished by a physical beauty; the Jew was his deeply believed later of God and the devil. For for communicating his an authoritative history.

What did Chamberlain the history of mankind, a polarized struggle. God, race, and the devil in the pure races—and between the West as alien people and subscribed to a strict the Germans had entered when the West seemed peoples had been the carrier civilization, to which it

* P. T. Hitler in Landsberg solves the racial riddle in *Gebühren* & Chamberlain's recourse to the Germanic religion.

of its aspirations. Cham-
berlain of earlier racists in that it
lent the tone and the goals
it was the mysticism that
scientific method. Even
had progressively cloaked
respectable mantle.
Chamberlain's *Foundations*
was Kantian philosophy
the existence of intrinsic
who believed in reason and
things, the *Ding an sich*,
Chamberlain used Kant
and, there was a German
accuracy, that which
was a Germanic religion,
man soul. In terms of im-
alone could fathom the
in the realm of ideas, it
ats, and at the same time
of itself.¹² Through their
tical Germanism, Cham-
meaning of the external
berlain called upon the
with that religion which
Romanticism, the im-
sense within man through
sentence that summed
declared that nothing
assess a science without

science had its merits,
as on religion and race
rested upon a base that
in Germanizing Chris-
early arguments which
that Galilee had been
regard to race, he used
its totality, which en-
ces. At the end of the
d ignore the fact that
of the brain decisively

all that for myopia logic, I was a Jew and proved head had
my hair is thin for myopia or chronic, I was the Jew, I planned to get
an allusion, (the bottom) didn't allow to the Jew, all don't used.

For one thing they were difficult to deal with
and to measure - some whom we have with many of them

influenced the conceptions of aesthetic form that lay within. After all,
went the analogy, a building was characterized by the materials used
in its construction; they provided the outward form and expressed
the "ideas" inherent in the erection.¹⁶

Chamberlain's thesis became commonplace in racial thought and
easily lent itself to excesses. The equation of inner and outer qualities
was the subject of many a scientific and academic project, and the
most absurd conclusions enjoyed at times a momentary popularity.
Such was the case with the work of Dr. Burger-Villingen, a portrait
painter, who in 1912 attempted to validate Chamberlain's assertion
that a person's physiognomy expressed his inward being.¹⁷ To verify
this statement scientifically, Burger-Villingen actually constructed an
instrument, called a plastometer, which purported to measure the
geography of a human face and thus the cast of a person's soul. For
instance, according to his findings, a protruding forehead and a re-
ceding chin and mouth indicated a superficial intelligence devoid of
any creativity.¹⁸

In this manner, theoretical statements, theses, and accusations
acquired a visual form; the Volkish ideology was objectified. Burger-
Villingen's "scientific" discoveries only supplemented the aesthetic
impact of Fidus or the distorted literary image of the Jew that was
standard fare in the peasant novels. It worked to the advantage of the
Volkish movement. Theories of racial distinctions were to be com-
prehended not only in a mystical sense; on the contrary, they could
be made popular through the use of stereotypes. The Aryan was dis-
tinguished by a physical form that typified the Germanic ideal of
beauty; the Jew was his very opposite. Symbolically, only to be too
deeply believed later on, the two represented the polarization of
God and the devil. For Chamberlain these categories were sufficient
for communicating his racial philosophy in the attempt to produce
an authoritative history based on the eternal struggle between races.

What did Chamberlain present as history? Primarily, he presented
the history of mankind, especially of Germany, as the story of a bitter,
polarized struggle. God was, so to speak, embodied in the Germanic
race, and the devil in the Jewish race. These were held to be the two
pure races - and between them flourished the "chaos of peoples," pas-
tard mixtures of various races. The Jews had entered the history of
the West as alien people who stemmed from an Asiatic environment
and subscribed to a strict and dehumanized law. In contradistinction,
the Germans had entered the same history as saviors at a moment
when the West seemed on the verge of disintegration. The Teutonic
peoples had been the carriers of all that was best in Greek and Roman
civilization, to which they added a more vital emphasis. The Ger-

* In 1923, impels him toward
the Fatsch. In 1924 comes to the
firm conclusion: The Jew is with
Jewish race.
P.T. I know the absurdity of it

Study
which
time
to study
with
923-24
and then
there was
my part of
the whole
it's original
my part of
the whole
the whole
the whole

but then at the most suffering
they were so dominated, really, and in the
way, for some were producing a document

1923

~~Germany~~ had added the metaphysical element to the Greek ideal of aristocracy and to the Roman concept of justice. Among Germans, heroism represented an inner fortitude that was superior to mere external strength and victory. This virtue made the difference between a Siegfried and a Semitic Samson or even a Greek Achilles. The metaphysical impulse gave harmony to the Germanic race, a harmony that shone forth in the Germanic countenances of Dante (claimed as a German) and Luther alike and was embodied in the profound depths of their beliefs. Moreover, Chamberlain argued that, since Germans were the saviors of world history and the carriers of Western culture, all real cultural achievement in modern times must be permeated with their spirit, a spirit sharpened through incessant struggle.¹⁹

And the antagonists in this never-ending battle? They were the Jews. This was the only other race that retained its purity, not through the force of an inner conviction or mysticism but as a result of external laws. According to the prophet of the German race, the Jewish people strove to dominate through an ineradicable persistence, an iron will to power that was not graced by any metaphysical impulse, by imagination or ideals. At times, it was said, they were assisted by so-called degenerate Nordics such as the Jesuits. Mostly, however, the Jews concertedly carried out their mechanistic plans to attain the primacy among nations that was guaranteed by their God Yahweh in return for obedience to his laws. This was meant seriously, for Chamberlain did not make light of what he defined as the Jewish menace. Regardless of the popular myth inspired by the ridiculousness of his stereotype, the Jew was not a figure of fun, but an enemy to be fought with deadly seriousness. Chamberlain's *Foundations* ominously maintained that the Germanic race was engaged in a mortal struggle that was to be fought not only with cannon but with every weapon of human life and society.²⁰

In some respects Chamberlain was more of a mystic than some Volkish thinkers, and at the same time a greater realist in other ways. For instance, he did not spurn all of modernity, but simply decried its misapplication. While German industry was in the hands of the Jews, it worked against German interests. But when industry and other aspects of modernity were in the hands of the German race, they were infused with a spirit that strove for higher values. Chamberlain thought a revolution necessary for the German race to recognize this state of affairs and to discard a materialism encouraged by Jewish interests. Like that prescribed by Lagarde, it was an inner transformation which would bring about the change. It would leave the external shell intact and would change only the inner nature,

endowing it with a new combination with a stress on violence, resulted in a formish thinkers. A defeat of to move all obstacles to a c Aryan race. The change was a revolution of the spirit v true proportions in the serv

The modification Cham which had been a distinction since it contributed to the ideology. Science and technology under the direction of The revolution Chamberlain theless. In a Volkish sense, hierarchical ideal; or, rather perspective of the future; proclaimed that then Germany present in order to enter the future: Kant's "pure idea come about peacefully and consciousness; it did not re Culminating in this message race, Chamberlain's *Foundations* ish movement. In many ways of racial truth, thought, and

When the Volkish movement to be a spiritual revolution, framework. When they turned German history—Luther's, of the Volk—they referred inspired by racial thought. Not in tandem: in every respect the motive force in transforming man that would sweep the its correct proportions. The science, mechanization, in religious racial goal. Except for not basically change the so the end, this was the argument justify an increase in industry true society was to be in been removed from industry

For A.H. this clarification is great deal.

nt to the Greek ideal of justice. Among Germans, that was superior to mere made the difference between even a Greek Achilles. to the Germanic race, a countenances of Dante and was embodied in the Chamberlain argued that, history and the carriers of ent in modern times must opened through incessant

g battle? They were the retained its purity; not mysticism but as a result of the German race, the ineradicable persistence, by any metaphysical im- was said, they were as- as the Jesuits. Mostly, their mechanistic plans to guaranteed by their God this was meant seriously, he defined as the Jewish pired by the ridiculous- ne of fun, but an enemy Chamberlain's *Foundations* was engaged in a mortal cannon but with every

of a mystic than some er realist in other ways. ry, but simply decried as in the hands of the ut when industry and s of the German race, e higher values. Cham- German race to recog- rialism encouraged by garde, it was an inner change. It would leave nly the inner nature,

endowing it with a new meaning. This concept of revolution, in combination with a stress on the righteousness of struggle and violence, resulted in a formula that was similar to that of most Volkish thinkers. A defeat of the racial enemy would automatically remove all obstacles to a cosmically inspired breakthrough by the Aryan race. The change would not lead to a social revolution—but to a revolution of the spirit which would reduce present reality to its true proportions in the service of the Volk.

The modification Chamberlain placed on the rejection of science, which had been a distinction of early Volkish thought, was significant since it contributed to the greater contemporaneity of the Volkish ideology. Science and technology were not to be discarded, but applied under the direction of the Volk in line with its racial needs.²¹ The revolution Chamberlain foresaw was to be a spiritual one nonetheless. In a Volkish sense, it would facilitate a return to a semi-rural, hierarchical ideal; or, rather, it would bring the idyllic past into the perspective of the future good society. Messianically, Chamberlain proclaimed that then Germans would leave the dark and crumbling present in order to enter into the "new, splendid, and light-filled" future: Kant's "pure ideal."²² The triumph of this vision could come about peacefully and naturally in the wake of a general race consciousness; it did not represent a violent, radical, social upheaval. Culminating in this message of imminent victory for the German race, Chamberlain's *Foundations* became a favorite book in the Volkish movement. In many ways it attained the stature of being the Bible of racial truth, thought, and victory.

When the Volkish movement proclaimed the German revolution to be a spiritual revolution, they looked to Chamberlain for the racial framework. When they talked of the three great revolutions in German history—Luther's, that of the romantics, and the future one of the Volk—they referred to the Volkish revolution as the one inspired by racial thought. New Romanticism and racial ideas worked in tandem: in every respect, it was held, the soul of man represented the motive force in transforming reality, but it was the soul of Aryan man that would sweep the enemy out of the way and mold reality to its correct proportions. The formula called for the subordination of science, mechanization, modernization, and a new ethics to a religious racial goal. Except for its emphasis on the idyllic past, it would not basically change the social and economic structure of society. In the end, this was the argument advanced by National Socialism to justify an increase in industrialization. And though, even then, the true society was to be in close proximity to nature, the sting had been removed from industrialism. It was not a threat so long as

won much greater influence instead. He wielded a double-edged sword, cutting at both a racial and a class protagonist. A convert from right-wing Marxism to Darwinism, Woltmann tried to effect a marriage of Marx, Darwin, and Kant in a system of thought that proposed mass struggle, a racial opponent, and metaphysical inspiration.²⁸ On the whole, his contribution was to transform the dialectics of class struggle into the philosophy of race struggle. However, it was his attachment to a bastardized Marxism that gave his thought a mass base. All his racial writings and theories were infused with an anti-bourgeois bias.

According to Woltmann, biological laws of nature, discovered by Darwin, directed the evolution of man as they did that of plants and animals. The laws even applied to human society in that they equated racial development with social progress. Using this as his "scientific" criterion, Woltmann went on to say that the Germans stood at the forefront of the species *Homo sapiens*.²⁹ But his evidence was aesthetic rather than scientific.

Woltmann claimed that the primary criteria of race were to be found in the proportions of the human body, facial geography, and other physical characteristics. In short, aesthetic qualities, subordinated to racial presuppositions, were introduced to substantiate theories that had pretended to be based in the natural sciences. Correspondingly, it was the Nordic, the Aryan, ideal of beauty that supported his claims for the primacy of the Germans. The proportioned torso and head of Nordic man, the alleged inner spirituality that glowed in his face and lent it a distinctive character, these were Woltmann's proofs of racial qualities. Studying the fine points of his Aryan ideal, he came to assert that the relationship of the legs to the buttocks of Nordic man duplicated the "absolute proportions of architectural beauty."³⁰ Nature, through the process of selection, had here produced a harmonious structure that mirrored not only an inner spirituality and outer grace, but the laws of absolute aesthetic values as well. Aryan beauty and a pseudo-science were, in the end, the twin proofs which furnished the backbone for Woltmann's influential work. A mixing of races, according to Woltmann, would result in the destruction of the physical proportions and harmony of the race. This would be accompanied by a degeneration of the spiritual faculties. The beauties of Germanic form under such conditions of decay would be submerged in what Lapouge had called the chaos of forms and colors of Central Europe.³¹

But race had another significance for Woltmann, a significance that appealed widely to his audiences. An inner racial force had to find a

commensurate outer ally. He pointed to the exalted Ice Age, and endured the extensive had already been made even further and asserted to dominate the earth passed on to world do cal extension of his race.

The Marxism to which acquired distinct racial class struggle was class differences were nomic criteria took or retained (an interest racial and Germanic of the Social Democracy was based primarily on and its internationalist line.³⁴ On the whole modern industrialism. to an industrial society, contrast to nature, which ism, there were the big virtues of race.³⁶ And Darwin's theories, it is the way for the emerging German workers.

On this basis he rejected or medieval, as advocated. Moreover, he claimed present form of social laws of nature life was could not be foreseen. tion of this struggle. freedom and independent as their overlords, the But even here Woltmann theories that aspired to growth of equality. In genuine ambition of to

* D. T. He was sick over this - he did not know whether to masturbate or to throw up. He started to do architectural drawings, and then

closed the first sketch book he opened. For one of the few times in his life he did not know whether to masturbate or to throw up. These ideas were godly or debased.

+

1924

He wielded a double-edged class protagonist. A convert, Woltmann tried to effect a system of thought that not, and metaphysical inspirations to transform the dialectics of race struggle. However, it was this racism that gave his theories were infused with an

laws of nature, discovered as they did that of plants and human society in that they progress. Using this as his basis on to say that the Germans were *homo sapiens*.²⁹ But his evi-

criteria of race were to be body, facial geography, and aesthetic qualities, subordinate introduced to substantiate the natural sciences. Corresponding, ideal of beauty that suited the Germans. The proportioned alleged inner spirituality that characterized, these were Woltmann's fine points of his relationship of the legs to the torso "absolute proportions of the process of selection, had that mirrored not only an inner laws of absolute aesthetic doctrine were, in the end, the backbone for Woltmann's in-lining to Woltmann, would re-proportions and harmony of a degeneration of the spirit-form under such conditions as apogee had called the chaos

Woltmann, a significance that the racial force had to find a

commensurate outer task: a race, if it is a master race, must physically conquer the countries it needs for its development. For proof he pointed to the example of the Germans who, by surviving, defeated the Ice Age, and their descendants who, millennia later, had endured the extensive migrations during the Dark Ages.³² This point had already been made by Guido von List, but Woltmann went even further and asserted that the "Germanic race has been selected to dominate the earth."³³ From beauty and graceful proportions he passed on to world domination. Pan-Germanism was a fatefully logical extension of his racial precepts.

The Marxism to which Woltmann had subscribed earlier in his life acquired distinct racial overtones. The internationalism of the Marxian class struggle was transformed into a universal race struggle, class differences were embellished with racial overtones, and economic criteria took on a biological content. The Marxism that was retained (an interest in German workers) was overshadowed by racial and Germanic considerations. His advocacy of the admission of the Social Democratic party into the government, for instance, was based primarily on a desire to destroy its revolutionary doctrine and its internationalism by subjecting that party to national discipline.³⁴ On the whole, Woltmann took a negative attitude toward modern industrialism. He claimed that the change from an agrarian to an industrial society had hastened the decline of the race.³⁵ In contrast to nature, which engendered the harmonious forms of Germanism, there were the big cities, diabolical and inorganic, destroying the virtues of race.³⁶ And though this development was consistent with Darwin's theories, it likewise, according to the same theories, paved the way for the emergence of a more vital force yet: the racially fit German workers.

On this basis he rejected the rigid class structures, whether modern or medieval, as advocated by other racial and Volkish thinkers. Moreover, he claimed that they were deluded if they thought the present form of society was changeless. After all, according to the laws of nature life was an incessant struggle for survival whose end could not be foreseen. Class conflict was the most recent manifestation of this struggle. And German workers were battling for their freedom and independence in total conformity with its precepts, just as their overlords, the bourgeoisie, had once fought the nobility.³⁷ But even here Woltmann's sympathies were not with the socialist theories that aspired to the elimination of class differences and the growth of equality. Instead he championed what he claimed to be the genuine ambition of the German workers: a nation of racially pure

* bitter throw up his hands. this Woltmann must be Jewish - never willing but contradictory

1924

work *Germanen* (1914), as well as in his earlier *Rassentheorien* (*Theories of Race*) (1908), Wilsner criticized Chamberlain for stressing inner racial qualities to the detriment of external characteristics.⁴⁶ He himself, like Woltmann, claimed that the pigmentation of the skin was of the utmost significance and that there was a direct correspondence between the whiteness of the skin and intellectual brilliance.⁴⁷ With this equation, mysticism dominated racial anthropology. Lightness of hair and skin was connected with the sun mythos, which considered the Nordic people to be the children of light.

The perfection of racial strains through racial hygiene was not the exclusive concern of the Volkish elite. It was diffused among German youth by an organization closely tied to the Youth Movement. In 1910 Hermann Popert founded Vortrupp (Advance Guard) for the purpose of developing a more beautiful, stronger, and healthier German. His aim was immediate and practical; he was less interested in cosmic theories than in combating drunkenness and promiscuity, which were undermining the strength, beauty, and health of the German race. The problem which Popert tried to deal with was a real one. All over Europe the nineteenth century saw an alarming increase of drunkenness, not just among the lower classes of the population but among all types of youth. In Germany the fraternities had become drinking and dueling societies and were corrupting the flower of the nation's youth. While in England evangelical movements took up the cause of moral reform, in Germany Popert sought a solution in racial hygiene. This furnishes one more example of the diffuse impact of Volkish thought and its ability to draw all sorts of causes within its orbit.

Popert presented his views in one of the most widely read novels of the time, *Helmut Haringa* (1910). It was written roughly at the same time as *Wiltfeber*, but it lacked the cosmic overtones, the odor of *Götterdämmerung*, that infused Burte's book. The hero of the novel, Haringa, represented a prime specimen of the German race. Possessing all the necessary virtues—blond hair, broad chest, energy and determination, a glowing youthful face—the hero displayed a corresponding moral purity. The connection between the external and the internal is vividly depicted in a scene in which a judge, confronting Haringa, who has been wrongly accused of cheating, declares that he cannot believe that someone with the defendant's looks could be a criminal.⁴⁸ The purity of stock mirrored an inherent honesty.

Events, the fate of people close to him, and his own reactions made Haringa an impassioned advocate of racial hygiene. He was a crusader, a true idealist of deeds. Abstinence from alcohol, he felt, was

vital for mental and bodily alcohol, which worked its rings attention with a veil self in remorse over a night ever, a death of honor and motto: "The tribe of Harri At the same time he sadly ancestors, who had triumph von List again) and whose bodies," with another brot re-emphasized the basic stinents in the character of I much another race as it was by drink and illicit love. His with love for the Volk, and race if it followed his presci

Popert did not rest content, but added further criticism toward the improvement of the stem of matching complement of the race must be main be able to match each other essay that they be able to portions and judge each other one of his associates criticized it hid the faults of the body. the right partner.⁵⁰ Popert called *Vortrupp*, to depict which accented the theme of

Popert realized that the spectacle for the dissemination. He attended the convocation Mountain and propagated direct influence, but it is ir stamp of the times. The M frained from indulging in cannot be directly credited upon as a symbol of student as we shall see shortly, wa ideas of the company of n *Bund*.

Although Popert did content of race left something

* Hitler: Agreed! And he studied the paller of his skin in the mirror. Was there a touch of olive in the hue?

A. H. on

in his earlier *Rassentheorien* criticized Chamberlain for stress-
 of external characteristics.⁴⁸
that the pigmentation of the
the skin and intellectual brill-
 n dominated racial anthropol-
 onnected with the sun mythos,
 be the children of light.

rough racial hygiene was not
 elite. It was diffused among
 sely tied to the Youth Move-
 d Vortrupp (Advance Guard)
 beautiful, stronger, and health-
 and practical; he was less inter-
 ating drunkenness and promis-
 strength, beauty, and health of

Popert tried to deal with was
 enth century saw an alarming
 g the lower classes of the pop-
 . In Germany the fraternities
 eties and were corrupting the
 in England evangelical move-
 m, in Germany Popert sought
 ishes one more example of the
 its ability to draw all sorts of

f the most widely read novels
 It was written roughly at the
 he cosmic overtones, the odor
 urte's book. The hero of the
 specimen of the German race.
 long hair, broad chest, energy
 al face—the hero displayed a
 nection between the external
 scene in which a judge, con-
 ngly accused of cheating, de-
 meone with the defendant's
 of stock mirrored an inherent

n, and his own reactions made
 racial hygiene. He was a cru-
 ce from alcohol, he felt, was

1924

vital for mental and bodily health. The alien and poisonous nature of
 alcohol, which worked its effects on all levels, was brought to Har-
 ringa's attention with a vengeance when his brother drowned him-
 self in remorse over a night of drink and illicit love. It was, how-
 ever, a death of honor and penitence carried out under the family
 motto: "The tribe of Harringa cannot live with a deflowered body."
 At the same time he sadly contrasted the physical endurance of his
ancestors, who had triumphed over the Ice Age (echoes of Guido
 von List again) and whose "marrow was strength and splendour their
bodies," with another brother's wretched syphilitic frame.⁴⁹ Popert
 re-emphasized the basic struggle of the race against all impure ele-
 ments in the character of Harringa. But here the enemy was not so
 much another race as it was the degeneration from within symbolized
 by drink and illicit love. His advocacy of racial hygiene was drenched
 with love for the Volk, and he extolled the potentials of the German
 race if it followed his prescriptions.

Popert did not rest content with opposing drink and extramarital
 love, but added further criticism on dress and mores with a view to-
 ward the improvement of the race. He was concerned with the prob-
 lem of matching complementary couples in marriage. Since the qual-
 ity of the race must be maintained, it was imperative that the partner
 be able to match each other's physical properties. For that it was nec-
 essary that they be able to appraise each other's physique and prop-
 erties and judge each other's merits and demerits. Consequently,
 one of his associates criticized the modern dress of his times because
 it hid the faults of the body, thus increasing the difficulty of choosing
 the right partner.⁵⁰ Popert devoted the cover of his journal, also
 called *Vortrupp*, to depicting a series of males with perfect bodies
 which accented the theme of Nordic ideals of beauty.

Popert realized that the Youth Movement represented the best re-
 ceptacle for the dissemination of his views. It was ripe for conversion.
 He attended the convocation of the German youth on the Meissner
 Mountain and propagated his views.⁵¹ It is rather hard to assess his di-
 rect influence, but it is immediately clear that his thesis bore the
 stamp of the times. The Meissner youth did reject alcohol and re-
 frained from indulging in illicit love affairs. But their temperance
 cannot be directly credited to Popert. Rather, alcohol was frowned
 upon as a symbol of student fraternities and bourgeois life, while love,
 as we shall see shortly, was supplanted by Eros, based on Platonic
 ideas of the company of men—expressed in German by the word
Bund.

Although Popert did contribute to the stock of racial ideas, his con-
 cept of race left something to be desired from the Volkish point of

A. H. on drink.

view. He was half Jewish himself and thus did not fit into the commonly accepted racial definitions. Moreover, his concept of race rested on territorial criteria; that is, anyone living in the German state should be able to become a true German by practicing the racial eugenics outlined in *Helmut Harringa*.⁵² But his concept of race—and others similar to his—was ultimately rejected, and he became something of an outsider, even in the Youth Movement. Nevertheless, his romantic idealism did help to shape the adolescence of generations of German youth.

What, then, did the racial theories accomplish? By the end of the nineteenth century, racial thought had transformed the struggle for the survival of the fittest into a racial imperative. In uniting with tendencies in romantic thought, it presented the "whole" man as an alternative to the alienated and dislocated individuals who were drifting in the wake of industrial change. The presentation was visual. The Aryan was represented by certain definite external characteristics, supposedly reflecting the inner qualities of the race. The enemy too was stereotyped for easy identification. Whether because of a life of debauchery or because of non-Aryan origins, the enemy's appearance betrayed him. He was presented visually as either an example of degeneration or the exact opposite of the ideal Nordic type. The hostile attitude toward the Jews—there were individual exceptions—was a stock reaction to a correspondingly grotesque caricature. However irrational these racist ideas were, they sunk so deeply into the minds of many Germans that they were accepted even in the face of contrary visual evidence: for example, despite the evidence of photographs, in 1933 the periodical *Die Sonne* assured its readers that Hirler was blue-eyed and blond.⁵³

Throughout this chapter we have attempted to trace the development of a component part of the Volkish ideology, which, for all its scientific pretensions, had a romantic and mystical basis, as did other parts of the ideology. Through a step-by-step examination of the ideas of various influential exponents, the racist ideology becomes more comprehensible. Taken by themselves, theosophy, sun worship, and the Nordic ideal of beauty seem outrageously irrational. But taken as a whole, they provided an explanation of the world and man's place in it. Combined, they crystallized the yearnings of those classes who were sinking in the social scale. To these it offered the hope of future power; to the lower classes it promised a better life. It provided a vision of eventual superiority, however bleak the present looked, however near bankruptcy the old structure might be. Moreover, science seemed to validate the illusion that a change to a new order would be possible without disrupting the class structure. Whatever

change would come about, it reconstitute them in a more c
pleased those who were losin
point of view, despite its exce
more plausible and, indeed, un

One of these excesses must
ous members of the Volkish
racially pure society immedia
in what they considered to be
in which the purity of the r
with degenerates. Just as utop
socialist islands in a capitalist
communities which would serv

*Goebbels is all for this, later
they can speak of howler Nazi
darkened with the weight of
his responsibility*

generated Germanic freedom and would tend to enhance this identifying Christmas—with a Germanic image to the changing of the sun

aining ground for the leaders of which were to spring up after the who had once edited the official which will be discussed later, and called Sigfried (1921), also original colony. Sigfried was designed to "erman blood" in order to protect [i.e., French] hordes, not just made and above all through the [German-Aryan] wisdom." ¹² There is a distinctly Volkish atmosphere of the lived and worked. This Volkish led by a part of the Youth Movement leadership as well.

the truth as early as 1908. Fritsch was a racist and violently anti-Semitic publisher whose publishing house whose *Technism* (later called *The Handbuch*) went through forty editions of anti-Jewish opinion. The Nazis (at eighty-nine years of age) as typically enough, Fritsch, from a pre-occupied in preserving the middle class industrialism and urbanism. building garden cities which *Zukunft: The Town of the Future* settlement movement, bypassing that he looked to Eden for in his own organization, the Hamletas from the older colony: ecological as in Eden because its policy body and soul, while a common to the community's identity. ¹³ Fritsch's close friend and colleague, a remarkable figure was a pupil of Darwinism in Germany, and also of agriculture. Hentschel

was an academic proletarian, a university person without any university position. Like his friend Fritsch, he witnessed the unification of Germany (he was born in 1858) and lived long enough to be honored by the Nazis, especially through *Der Stürmer* of Julius Streicher. Early in his life he had joined various anti-Semitic organizations and had been one of the founders of the extremist Deutschsoziale party in the last decade of the century. Above all he remained close to Fritsch, joining him in his propagandistic ventures and having his books published by the Hammer. The impetus to Germanic utopian thought and racial identification which Hentschel provided was as influential as it was extreme. Today it is forgotten, but in his time Hentschel's book *Varuna* (1907) was considered to be as influential as Spengler's work in the formation of a general, popular state of mind. Such a comparison is undoubtedly exaggerated, for Hentschel lacked Spengler's universality of mind. ¹⁴

In his analysis of man's history, Hentschel affirmed the Germanic and racial world view. He thought that the process of history was integrated with spiritualistic elements. The course of man's development, Hentschel asserted, was similar to a release of energy potential: history was powered by energy which had been accumulated and stored from the abundant supply of racial dynamism in primeval times. Race was an electric charge, it was dynamic, and it had to be preserved and enhanced by increasing the degree of racial purity. Even within the race, the most promising stock was to be encouraged and the inferior left behind. The Aryans, who did not spring from an admixture of races, must affirm through themselves the quality of noble blood that runs through their veins. Aryan nobles and warriors were to be formed, as they had always been, by selection and selective propagation. Social division, a special class, indeed a caste system, was thus essential. To ensure the creation of such a racial and Volkish nobility, Hentschel proposed the establishment of a truly Germanic colony. ¹⁵

The settlement was to be called Mittgart after the legendary place to which the Aryan race traces its origins. The colony was to constitute a new beginning for the race. Hentschel claimed that the racial stock must be isolated, or rather insulated, in this way, so that it would be protected from the corrupting effects of modernity. Only a German village could provide the incentive necessary for the development of the Volk. Consequently, Mittgart was to be founded on the land and would therefore breed a race firmly attached to the soil. Even the selection for membership reflected this attitude. In recruiting, Hentschel asserted that the non-fit should be shipped to the city, where the environment would destroy them, while the fit

In *Varuna*, Hitler at Munich, gives credit for his inspiration, always to that of energy, to the electric charge stored through the millennia by his racial roots—

Mozor (part 2 of 2)

Crisis of German Ideology

Master Sheet Markings

~~Lucas~~

Lucas Hitler of History | vertical line

Morgan The David ○ circle

Kegan First World War △ triangle

Moss Crisis of German
Ideology + cross

Rosenberg Selected Writings ☆ star

Wykes Hummer ▽ inverted triangle

should leave the urban centers and join the settlement or stake out land for themselves. In this manner, the Volk, freed of its inferior stock, would be able to strike roots once more.¹⁶

What then was Mittgart—this generator of racial energy—like? The settlers were supposed to form one big family, a special brotherhood of men. No trade or money would be permitted, and the necessities of life and capital goods would be purchased by a sage and aged senate composed of friends of the settlement. Quarrels between members would be brought before a court of honor—or decided in individual combat, “still the best law, which gives its due to the strong.” The whole spirit of Mittgart, and especially the institution of trial by combat was a revitalized adaptation of medieval customs. However, as Mittgart’s purpose was to build for the future while attempting to evoke ancestral purity, selective racial breeding was considered. Hentschel, the pupil of Ernst Häckel, declared his intent to erect a model community to breed the fittest Aryan specimens, who would champion the survival of the race.¹⁷

Along these lines and in the service of his ideal, he made his most sensational suggestion: he advocated instituting polygamy. Hentschel regarded the current state of the race as desperate: it was rapidly waning in strength and endurance. Only a crash breeding program could recover lost ground and halt the degeneration. Constant production, continuous propagation of the race, was imperative, and the breeding capabilities of Aryan men and women must be used to the fullest. According to Hentschel’s proposal, the leadership of the settlement would determine who would marry. A marriage would automatically terminate when the woman became pregnant. The man was to remarry immediately, while the woman was to devote herself to tending the child for two years. Thereupon she was to enter into a new union and again conceive for the glory of the Aryan race. The position of the woman was clearly defined: she was the breeding stock of the race who tended the children and the settlement gardens. In many ways this found a direct application under National Socialism.

The children of Mittgart were not supposed to breathe the “dust of the school” until they were sixteen. When they reached this age, they left the settlement for the bourgeois world, where the state was to provide them with the formal education they had missed. At Mittgart they had more important things to learn. The girls helped their mothers with the domestic chores; that was their place and calling. Meanwhile, the boys would be organized into groups of one hundred, inculcated with the Germanic spirit, and trained by the elders to bear arms. The use of group song and story sessions was a popular

way of instilling in the youth Heroic songs praising ancient the open air. A secondary the youths’ memory and clearly anti-intellectual, to confront us time and again tional state of mind and pl Germanic man should ag: it is small wonder that Hen religious genius that Germ:

Hentschel calculated wh the breeding ground of th hundred men. And though of racial hygiene—might l members, the Mittgart Bur in German soil. This elal pages of Hentschel’s book. such themes. Others were v The “German League for Dr. Alfred Damm and Ott ment of a “Teutonic Fou schel’s.”¹⁹ In Conservative j received with approbation. ished high praise on Hent down its own extremism ar utopias. The interval had : anti-Semitic position close conservatism, and the pape breeding institution as the Hentschel’s “grotesque reg Bund der Landwirte, omni more conciliatory position. his anti-Semitism, and gloss Warm praise came from sy cial aspirations and who w his goals achieved promptly deeply involved in the You ing the institutions of Mittg

All of Hentschel’s utopia There was hardly an eleme of course, of his racism. Mi asserted the inherent beauty of racial formulations, it ec

+

the settlement or stake out
 e Volk, freed of its inferior
 more.¹⁶
 ator of racial energy—like?
 big family, a special brother-
 be permitted, and the neces-
 purchased by a sage and aged
 settlement. Quarrels between
 ert of honor—or decided in
 which gives its due to the
 and especially the institution
 ptation of medieval customs.
 build for the future while at-
 tive racial breeding was con-
 äckel, declared his intent to
 fittest Aryan specimens, who

27
 f his ideal, he made his most
 nstituting polygamy. Hent-
 e race as desperate: it was
 ince. Only a crash breeding
 halt the degeneration. Con-
 n of the race, was imperative,
 en and women must be used
 s proposal, the leadership of
 ould marry. A marriage would
 n became pregnant. The man
 woman was to devote herself
 eupon she was to enter into a
 lory of the Aryan race. The
 fined: she was the breeding
 n and the settlement gardens.
 ation under National Social-

pposed to breathe the "dust"
 When they reached this age,
 s world, where the state was
 on they had missed. At Mitt-
 learn. The girls helped their
 was their place and calling.
 ed into groups of one hun-
 fit, and trained by the elders
 story sessions was a popular

way of instilling in the youngsters a sense of their Germanic identity. Heroic songs praising ancient Germanic bravery were to be sung in the open air. A secondary purpose of these exercises was to stimulate the youths' memory and their sense of rhythm. The emphasis was clearly anti-intellectual, an aspect of the Germanic ideal that will confront us time and again. Not the power of reasoning, but an emotional state of mind and physical prowess were the chief objectives. Germanic man should again be fused with the cosmic forces, and it is small wonder that Hentschel regarded Paul de Lagarde as the last religious genius that Germany had produced.¹⁸

Hentschel calculated what he thought was the proper sex ratio for the breeding ground of the racial elite: one thousand women to one hundred men. And though this situation—in addition to the attraction of racial hygiene—might be expected to appeal to prospective male members, the Mittgart Bund was never able to sink permanent roots in German soil. This elaborate utopia remained enshrined in the pages of Hentschel's book. But Hentschel was not the only one with such themes. Others were working for the same ends in similar ways. The "German League for Regeneration," for instance, founded by Dr. Alfred Damm and Otto Hauser in 1902, proposed the establishment of a "Teutonic Foundation" with purposes similar to Hentschel's.¹⁹ In Conservative party circles the Mittgart Bund was first received with approbation. The newspaper *Die Kreuz Zeitung* lavished high praise on Hentschel in 1892, but by 1912 it had toned down its own extremism and with it its outright support of the racial utopias. The interval had seen a change in editorial policy from an anti-Semitic position close to Adolf Stöcker's to a more moderate conservatism, and the paper now mockingly referred to Hentschel's breeding institution as the "chicken farm" and fulminated against Hentschel's "grotesque regression into the realm of zoology."²⁰ The Bund der Landwirte, omnipresent in the Volkish movement, took a more conciliatory position. It thought highly of Hentschel, stressed his anti-Semitism, and glossed over the sexual extremism of Mittgart. Warm praise came from sympathetic individuals who shared his racial aspirations and who were equally impatient in their desire to see his goals achieved promptly.²¹ Erich Mathes, for instance, a publisher deeply involved in the Youth Movement, brought out a novel praising the institutions of Mittgart in poetic form.²²

All of Hentschel's utopian schemes reflected the Volkish ideology. There was hardly an element that was not derivative. This was true, of course, of his racism. Mittgart was based on the racial theory that asserted the inherent beauty of the Aryan race and, like the majority of racial formulations, it equated inner qualities with external char-

HW

acteristics. The Aryan race was the blond, perfectly proportioned race. Consequently, the belief in external beauty as the mirror of the beauty of the soul led Hentschel to praise the Aryan body and encourage the cult of the body. He asserted that any manner of dress alienated man from his body, which was a divine gift, and thus destroyed his inner equilibrium. Aryan beauty, being genuine beauty, must be nude, said Hentschel, echoing Fidus.²³ The cult of the body grew and became so popular that just prior to the First World War the *Freibad*, nude bathing, was a more or less common phenomenon. The practice was encouraged by a journal significantly entitled *Volkish Nudism*.

In many respects this was not a new phenomenon. Physical culture, without the racial emphasis on nudity, had been identified with the Volkish movement ever since Father Jahn had encouraged it among his own disciples. Indeed, the German Gymnasts, founded by Jahn, became a part of the general movement. The emphasis on physique and the glorification of strength had been a distinct undercurrent in their philosophy as well. Gymnastic exercises steered the Aryan body in the struggle against foreign as well as internal enemies. Physical culture found further encouragement within the utopian movement. In 1903, for example, Paul Zimmermann founded his settlement, Klingenberg, in Prussia, expressly as a place "for the furtherance of Nordic body culture." He also adapted Wachler's idea of the open-air theater. Meeting under the blue sky, his group would solemnly reaffirm a dedication to Germanic culture, race, and heritage.²⁴

Modifying his earlier ideas, Hentschel reasserted himself in the period after the First World War to demand the creation of a "heroic guild of agricultural workers." In a pamphlet entitled *Was soll nun aus uns werden? (What Shall Become of Us?)* (1923) he called for a concerted effort to form a company of fighting knights to protect the German earth. It was the religious duty of youth to join such a group, to dedicate themselves to the preservation of a German Volk that had been created according to a God-given order. The deity of the Aryan race, asserted Hentschel, was to be the god Artam, and so he named the organization Artam, which was later changed to the collective, Artamanen.²⁵

Willibald Hentschel gave the ideological impetus, but the organization was actually founded by a rightist-oriented section of the Youth Movement—under the leadership of Wilhelm Korzde, the leader of the youth group Adler und Falken (Eagles and Falcons), and Bruno Tanzmann, a personally unstable agitator. Unlike Mittag, the Artamanen were successful because they adopted a more realistic economic system. They did not settle in a utopian commu-

nity but hired out as agriculturists necessary for later settlements on estate in 1924. Here Hentschel's economy; the union was beneficial, it presented a plausible solution to the dislocation that faced Germany with dedication. High on the list of demands: foreign labor (the estates on Germany's east coast must be colonized by the nation must be pushed toward economic goals, almost a declaration of independence. *Lebensraum*, living space, necessity, and any acceptance of foreigners appropriating or was an act of treason. Opposition to this outcry, while modernity the internal foe. Ludwig Wolfling flight into the cities had perverted the German's station in the country to the native soil. The conditions doused the sacred fires of the short and sharp. A people that the soil while they preferred to emigrate committed national suicide. Redress and the soil. The Artamanen were

The Volkish ideal of the people of the propaganda drive to recast the character of the Artamanen. In the early leaders of the organization was synonymous with a nobility; the race was to be found in the soil. This image was projected even the Artamanen in the papers of the Reich press depicted the radiant peasant sun will brown your skin and (

The same emphasis dominated before he became associated with the organization. He launched a school for adult peasants, the strength of the peasantry and promoting peasant culture—to instill new life in the peasant. Tanzmann's view, contained

perfectly proportioned
ity as the mirror of the
se Aryan body and en-
it any manner of dress
vine gift, and thus de-
being genuine beauty,
3 The cult of the body
the First World War
common phenomenon.
ificantly entitled *Volk-*

enon. Physical culture,
en identified with the
l encouraged it among
ists, founded by Jahn,
emphasis on physique
inct undercurrent in
teeled the Aryan body
mal enemies. Physical
he utopian movement.
unded his settlement,
"for the furtherance
Wachler's idea of the
his group would sol-
e, race, and heritage.²⁴
rted himself in the pe-
creation of a "heroic
entitled *Was soll nun*
(1923) he called for
ing knights to protect
youth to join such a
on of a German Volk
ven order. The deity
e the god Artam, and
s later changed to the

petus, but the organ-
ented section of the
Wilhelm Korfde, the
Eagles and Falcons),
gitator. Unlike Mitt-
they adopted a more
in a utopian commu-

nity but hired out as agricultural workers in order to obtain the funds necessary for later settlements. They first began to work on a Saxon estate in 1924. Here Hentschel's idealism was fused with a practical economy; the union was beneficial. More than any of the other utopias, it presented a plausible solution to modernity and the agrarian dislocation that faced Germany. The Artamanen set to their task with dedication. High on the list of their priorities were the following demands: foreign labor (mostly Polish) must be removed from the estates on Germany's eastern frontier; the eastern lands themselves must be colonized by Germans once more; and the border of the nation must be pushed ever further east.²⁶ These sound like military goals, almost a declaration of war, and the stakes were indeed high. *Lebensraum*, living space for the Volk, was considered a prime necessity, and any acceptance, on the part of national leaders, of foreigners appropriating or working on native soil was regarded as an act of treason. Opposition to the Versailles Treaty prompted this outcry, while modernity still provided the basis for identifying the internal foe. Ludwig Woltmann had complained earlier that the flight into the cities had permitted foreign and lesser races to usurp the German's station in the countryside and thus destroy his relation to the native soil. The conditions of the cities, on the other hand, doused the sacred fires of the race.²⁷ The Volkish condemnation was short and sharp. A people that allowed foreigners to till their native soil while they preferred to exist as the proletariat of the cities committed national suicide. Redress was needed for the Volk, the race, and the soil. The Artamanen were ready to take up the cause.

The Volkish ideal of the peasant was thrust into the foreground of the propaganda drive to recruit new members and to represent the character of the Artamanen. Hans Holfelder, the most important of the early leaders of the organization, stated that a nobility of blood was synonymous with a nobility of the peasantry. The perfection of the race was to be found in the perfection of the tiller of the land.²⁸ This image was projected everywhere. Advertisements placed by the Artamanen in the papers of the Youth Movement and the Volkish press depicted the radiant profile of a boy, with the caption: "The sun will brown your skin and cleanse your blood."²⁹

The same emphasis dominated the activities of Bruno Tanzmann before he became associated with the Artamanen. In 1921 he launched a school for adult peasant education designed to revive the strength of the peasantry and to utilize it in the modern struggle. By promoting peasant culture—folk songs, dances, and tales—he sought to instill new life in the peasantry. The themes of these activities, in Tanzmann's view, contained an undercurrent of pure force. This

elemental, primitive energy was indispensable, since, according to his formulation, true peasant culture required the awakening of a primitive imagery within the breast of the Aryan Germanic Volk.³⁰ It is significant that Heinrich Himmler in the 1920's had high praise for the adult peasant education (*Bauernhochschul*) movement, calling it vital for the development of peasant self-consciousness, for the peasant estate is "the foundation of the Volkish state." In this connection he stressed the importance of settlements as a bulwark against the Slavic workers, thus linking his thought with that of the whole settlement movement.³¹ Such ideas became common among the Artamanen as well, interrelated as they were with romanticism and racism.

But the Artamanen had practical ideas as well. They managed their economy realistically; they worked hard at agriculture and regarded themselves as the instrument of transition from the city to the land. The members of the Artamanen resided in rural communities and worked as agricultural laborers earning wages according to the prevailing rate. Their goal was to accumulate enough capital to enable them to purchase land and settle down as independent peasants and farmers, but their movement collapsed before they were able to realize this goal. Despite its failure, the Artamanen scheme was superior to the self-contained community which was primarily interested in abstract ideals. In addition, the Artamanen discarded the essentially unworkable ideal of "free land."³²

The emphasis on practicality, which distinguished the Artamanen from other utopias, was instrumental in attracting intellectual and financial support from various sources. Georg Schiele, the agricultural expert for the Deutschnationale party and minister-designate of agriculture during the Kapp putsch, was one of Artamanen's most avid supporters.³³ Even bigger forces aligned themselves with the agricultural settlement. The whole Volkish movement was sympathetic. The National Socialists were enthusiastic. From the very beginning, there were intimate ties between them and the Artamanen, at least between their leaders. Tanzmann was the publisher of the anti-Semitic *Swastika Calendar* and eventually joined the party; in 1933 Hitler honored him with a lifetime income.³⁴ Hans Holfelder became a party member in 1925 and was able to bring Himmler into the movement. Friedrich Schmidt, the chancellor of the Artamanen, joined the next year. But, at first, the Artamanen Bund as a whole resisted amalgamation with the Nazis.

Himmler did his best to convert them, telling them that without the transcendent *Weltanschauung* of the National Socialist party the whole movement made no sense and was futile.³⁵ But to no avail. The Artamanen's resistance was based on their racial ideology. Their ob-

jections to the Nazis movement. The Nazis (masses) and too political work of the Diet).³⁶ economic crisis was becoming a standstill; a notion that only the Nazis were many's enemies. Although some held out the National Socialism inspired by the Artamanen.

Hentschel's ideas influence on several German politics. Walther Darrwitz, was intimately grasped the necessity of Nazi breeding institutions for agricultural imperialism. But there was some discussion on the issue of polygamy was mainly introduced into the background first been well received the impermanence of movement. Being fundamental as the inalienable essence some of their racial ideas from their connection with the National Socialism and in the process exposed itself.³⁸

But in the end it was the success of the Artamanen of the utopian group membership ranged from 100 at the time of 1933. Again, in terms of those of the right and numbers they made the whole Volkish movement. After all, the few hundred members which they propelled

sable, since, according to his d the awakening of a primi-
yan Germanic Volk.³⁰ It is
the 1920's had high praise for
(*schul*) movement, calling it
consciousness, for the peas-
sh state." In this connection
is as a bulwark against the
with that of the whole settle-
common among the Artama-
romanticism and racism.
is well. They managed their
at agriculture and regarded
from the city to the land.
in rural communities and
pages according to the pre-
te enough capital to enable
s independent peasants and
fore they were able to real-
nanen scheme was superior
was primarily interested in
en discarded the essentially

stinguished the Artamanen
attracting intellectual and
Georg Schiele, the agricul-
tury and minister-designate
s one of Artamanen's most
igned themselves with the
sh movement was sympa-
siastic. From the very be-
them and the Artamanen,
was the publisher of the
ually joined the party; in
income.³⁴ Hans Holfelder
ble to bring Himmler into
ncellor of the Artamanen,
nanen Bund as a whole re-

telling them that without
National Socialist party the
title.³⁵ But to no avail. The
racial ideology. Their ob-

jections to the Nazis were similar to those of the rest of the Volkish movement. The Nazis were too democratic (they appealed to the masses) and too political (they participated as a political party in the work of the Diet).³⁶ However, by 1929, when the international economic crisis was being felt in Germany, the Artamanen movement came to a standstill, and many defected to the Nazis with the conviction that only the National Socialists could deal efficiently with Germany's enemies. Most of the Artamanen finally joined the Nazis, although some held out longer than others. It was dissolved only when the National Socialist labor service was established, itself partly inspired by the Artamanen.

Hentschel's ideas and the Artamanen exerted a significant influence on several men who were to play important roles in German politics. Walther Darré, who eventually became minister of agriculture, was intimately involved. He asserted that Hentschel had truly grasped the necessity for a racial and Volkish peasant nobility.³⁷ The Nazi breeding institutions were anticipated by Mittgart, and the agricultural imperialism of the Artamanen Bund outlived Hentschel. But there was some disagreement. Even Darré disagreed with Hentschel on the issue of polygamy. In fact, Hentschel's advocacy of polygamy was mainly responsible for pushing the concept of Artam into the background of the Volkish movement, although it had at first been well received. The disruption of the family structure and the impermanence of marriage vows were anathema to the movement. Being fundamentally conservative, they regarded the family as the inalienable center of race and Volk. Though Himmler shared some of their racial and cultist views, he wanted above all to wean them from their independent position and bring them into association with the National Socialists. Holfelder served as a go-between, and in the process expanded his contacts to include Adolf Hitler himself.³⁸

But in the end it was the relatively numerous membership and the success of the Artamanen that attracted the Nazis. It was the largest of the utopian groups. In contrast to the other utopias, whose membership ranged from 200 to 300, that of the Artamanen spiraled from 100 at the time of its inception in 1924 to 1500 four years later.³⁹ Again, in terms of the size of the politically conscious public, even those of the right alone, this was a pittance. But what they lacked in numbers they made up for in dedication. The importance of the whole Volkish movement never consisted in sheer strength of numbers. After all, the early National Socialists never had more than a few hundred members. Their importance consisted in the ideas which they propelled onto the national scene, the movements they

based primarily on economic, religious, and social considerations, was to be a Jewish, not a German accomplishment. Aware that the Zionists also were attempting to establish agrarian utopias, the Germans soon conferred upon themselves the exclusive ideological privilege of doing so. For example, in 1922, a Volkish periodical asserted with contempt that Jewish settlements were a mockery and would fail since the Jews were not a Volk, had no peasants, and owned no land, but were only traders and parasites.⁵³ It was a typical attitude of the Volkish movement; judgments derived from ideological presuppositions were considered superior to objective evidence. When Jews did show an interest in, and a capacity for, agricultural occupations (which were always made difficult for them), the Volkish press proclaimed that young Jews who were training for agricultural tasks were doing so as part of a Jewish plot. It claimed that their ardor was indeed suspicious since it was common knowledge that Jews shied away from manual labor.⁵⁴

But did the Germanic utopias and the underlying ideology have any influence on the development of the *Kibbutzim* movement? Did the general philosophical outlook of German Zionists contain elements similar to the land, nature, and Volk idealization of Volkish thought? The direct historical influence for the establishment of the *Kibbutzim* came not from Germany but from Eastern European and socialist sources. The only possible direct connection might be traced to the German Jewish *Habonim*. For this group, the Youth Movement provided the central rallying point. Their declaration asserted that the "immediacy of experience has been lost to us." The intimacy with nature, earth, the rhythm of the seasons, and the vitality of physical labor had been severed from the experiences of the young Jews. What was necessary, they declared, was to resume the struggle with nature, acquire the primitive strength of physical prowess, and live a life without intellectual trappings. "Our movement seen as a whole is romantic"; it is the Jewish longing for work, earth, and community.⁵⁵ These sentiments indeed mirrored the mood of New Romanticism. But they were not fully realized in the actual agrarian settlements in Palestine. Though for the historian there seems at first to be a tempting correlation, any significant connection between Germanic utopias and the *Kibbutzim* movement has not been established.⁵⁶

So far anti-Semitism has entered our discussion only tangentially, though indeed it was central to the Volkish ideology. It identified the enemy and objectified him. If the German race had degenerated, then someone was responsible. To use a constantly recurring Volk-

ish image: a snake gnaw spontaneous, natural growth to the realization of the horror and murder during

CHAPTER 7

The Jew

FOR GERMAN JEWS in the nineteenth century, emancipation came sporadically, and their own fortunes seemed to rise and fall with those of the forces that sought political, social, and economic reform. Equality and political privileges were in all cases gifts of revolution—which the Jews supported but paid heavily for once reaction set in. In France the liberation of the Jews coincided with the general advance of progressive forces—which they joined and, at times, contributed to heavily. In Germany, however, they gained their rights in an entirely different setting. Here revolutionary fervor, defeated and chauvinistic, had settled into the emotional molds of romanticism. The affirmation of civil rights for Jews contrasted ominously with the victory of a romantic ethos.

This particular confluence of forces portended an unsettled and disquieting future for the emancipated Jews, and the prevalent cultural emphasis was to work in their disfavor. The Volkish movement in Germany, as we have come to know it, exposed the geography of the human soul. It defined the German—as well as the Jew—according to his inherent and integral traits. In contrasting these two mutually exclusive types, New Romantic thought made the following assertions: the Jew was an alien in the land of the Germanic peoples, which had been chartered in a spirit of pietistic Christianity and which was the native soil of the rooted Volk. During the middle of the nineteenth century, the contrasting images were promoted chiefly by popular literature. Writers such as Gustav Freytag had introduced a Jewish stereotype which was rapidly diffused in the period after emancipation. It held the Jew to be without a soul, without the humble German virtues, and consequently uprooted. The Jew, too, epitomized Riehl's troublesome, malevolent, and shiftless proletariat. The Jew, in short, was anathema to Volkish thought. In con-

trast to the German soul,
~~mos, the soul of the Jew~~

How did the Volkish in general, arrive at such Jew never died in Germany been supported because and with it their undesignate their past, become work." When such man into the mysterious setting fallen in Germany, the image, especially since the European Jewry within the Jews. To Germans strange and soul-less. The ghetto conditions in the environment and were now Herzberg-Fränkel and they claimed to despise and spiritual poverty of streets as his leitmotif; I mous phrase "half Asia." ears. The Germans along ghetto traders and peddled had supposedly been the Fränkel and Franzos.

The development of the nature of the Jew, Perhaps the most famous Freytag's *Debit and Credits* which Volkish thought, ugly, grasping, and without climbed to success through contrasted to the German while making his way in strated by his honesty through Wilhelm Raabe *Pastor to the Hungry*) (1 religious element as a well-ordered structure of the contrasted with the Jew and plot of the novel well illu-

Q: How often I regretted this to him while he slept

trast to the German soul, which acted as a filter between man and cosmos, the soul of the Jew was an insensitive, materialistic thing.

How did the Volkish thinkers in particular, and many Germans in general, arrive at such conclusions? The historical image of the Jew never died in Germany. From the first, Jewish emancipation had been supported because it might enable Jews to shed their Judaism and with it their undesirable qualities. Johann Christian Dohm, the champion of emancipation, hoped that through it Jews would repudiate their past, become ethical persons, and settle down to "honest work."¹ When such men thought of Jews as Jews, they put them into the mysterious setting of the ghetto, and though its walls had fallen in Germany, the association continued to color the Jewish image, especially since the continued existence of the mass of East European Jewry within ghettos could be taken to typify Judaism and the Jews. To Germans this civilization on their border was both strange and soul-less. This view was enhanced by the exposure of ghetto conditions in the literary works of Jews who had left this environment and were now eager to repudiate it. In their novels, Leo Herzberg-Fränkell and Emil Franzos renounced their past, indeed, they claimed to despise it. Herzberg-Fränkell stressed the material and spiritual poverty of the ghettos, and used the dirty, crowded streets as his leitmotif; Franzos summed up his revulsion in the famous phrase "half Asia."² These condemnations fell upon receptive ears. The Germans along the eastern border who had dealt with ghetto traders and peddlers, and who, like Gustav Freytag himself, had supposedly been cheated by them, loudly agreed with Herzberg-Fränkell and Franzos.

The development of this feeling, along with the changing view of the nature of the Jew, was vividly presented in popular literature. Perhaps the most famous rendition of the stereotype appeared in Freytag's *Debit and Credit* (1855). Veitel Itzig typified all the qualities which Volkish thought was to associate with the Jew. He was ugly, grasping, and without any true humanity. A rootless being, he climbed to success through ruthlessness and false dealing. Itzig is contrasted to the German apprentice who retains his righteousness while making his way in the world and whose rootedness is demonstrated by his honesty and responsibility.³ A similar theme runs through Wilhelm Raabe's immensely popular *Hungerpastor (The Pastor to the Hungry)* (1863). Here, however, the emphasis is on the religious element as a way of life. The German, satisfied with the ordered structure of the world and his place in it, is sharply contrasted with the Jew and his insatiable lust for aggrandizement. The plot of the novel well illustrates the theme. Two friends, one a Chris-

tury, emancipation came
ed to rise and fall with
social, and economic re-
in all cases gifts of revo-
heavily for once reaction
coincided with the gen-
h they joined and, at
, however, they gained
ere revolutionary fervor,
the emotional molds of
its for Jews contrasted
os.

ended an unsettled and
, and the prevalent cul-
The Volkish movement
posed the geography of
ell as the Jew—accord-
rasting these two mutu-
made the following as-
the Germanic peoples,
etistic Christianity and
. During the middle of
nages were promoted
Gustav Freytag had in-
dly diffused in the pe-
vithout a soul, without
y uprooted. The Jew,
nt, and shiftless prole-
llkish thought. In con-

can

tian, the other a Jew, venture into the world to make their way. The Christian strives honestly and raises himself to become the benevolent pastor of a poor seaside parish. The Jew is dishonest, ruthless, and consumed by a lust for power, but in the end his ambitions are thwarted.⁴ Raabe allows his Jew a cleaner end than that granted to Veitel Itzig by Freytag: literally drowning in a dirty river. But, in his novels, Freytag exonerated himself by introducing the good Jew who yearns for assimilation into Germanic rootedness and renounces his father's unscrupulous ways. There was still hope.

Stereotypes of this sort converted the Jewish question, in the words of Adolf Stöcker in the Prussian Diet, into an "ethical question."⁵ Not race alone, nor nationality or religion, was at stake; a whole way of life was endangered by alien values. The everyday behavior of a people, the way they conducted their daily lives, reflected their nature and set them apart from others. Antecedents for the behavior of the Jews were found in various interpretations of the Old Testament. Judaism, it was asserted in true Volkish fashion, was a materialistic fossil devoid of any ethical impulse, which, unlike the Germanic elements of Christianity, could not produce the virtues of honesty, loyalty, and forthrightness present in the German soul. The barren stones of the ghetto streets epitomized the soul of Jewry. The mystical element in Volkish thought went on to elaborate the leitmotif. The ghetto, with its dark streets and mysterious caftaned inhabitants, excited the imagination of various writers, who further contributed to widening the gap between German and Jew.

Hermann Gödsche, who adopted the more romantic pen name of Sir John Redcliffe, wrote a novel popularizing the mysterious aspects of the Jew. The Jews were portrayed as conspirators against the Gentile world. In his famous *Diarritz* (1868), the Jewish conspirators met in the "mysterious" cemetery of the ghetto of Prague, where they plotted to take over the world. Gödsche remained popular and personally active, serving on the editorial staff of the ultra-conservative *Kreuz Zeitung* and contributing to its opposition to the liberal forces in post-1848 Germany. Through these efforts he acquired a special relevance to racist, Volkish, and National Socialist thought. His book was a forerunner of *Protokolle der Weisen von Zion* (*Protocols of the Elders of Zion*) and helped to pave the way for the acceptance of more extremist ideas. For the Nazis, Gödsche's fictional account served as documentary proof of the world conspiracy of Jewry. In the 1930's Johann von Leers reprinted the chapters dealing with the Jewish conspiracy as support and justification for an increased anti-Semitism.⁶

• Religious preconceptions further consolidated the stereotype of

D.T. Alvin's fantasies - dirty streets and dirty women, eyes speared with lust, venery and greed between their lush lips - and the old smell.

the Jew. Christianity had it phasized for centuries and s lightenment and its succes gardes and the Langbehn contributed the element of tianity. Voltaire had maint gion; Lagarde viewed it as acy of communion with made the liberation of Jew would now reject the dead dice was of the greatest sig cal rationale for anti-Semitic: tific" racial theories. With the popularization of the in Lagarde, this religious anti- the various racial theories b an indispensable part of rac manic Christianity, the Jew for ethical behavior for the ism. What a striking con steeped as it was in commu ture's mysteries, striving to ancestors, and rooted in n Lagarde again set the tenor: cially because they lacked affected their secular disposi

Of course, the religious a fought solely with theolog anti-Semitism pervaded all : suits. But whether it was tc and destroy the Gentiles or agitators always turned to books of Jewish law for sub the Talmud had become th nature. It was brought to efforts of a Catholic scholar seminary in Prague, who p under the title of *Der Talm* purpose was to reveal to tl properly speaking, but that to engage in ritual murder.

More than any other attac the Jews of Central Europ

* D.T. He saw crafted, as a foundation sagger with

world to make their way. The
himself to become the benevo-
the Jew is dishonest, ruthless,
in the end his ambitions are
mer end than that granted to
ning in a dirty river. But, in
by introducing the good Jew
nic rootedness and renounces
as still hope.

the Jewish question, in the
Diet, into an "ethical ques-
or religion, was at stake; a
ien values. The everyday be-
ted their daily lives, reflected
ers. Antecedents for the be-
us interpretations of the Old
true Volkish fashion, was a
l impulse, which, unlike the
d not produce the virtues of
ent in the German soul. The
ized the soul of Jewry. The
ent on to elaborate the leit-
and mysterious castaned in-
rious writers, who further
(German and Jew.

more romantic pen name of
izing the mysterious aspects
as conspirators against the
68), the Jewish conspirators
ie ghetto of Prague, where
ische remained popular and
staff of the ultra-conserva-
its opposition to the liberal
these efforts he acquired a
National Socialist thought.
der Weisen von Zion (Pro-
to pave the way for the ac-
Nazis, Gödsche's fictional
f the world conspiracy of
rinted the chapters dealing
and justification for an in-

olidated the stereotype of
*in dirty streets
spread with
between their
oldsmell.*

the Jew. Christianity had its own anti-Semitic bias, which it had em-
phasized for centuries and still did not abandon in the century of en-
lightenment and its successor, the age of liberalism. To it the La-
gardes and the Langbehn's as well as a score of Volkish authors
contributed the element of Germanic faith, of a de-Semiticized Chris-
tianity. Voltaire had maintained that Judaism was a fossilized reli-
gion; Lagarde viewed it as a skeleton lacking the life-giving immedi-
acy of communion with God; and even Johann Christian Dohm
made the liberation of Jews conditional upon the hope that Jews
would now reject the dead corpus of Judaism.⁷ The religious preju-
dice was of the greatest significance, since it provided the philosophical
rationale for anti-Semitism prior to the introduction of the "scien-
tific" racial theories. With the growth of the Volkish movement and
the popularization of the images presented in the writings of Paul de
Lagarde, this religious anti-Semitism was given further impetus when
the various racial theories began to be advanced. In fact, it remained
an indispensable part of racism. According to the prophets of Ger-
manic Christianity, the Jew lacked a soul, all virtues, and the capacity
for ethical behavior for the reason that Judaism was a fossilized legal-
ism. What a striking contrast this made with the German soul,
steeped as it was in communion with the cosmos, the recipient of na-
ture's mysteries, striving to relate itself to the glorious deeds of its
ancestors, and rooted in nature, the soil, and the landscape. Here
Lagarde again set the tenor: Jews could never become Germans, pre-
cisely because they lacked spiritual depth, a shortcoming that had
affected their secular disposition as well.⁸

Of course, the religious antagonism was not confined to dogma or
fought solely with theological weapons. As we have pointed out,
anti-Semitism pervaded all areas—ethics, culture, and everyday pur-
suits. But whether it was to accuse Jews of conspiracy to subjugate
and destroy the Gentiles or to perpetrate ritual murders, anti-Semitic
agitators always turned to an interpretation of the philosophical
books of Jewish law for substantiation of their charges. By the 1860's,
the Talmud had become the leading symbol of Judaism and Jewish
nature. It was brought to the attention of the public through the
efforts of a Catholic scholar, August Rohling, a professor at a church
seminary in Prague, who published an edited section of the Talmud
under the title of *Der Talmud Jude* (*The Talmud Jew*) (1871). His
purpose was to reveal to the world that the Jews had no religion,
properly speaking, but that their highest doctrine commanded them
to engage in ritual murder.

More than any other attack, Rohling's work caused a panic among
the Jews of Central Europe. It was indeed significant. Here a re-

* D.T. 4 saw them as diseased, as
crippled, as lacking a ground or
foundation for the soul, like a
siggler with a stumb of an arm
amputated

spected, supposedly erudite Catholic scholar had encouraged an attack which hitherto had preoccupied only marginally respectable figures. Moreover, the Catholic Church's dilatory behavior in repudiating Rohling seemed to abet the accusation. The Church moved only after a lawsuit had disgraced Rohling and proved his knowledge of the Talmud a sham. But even though Rohling was officially out of favor, his arguments continued to be used. His book was translated into French by Eduard Drumont and then retranslated into German along with Drumont's preface.⁹

These essentially religious accusations soon made their way into the secular world. In Germany, France, and the Austrian Empire, the ritual-murder legend was far from dead. It was revived periodically, especially encouraged by intellectuals, and grew to a popular clamor that took on the proportions of a movement. In the Austrian Empire alone, there were no less than twelve trials for ritual murder between 1867 and 1914. To be sure, eleven defendants were acquitted, but the one guilty verdict, in (1899) was considered vindication enough of the general accusation. These trials and the persistence with which the accusations were made revealed the popularity of "evidence" such as that provided by Rohling. To the public at large, the trials and the sensationalism that surrounded them demonstrated the Jewish conspiracy against all Gentiles.

In 1879 Wilhelm Marr, a journalist who had lost his job because of his efforts to increase popular hostility against Judaism, founded the first organization to bear an explicitly anti-Semitic name, the Antisemiten Liga (Anti-Semite League). Both Marr's league and Rohling's accusations, which paralleled Lagarde's alternative to Judaized Christianity, had clear connections with the Volkish movement. Their campaign against modernity had found its ideal embodiment. Here was the real, tangible enemy of the Germanic faith; not a vague entity, but an actual historical people whose philosophy was inimical to German life. The supposedly fossilized Judaism was linked with materialism and thus to modernity. Correspondingly, to oppose the Jews meant to struggle against the champions of the materialistic world view as well as against the evils of modern society. The Jew, the incarnation of dishonesty, ruthless in his quest for power, egoism exemplified, was contrasted with the genial German, who longed for an end to the dissonances of modern, urban life.

Racial thought came to the support of religious anti-Semitism, even though the religious arguments themselves contained sufficient secular factors. Significantly, it appeared at first in the form of a historical argument. Christian Lassen's *Indische Altertumskunde* (Indian Antiquities) (1877) contrasted the Aryan and Semitic peoples, their

history and culture, on purely scholarly grounds. Jewish scholars seem to have foundation to Judaism, for the fact that the Semites, the Jews, ingrained with a belief in the Talmud. Another scholar, Eugen Dühring, in *Die Judenfrage* (The Jewish Question) the first to consider the "Jews" in racial categories. His book, standing as a scholar. Apply Jew as a whole, not just so: Jewish depravity in culture traits possessed by all Jews. would only play into the hands of the Jew, exploit such feelings and in the process. The same restrictions applied to the Jew and being assimilated into Christianity, Dühring claimed, for the furtherance of their ends. Only the Jew, man people to victory, for only the Jew, bat Jewish infiltration. Accused, drawn between the forces of anti-Semitism.¹² With their inherent strength, umph over the alien intruder, Volkish thought began to become a man anti-Semitism.

Aside from this emphasis on race, displayed another side to his character because it enjoyed a wide audience. professor at the staid and conservative University of himself a radical, and his personality were deemed important enough to level against him the well-known fact that he had connections among the intelligentsia. He saw a sensible approach to the Jewish question espoused a particular brand of nationalism, sufficient national economy, the will of the people. For our time, that he tied his anti-Semitic ideas ran counter to the Volkish ideal of saving grace, in their eyes, and the mythical base of his character, the Germanic Volk was

A. H. * ~~the~~ hears about one as a child.

holar had encouraged an at-
only marginally respectable
's dilatory behavior in repu-
usation. The Church moved
ng and proved his knowledge
h Rohling was officially out-
e used. His book was trans-
t and then retranslated into

s soon made their way into
and the Austrian Empire, the
It was revived periodically,
ad grew to a popular clamor
ement. In the Austrian Em-
elve trials for ritual murder
eleven defendants were ac-
(899) was considered vindi-
These trials and the persist-
ade revealed the popularity
Rohling. To the public at
at surrounded them demon-
gentiles.

o had lost his job because of
gainst Judaism, founded the
nti-Semitic name, the Anti-
th Marr's league and Rohl-
le's alternative to Judaized
h the Volkish movement
ound its ideal embodiment.
Germanic faith; not a vague
ose philosophy was inimical
d Judaism was linked with
espondingly, to oppose the
opions of the materialistic
modern society. The Jew,
is quest for power, egoism
nial German, who longed
rban life.

ligious anti-Semitism, even
s contained sufficient secu-
st in the form of a histori-
" *Altertumskunde* (Indian
and Semitic peoples, their

is a child.

history and culture, on purely racial grounds. Here too the German scholars seem to have found a vindication of their theological aversion to Judaism, for the historical "evidence" supported the view that the Semites, the Jews, were egotistical and stubborn, a people ingrained with a belief in their God-decreed, legalized superiority.¹⁰ Another scholar, Eugen Dühring, in a book appropriately entitled *Die Judenfrage (The Jewish Question)* (1880), claimed that he was the first to consider the "Jewish question" in Germany in terms of racial categories. His book derived its influence from his respectable standing as a scholar. Applying his racial theories, he condemned the Jew as a whole, not just some of his characteristics. Dühring linked Jewish depravity in culture, morals, and manners to inherent racial traits possessed by all Jews. No tolerance was to be extended, for it would only play into the hands of the Jews. They would surely exploit such feelings and in the end create a more terrible intolerance.¹¹ The same restrictions applied against their joining the Christian faith and being assimilated into Gentile society; the outward adoption of Christianity, Dühring claimed, was in fact a sly Jewish device in furtherance of their ends. Only the Nordic gods could help the German people to victory, for only the Nordic religion was able to combat Jewish infiltration. According to Dühring, the battle lines were drawn between the forces of Jewish materialism and Old Germanism.¹² With their inherent racial strength the Germans would triumph over the alien intruders. In this manner, the formulations of Volkish thought began to be used as weapons in a widespread German anti-Semitism.

Aside from this emphasis on German gods and race, Dühring displayed another side to his anti-Semitism, which was more significant because it enjoyed a wider political reception. Dühring, though a professor at the staid and conservative University of Berlin, styled himself a radical, and his political affiliations, theories, and writings were deemed important enough by the Marxists for Friedrich Engels to level against him the well-known critique *Anti-Dühring*. Dühring had connections among the Social Democrats, in whose policies he saw a sensible approach toward creating a strong national state. He espoused a particular brand of socialism that envisaged a self-sufficient national economy and an idealized expression of the general will of the people. For our purposes it is important to note simply that he tied his anti-Semitism to a democratic urge. Although here his ideas ran counter to the Volkish aversion to mass politics, Dühring's saving grace, in their eyes, was his resistance to the established order and the mythical base of his "general will" theories. According to him, the Germanic Volk was an entity that possessed a unity of in-

terests capable of expression in a general will. As such, in its best interests—that is, those of survival—it was engaged in a struggle against the Jews, who, by means of modernity, opposed the Germanic general will and common good.¹³

In this manner, anti-Semitism and the stereotype of the Jew was integrated into the dynamic of the Volkish struggle against a state that did not, so it seemed to them, represent the true will of the German Volk. We have discussed aspects of this in previous chapters. But this was the kind of anti-Semitism that came to the fore in the last decades of the nineteenth century. It was the wave of the future. Although the prejudices of a man like William II's royal court preacher, Adolf Stöcker, flared up ominously, they held little future promise. Stöcker had used anti-Semitism as a prop for the existing social order which was symbolized by the Protestant orthodoxy of the Prussian state.¹⁴ He felt that Jewry was an enemy of order itself and that, particularly, assimilated Jews had been enabled to practice their subversion from within. Dühring, on the other hand, insisted that the Jews were not so much the enemies of order as they were obstacles in the path of progress. They blocked the fulfillment of the true dynamic manifestation of the Volk. The future struggle therefore would be to the death. This was the genre of anti-Semitism that enjoyed widespread and respectable support. Houston Stewart Chamberlain and indeed most of the men discussed in the last chapters, held to this doctrine of anti-Semitism. As a concept, such a war between the races was quite alien to Stöcker's brand of anti-Semitism, but those who stressed the inherently dynamic nature of the Volk considered such a course inevitable. The democratic will would express the interests of the Volk and resolve them victoriously in a test of racial strength.

One of the first concrete applications of this theory of racial struggle was found in the anti-Semitic movement launched by Otto Böckel in the years following 1885, after the fortunes of Stöcker's party had declined. While, in a sense, the movement attempted a partial resuscitation of the party structure, it renounced the policy of the party. Otto Böckel was a type which we will meet often in these pages. He was an educated man who held a doctorate and was a librarian by profession. In fact, most of the Volkish leaders, before and after Böckel, belonged to the professional classes. Böckel, unlike Stöcker, was no Conservative; indeed, he believed in extending the franchise to the whole population as well as in the progressive income tax. His was a "democratic movement," and it is in the combination of anti-Semitism and greater democracy that the importance of his movement lay.

Böckel was elected to it who was independent of t omen for the future. Böck retired to a village, a beate a museum in his memory profession. This honor w a type of national socialis the countryside of West formed the central plank where many Jews were theories were well receive and economic fears of the overlordship. He claimed every facet of life, except Jews shied as from a plag the present epoch—a slog acterization of the house vious: repossess the wealt peasants will again be pros will end, and the peasant battle had been won the straight road to its destiny.

Böckel was an agitator division in the ranks, he p but not before it had polle in 1893, as part of a gener had fostered the Antisemit as successful, had engage masses. Here the central t displacement by Jewish nomics, the Antisemiten l was capable of ruining one

This variety of anti-Sem mass appeal, especially as terests with a belief in the i the Volkish ideology brot ment which was to render the chief vehicle for the d who were attracted prima accepting the basic Volkisl took readily to the precej failure, there was a rever: which, although maintainir

ill. As such, in its best engaged in a struggle nity, opposed the Ger-

otype of the Jew was struggle against a state at the true will of the his in previous chapters. ame to the fore in the the wave of the future. illiam II's royal court , they held little future i prop for the existing rotestant orthodoxy of 1 enemy of order itself en enabled to practice ie other hand, insisted of order as they were d the fulfillment of the future struggle there- of anti-Semitism that rt. Houston Stewart ussed in the last chap- a concept, such a war ker's brand of anti- ly dynamic nature of The democratic will olve them victoriously

this theory of racial nt launched by Otto fortunes of Stöcker's yement attempted a ounced the policy of e will meet often in a doctorate and was olkish leaders, before lasses. Böckel, unlike ved in extending the e progressive income s in the combination e importance of his

Böckel was elected to the Reichstag as the first anti-Semitic deputy who was independent of the Conservative party. This was indeed an omen for the future. Böckel himself lost his seat in 1903 and after that retired to a village, a beaten and shy recluse. The Nazis were to erect a museum in his memory in Marburg, where he had practiced his profession. This honor was warranted, for his movement advocated a type of national socialism and for a time it was popular and swept the countryside of Westphalia and Hesse. Anti-Semitic measures formed the central plank in the platform and, in these rural regions, where many Jews were middlemen and cattle dealers, the racial theories were well received. Böckel adroitly played upon the Volkish and economic fears of the peasants by raising the specter of Jewish overlordship. He claimed that a Jewish conspiracy was in control of every facet of life, except, typically enough, work, from which the Jews shied as from a plague, and that they were in fact the kings of the present epoch—a slogan he adopted from de Tousсенel's characterization of the house of Rothschild.¹⁵ The conclusion was obvious: repossess the wealth siphoned off by the Jews, and German peasants will again be prosperous; get rid of the Jew, and speculation will end, and the peasant will be able to live well again. Once this battle had been won the Volk could march unhindered down the straight road to its destiny.

Böckel was an agitator, not an organizer. Unable to cope with division in the ranks, he presided over the collapse of his movement; but not before it had polled 263,861 votes in a parliamentary election in 1893, as part of a general anti-Semitic wave.¹⁶ Earlier, Austria too had fostered the Antisemiten Bund (1889), which, though not nearly as successful, had engaged in similar agitation among the urban masses. Here the central theme was the protection of artisans from displacement by Jewish craftsmen. Combining racism with economics, the Antisemiten Bund raised the fearful cry that one Jew was capable of ruining one thousand native Viennese tailors.¹⁷

This variety of anti-Semitism was "democratic." It was geared for mass appeal, especially as it incorporated lower-class economic interests with a belief in the ideology of the Volk.¹⁸ Here the elitism of the Volkish ideology broke down or, rather, incorporated the element which was to render it popular. In fact, anti-Semitism became the chief vehicle for the diffusion of the Volkish movement. Those who were attracted primarily by anti-Semitism had no difficulty in accepting the basic Volkish ideas, and those already in the movement took readily to the precepts of anti-Semitic racism. After Böckel's failure, there was a reversion in the higher echelons to an elitism which, although maintaining the incompatibility of German and Jew,

*Lärmende, Pöbel (lower
rabble (et al.))*

still attempted to discuss the question in a less volatile manner. Exclusion of the Jews and cultural unity among the Germans were to be their weapons. But potentialities of the popular Böckel type of violence and democracy were not to be lost to future movements, especially not to the National Socialists. When, in opposition to the rest of the right, they began to build a mass movement after 1920, the Jew was singled out as the best anti-Volkish symbol, the most effective means of engaging the economic and national concerns of the masses. The respectable Volkish right deplored this method as "street-corner anti-Semitism." They decried it not because it was anti-Semitic, but because of its demagoguery. Like the elitist elements in the Volkish movement, they regarded more academic and social means as more appropriate vessels for anti-Semitism. And then, of course, there was their fear and resentment of the effective and potentially explosive mass organization—though they regarded it as a collection of rabble—that the Nazis could command.

A lull in the more violent anti-Semitic agitation in the first decade of the century coincided with the transference of the issues to a more academic, quiescent, and respectable forum. As in France after the Dreyfus affair, so in Germany after the failure of Stöcker and Böckel, there followed a general, though less satisfactory, reconciliation of public opinion. Anti-Semitic agitators sensitive to the changed atmosphere attempted to adjust themselves to it. Overt antagonisms were softened to "opinions." Theodor Fritsch, for example, who previously had demanded the outright extermination of the Jews, now maintained that he was only a "cultured anti-Semite" and would not stoop to the vulgar level of persecuting individual Jews. The individual Jew, he said, was relatively innocent of the damage done the German Volk, which must be blamed on Judaism as a whole. The individual Jew, claimed the "reformed" Fritsch, could not help himself. Correspondingly, the anti-Semitic struggle must be conducted on a plane commensurate with its goals. Since violent attacks do not solve the whole problem, stated Fritsch, the approach must be shifted onto a broader level, the task must become more abstract and general. Through education, a pragmatic rationality was to take the place of demagogic mass movements.¹⁹

Though Fritsch did not keep his promise, others did. The theoretical approach came into vogue. Works such as those of Chamberlain were singled out as representative of this scholarly school of anti-Semitic thought. The anti-Semitic outlook continued to represent the Volkish influence in Germany, but now it was couched in the language of racial anthropology and cultural differentiation. Racial antagonisms were cultivated and permitted to strike roots. In contrast

* *Haufenbildung*

to what happened in France, Jews went into effect of individual Jew inherent in carried forward in much of the Germanic utopias, in terms, and in the Youth Movement isolated from Gentile *respondenz* (*Bulletin*) of announced: "Few outright only a few correspondents Jewish and Christian German been affirmed earlier, in 18 social reform party: "In their contacts with their Jewish elements. Now, a Jew sitting notoriety." ²¹ Such pronouncement the basic trend is borne out

Especially significant is the youth. Historical evidence was more vehement in their elders, who remembered Semitic agitation found a nation expelled Jews and faction in dueling—after the Viennese fraternity League grounds, and by 1890, both declared themselves Juden

Various forces were instilled in Stöcker in Germany and Section of students on racial grounds, was deeply involved in anti-Semitic Union of closely associated with the government to exclude pedagogues discussed in a mild form as the teachers *Treibel*. The romantic ideal permeated educational circles. Jew. And then there was teachers and students identified movement, in Germany a connection in a mysticism and chauvinistic ideology of Volk, G

* *alack's ba*

less volatile manner. Excluding the Germans were to be popular Böckel type of violent future movements, especially, in opposition to the rest movement after 1920, the Jewish symbol, the most effective national concerns of the glorified this method as "street-fight not because it was anti-
Like the elitist elements in more academic and social anti-Semitism. And then, of the effective and powerful they regarded it as a command.

agitation in the first decade of the issues to a more uniform. As in France after the failure of Stöcker and Böckel, satisfactory, reconciliation of the negative to the changed atmosphere. Overt antagonisms were, for example, who pre-eminence of the Jews, now anti-Semite" and would not individual Jews. The intent of the damage done the Judaism as a whole. The Hirsch, could not help him; struggle must be conducted since violent attacks do not the approach must be shifted more abstract and general. It was to take the place of

others did. The theoreticians as those of Chamberlain, the scholarly school of anti-Semitism continued to represent how it was couched in the racial differentiation. Racial to strike roots. In contrast

to what happened in France, the reconciliation following the attacks on Jews went into effect only superficially. The hostility toward the individual Jew inherent in the ideology did not disappear, but was carried forward in much of the New Romanticism of Diederichs, in the Germanic utopias, in the stereotypes presented by Volkish painters, and in the Youth Movement. In actual practice, Jews were effectively isolated from Gentiles, to such an extent that by 1910 the *Korrespondenz (Bulletin)* of the central organization of German Jews announced: "Few outright anti-Semite attacks can be reported; but only a few correspondents tell us about private contacts between Jewish and Christian Germans." ²⁰ This regrettable state of affairs had been affirmed earlier, in 1899, in a triumphal report of an anti-Semitic social reform party: "In the 1850's schoolboys still maintained social contacts with their Jewish fellow students and even with their parents. Now, a Jew sitting at the same table with a Gentile excites notoriety." ²¹ Such pronouncements were no doubt exaggerated, but the basic trend is borne out by historical evidence.

Especially significant is the effect that anti-Semitic thought had on the youth. Historical evidence proves that the younger generation was more vehement in its refusal to have contact with Jews than were their elders, who remembered a previous age. Among them, anti-Semitic agitation found a receptive and fruitful soil. Student fraternities expelled Jews and refused fraternal Jewish societies satisfaction in dueling—after all, Jews had no honor to defend. In 1878, the Viennese fraternity *Libertas* began to exclude Jews on racial grounds, and by 1890, both in Germany and in Austria, all fraternities declared themselves *Judenrein*. ²²

Various forces were instrumental in enhancing this susceptibility. Stöcker in Germany and Schönerer in Austria encouraged the separation of students on racial grounds. Stöcker's disciple, Friedrich Naumann, was deeply involved in the founding of the influential Volkish anti-Semitic Union of German Students—which, in turn, was closely associated with the Anti-Semitic Petition (1880), which asked the government to exclude Jews from German life. ²³ In schools, pedagogues discussed and emphasized racial differences even if in as mild a form as the teachers in Theodor Fontane's novel *Frau Jenny Treibel*. The romantic ideology that glorified the Germanic heritage permeated educational circles and disseminated the stereotype of the Jew. And then there was the sphere of religion. Where in France teachers and students identified their radicalism with the anti-clerical movement, in Germany a comparable anti-clerical drive was cloaked in a mysticism and chauvinism that only deepened the already pervasive ideology of Volk, Germanic faith, and Aryan race.

* abolitionist believed in
G. Schönerer

But while racial anti-Semitism remained largely an academic argument manifesting itself in cultural and social but nonetheless real ways, it also contained a direct appeal to violence. Religious anti-Semitism showed a similar undercurrent. Here too, ideas of force and cruelty, which ran throughout the Volkish ideology, came to the fore. The whole Germanic heritage of fighting—for survival during the Ice Age, against the degenerate Romans, and to keep alive elements of mysticism in the face of doctrinaire Christianity—was considered a model for the future struggle of the races. Moreover, the speculation on the inevitability of a race war only brought the cruelty and ruthlessness into the foreground. At first, to be sure, only a minority of people were affected; but they constituted a vociferous group. However, it was not until after 1918 that it really took root as the necessary conclusion of Germanic and New Romantic thinking. And then, when it came, it was precisely that “street-corner anti-Semitism” which Fritsch had condemned and allegedly abandoned; it was a continuation of the volatile anti-Semitic outbursts of the 1880's and 1890's in which agitators had aroused the economic hostility of the lower-middle classes and the peasantry and enlisted them in the fight for the survival of the Volk.

The First World War helped to further such attitudes, at first toward Eastern European Jewry. As Germany occupied Poland, many Germans came into contact with the Jewish population of the country, men who may have known about the ghettos, if at all, only from literature. Franz Blei, for example, a writer for the avant-gardist *Die Weissen Blätter* (which could not be accused of anti-Semitism), pontificated that the only kind of relationship these Jews had to the rest of the world was that of “usurious trade.” Even if such people were “civilized” and put into modern clothes, they would still remain two million trading Jews weaving a net of business and trade around the presumably innocent Germans. Moreover, René Schickele, the editor of the journal, claimed that he was swamped by contributions on the “Jewish question” sent from the Eastern Front. He even cites titles: “The Polish Jews and Ourselves”; “Under Foreign Brethren”; “Is a Solution Possible?”²⁴ The authors of these articles were not reactionaries, but young men who had been exposed to the newest in literature and art. This is surely a telling example of the extent to which the image of Eastern European Jewry as a foreign and immoral force permeated German attitudes toward the Jewish question.

The Eastern Jews did have a different cultural pattern, for they lived in a highly competitive society in which they were at an essential disadvantage but in which competition was the only way to

survive. Eastern Jews began numbers during the 1880's, a disgruntled with the conditions voices became most strident condemned the influx of Eastern Jews and predicted that the Volk and predicted that the Volk over the Germans—unless

At first they made a distinction. The German-born Jews could and some later writers, where of the century on, the distinction the Volkish thinkers. The First resented, increasingly came Jews came under the same ideology's objectification of the propaganda, no longer permitted and alien Jew.

The frustrations of a nation settled on the battlefield finding the heroism and the inviting and blaming defeat on the home front. The contradictory returning armies, the official in the anti-Bolshevik fighting revolutionary overflow into heroism and physical trials withstand the *Stahlgewitter* political compromise. The infeasible and expedient the unsatisfaction on the field of battle to run their course, victory hostility as well as the ideological struggle of the races, a more Expressions of violence could the Jews became more common

There were open cries for Jewish problem once and echoed this demand of the far: Pudor was an intimate acquaintance leader Bruno Tanzmann. The facilities of the Germanic set of Pudor's racial ideas. The their ideas on this question

ned largely an academic argu-
d social but nonetheless real
l to violence. Religious anti-
Here too, ideas of force and
olkish ideology, came to the
fighting—for survival during
omans, and to keep alive ele-
inaire Christianity—was con-
e of the races. Moreover, the
race war only brought the
und. At first, to be sure, only
they constituted a vociferous
1918 that it really took root as
and New Romantic thinking.
sely that "street-corner anti-
ied and allegedly abandoned;
anti-Semitic outbursts of the
id aroused the economic hos-
e peasantry and enlisted them

her such attitudes, at first to-
many occupied Poland, many
wish population of the coun-
ie ghettos, if at all, only from
iter for the avant-gardist *Die*
accused of anti-Semitism),
ionship these Jews had to the
s trade." Even if such people
clothes, they would still re-
g a net of business and trade
ians. Moreover, René Shick-
hat he was swamped by con-
t from the Eastern Front. He
Ourselves"; "Under Foreign
The authors of these articles
who had been exposed to the
rely a telling example of the
European Jewry as a foreign
attitudes toward the Jewish

nt cultural pattern, for they
1 which they were at an es-
tation was the only way to

survive. Eastern Jews began emigrating to Germany in increasing numbers during the 1880's, at a time when Germans themselves were disgruntled with the conditions around them and when Volkish voices became most strident. From the very start, Volkish agitators condemned the influx of Eastern Jewry as adverse to the interests of the Volk and predicted that they would eventually achieve domination over the Germans—unless something was done immediately.

At first they made a distinction between Eastern and native Jews. The German-born Jews could assimilate, even according to Freytag and some later writers, whereas the aliens could not. But from the end of the century on, the distinction became blurred in the minds of the Volkish thinkers. The Eastern Jew, and the ghetto life he represented, increasingly came to stand for the Jew in general and all Jews came under the same proscription. By 1918, the Volkish ideology's objectification of the Jewish evil, both in pictorial and literary propaganda, no longer permitted any distinction between the native and alien Jew.

The frustrations of a national defeat that had not been conclusively settled on the battlefield left the door open for rationalizations stressing the heroism and the invincibility of the soldiers on the front lines and blaming defeat on the desertion by cowardly elements on the home front. The contradictory orders on disbanding and disarming returning armies, the official toleration of the Free Corps' participation in the anti-Bolshevik fighting on the Eastern Front to contain the revolutionary overflow into the Baltic countries—all played up the heroism and physical trials of the German soldiers, who could withstand the *Stahlgewitter* (storm of steel) but not the servility of po. compromise. The impossible had become the real, and the feasible and expedient the unreal. The German Volk had been denied satisfaction on the field of honor, where, had events been permitted to run their course, victory would have been achieved. Now the hostility as well as the idealized bravery was transferred to the struggle of the races, a mortal struggle that demanded a resolution. Expressions of violence coupled with the actual use of force against the Jews became more common under the Weimar Republic.

There were open cries for the use of physical force to settle the Jewish problem once and for all. Heinrich Pudor vociferously echoed this demand of the far right wing of the Volkish movement.²⁵ Pudor was an intimate acquaintance of Fritsch and the Artamanen leader Bruno Tanzmann. Tanzmann devoted part of the publishing facilities of the Germanic settlement of Hellerau to the dissemination of Pudor's racial ideas. These men formed an intimate circle and their ideas on this question transcended their differences on other

issues—whether they be Schöll's Vogelhof or Tanzmann's Artamanen. There were pockets advocating violence as a solution to the racial issue even in respectable conservative circles. Count von Reventlow, for instance, also advised the use of force in dealing with the Jewish problem, but he finally opted for legal means of exclusion.²⁶

These ideas had broad repercussions. The doctrine of applying violent anti-Semitic methods took on its real pernicious character in the hands of people who commanded greater political and popular attention. The notorious agitator Müller von Hausen advised that Jews who transgressed the special laws for foreigners under which, in his opinion, they were to live should at times be hanged.²⁷ The suggestion was supported by the powerful Pan-Germans, whose leader, Heinrich Class, had earlier, in 1912, advocated a preliminary step: the rigid isolation and double taxation of the Jews.²⁸ Economic and social dislocation, as well as the untried system of democracy introduced in the postwar era, increased the desperation of those classes which had earlier supported the Germanic ideology. Correspondingly, agitators, taking advantage of their receptive audience, provided new "proof" of the increasing Jewish drive for power. It was Müller von Hausen who translated and published the notorious *Protocols of the Elders of Zion* immediately after the war.

However, the question remains whether, prior to the Nazis' implementation of their "final solution of the Jewish problem," the advocates of violence were really to be taken at face value; and if so, whether they could have found popular support for their proposals. There was a great difference between proclaiming the doctrine of violent race struggle and extermination and actually putting it into practice. Karl Paasch, involved in popularizing Rohling's *Talmud Jew*, believed that killing off all Jews was the simplest and most practical solution to the Jewish question. But he thought that it would probably be impossible to accomplish this in Germany and that therefore it might be best to intern the Jews and to ship them to New Guinea. He did not stand alone in his desire for violence, in this longing which he did not believe possible of fulfillment, or in his resignation to a less cruel solution.²⁹

The case of Hermann Ahlwardt, a teacher and more famous agitator, is still more illustrative: in 1899 he published *Der Verzweiflungskampf der arischen Völker mit den Juden* (*The Desperate Struggle Between the Aryan Peoples and Judaism*). Invoking the precepts of the Germanic prophets, Ahlwardt stated that a people who rid itself of Jews freed itself for the natural development of the Volk, and thereby rose toward dominion over the world.³⁰ For him,

as for the romantic advocates of the struggle for the supremacy of the Aryan peoples in the history of world history. In this sense, the use of violence was decidedly out of place. In must act with determination to achieve approval a saying falsely applied to him, it was said, when he saw a monument erected by evening.³¹ Was this when it came to concrete proposals played an ambivalence which was an actual program, Ahlwardt called for stringent restrictions upon Jews, not only on German soil and excluding them from culture. He also proposed to expel Jews from Europe and their surplus population.³²

Curiously, this was almost a specialist program for dealing with the Jewish problem and politically more violent than the rise to power and the concrete program of Ahlwardt's program broadly reflected an ambivalence of fanatics who asserted that the "final solution" corresponded between the deportation of the Jews to distant lands. On the other hand, there were those who wanted to encourage Jewish immigration; there were various obstacles to this, to permit the Jews to retain the right to leave, not to mention Jewish immigrants; and then, on the other hand, when the war began. It was known that it became a reality of the glorification of mythology, and the Nazi extension of Germany's leaders. Extermination was a rhetorical device to arouse human emotions.

If the agitation for violence in 1914 achieved an immediate implementation appropriate juncture of events, it helped to prepare the nation for the war with the over-all depiction of the war as a struggle against the intruder, it contributed to the sh

gelhof or Tanzmann's Artage violence as a solution to the vative circles. Count von Reuse of force in dealing with the r legal means of exclusion.²⁶

The doctrine of applying vioal pernicious character in the ater political and popular atvon Hausen advised that Jews e foreigners under which, in t times be hanged.²⁷ The sugl Pan-Germans, whose leader, ocated a preliminary step: the e Jews.²⁸ Economic and social n of democracy introduced in on of those classes which had y. Correspondingly, agitators, lence, provided new "proof" er. It was Müller von Hausen rious *Protocols of the Elders*

ther, prior to the Nazis' imthe Jewish problem," the adaken at face value; and if so, r support for their proposals. proclaiming the doctrine of and actually putting it into ularizing Rohling's *Talmud* is the simplest and most pracbut he thought that it would is in Germany and that there-s and to ship them to New i desire for violence, in this ible of fulfillment, or in his

cher and more famous agitaublished *Der VerzweiflungsJudentum* (*The Desperate and Judaism*). Invoking the lwardt stated that a people e natural development of the a over the world.³⁰ For him,

as for the romantic advocates of the Volk, Jewry was the Mephistopheles of world history. In dealing with the Jews, Christian mercy was decidedly out of place. Instead, Ahlwardt asserted, the nation must act with determination to combat the menace. He cited with approval a saying falsely applied to Prussia's Friedrich Wilhelm I, who, it was said, when he saw a Jew in the morning had the gallows erected by evening.³¹ Was this a plea for violence? Certainly! But, when it came to concrete proposals to effect such measures, he displayed an ambivalence which was, as yet, typical. When he drew up an actual program, Ahlwardt could only advocate the imposition of stringent restrictions upon Jews, a decree proclaiming them foreigners on German soil and excluding them from all areas of German life and culture. He also proposed that eventually all Jews be deported from Europe and their surplus capital retained by the German nation.³²

Curiously, this was almost exactly the same as the National Socialist program for dealing with the Jews. Aside from the popular and politically more violent demagoguery which marked the Nazis' rise to power and the concrete application of the Nuremberg Laws, Ahlwardt's program broadly foreshadowed that of the Nazis, for they also reflected an ambivalence. On the one hand, there were the fanatics who asserted that the "final solution" must bring about a correct correspondence between ideology and action and that the deportation of the Jews to distant places only evaded the issue. On the other hand, there were those functionaries and leaders in the party who wanted to encourage Jewish emigration at all costs. Of course, there were various obstacles to the latter course: first, the refusal to permit the Jews to retain the financial resources that would enable them to leave, not to mention the reluctance of nations to accept Jewish immigrants; and then, of course, the effective closing of all doors when the war began. It was then that the final solution, as history knows it, became a reality. At that stage the ultimate consequences of a glorification of merciless cruelty within Volkish ideology, and the Nazi extension of it, finally engulfed the minds of Germany's leaders. Extermination became the literal fact, not just a rhetorical device to arouse human passions.

If the agitation for violence in settling the Jewish problem did not achieve an immediate implementation, but rather had to wait for the appropriate juncture of events, it was not completely unproductive. It helped to prepare the nation for events that followed. In conjunction with the over-all depiction of the Jew as an inhuman, un-German intruder, it contributed to the shaping of a state of mind that either

apathetically acquiesced in or actively supported the final verdict. The dehumanization of the Jew is perhaps one of the most significant single developments in the evolution of the Volkish ideology.

Slowly the stereotype had to take its effect. On the ethical and religious fronts, it was asked whether, if the Jew lacked a *proper* soul, he could be classed as human. On the economic and social front it was asserted that Jews had consorted in diabolical intrigues to seize power in order to dominate the Gentile world. For the average reader, the Jews in Freytag's and Raabe's novels were unforgettable embodiments of abhorrent qualities; for the anti-Semite, they only fortified entrenched convictions. Similarly, in a whole series of popular novels Jewish characters lacked all human qualities and met miserable fates, victims of their egotistical power drives.³³ The objectification of the Jew as evil by means of his inner drives was reinforced by an emphasis on his outward appearance. Race, after all, was a total criterion. The physical properties of the Jew were accordingly contrasted with the Germanic ideal of beauty; a contorted figure resting on short legs, a greedy and sensual corpulence, and, of course, the "Jewish nose" were unfavorably compared with the aesthetically proportioned figure of the Nordic man. To be sure, such stereotypes had been in existence since the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, but they were not as critical then. The Jew at the early date was still pictured as a comic, though grotesque, figure.³⁴ In the image presented by Volkish thought, he became a menace; he held the Germans in actual bondage.

Racial criteria also prevented the consideration of "special cases," of maintaining a distinction between assimilated and immigrant Jew. As long as racial standards were invoked, the assimilated Jews were made to bear an increasingly difficult burden. They were singled out as arch-fiends, as infiltrators and polluters of the blond Germanic race. Though Freytag could still describe a "decent" Jew who longed for assimilation, such an apostate was considered the acme of all evil in the twentieth century. Racially it was decreed, and popularly believed, that all Jews bore the same marks of distinction: they were ugly, bearded, and wore caftans. If they diverged from the mean it was to disguise their conspiracy to dominate Germany and the world. If they exhibited passions and emotions which would normally be considered expressions of love and affection, they were really giving vent to their need for an immediate gratification of lustful senses. The infinite was not the object of their striving, since material goods limited their horizons. Power was their goal and that could be attained most easily by infiltration of the Aryan race and through subversion. Jewish lust for power, claimed Volkish anti-Semites, was conveniently

coupled with the gratification by corrupting the Aryan race, though this was the special of Theodor Fritsch,³⁵ it was:

The fear of racial defilements of sex, love, and phylaxia by the Jews was a theme of Volkish thinkers. The image of a German woman succumbing to the prophets of the race in Frankfurt in the early 1920s of racial, sexual, aesthetic, and an unnatural act, for an Aryan Jew. It was a transgression of the sophistry of the serpent's obsession to the level of a point of forbidding Jews in countless stories about the delusions which cannot be of anti-Semites. Here, after into the heart of every German identical appeal is used, after advocate the segregation of frustration. Then, too, the virginity and the woman's receptacle of the seed of the utopias, Hentschel's *Mittgar* marriages solely to secure rejected primarily because bourgeois Volkish movement sexual mores.

While playing on the social fears of the anti-Semitic stereotypes and money. Jewish lust for lust for money. Economic Semitism and they attained Sombart's treatise *Die Juden und das Kapitalismus* (1910). This growth of capitalism to the Middle Ages and entered been a vital force in building their restless character had a role which Max Weber meant ant-Semitism. Actually, Sombart

ly supported the final verdict. Perhaps one of the most significant of the Volkish ideology.

its effect. On the ethical and if the Jew lacked a *proper* soul, economic and social front it in diabolical intrigues to seize the world. For the average Jew's novels were unforgettable for the anti-Semite, they only similarly, in a whole series of all human qualities and metastorical power drives.³³ The obsessions of his inner drives were racial appearance. Race, after all, properties of the Jew were aesthetic ideal of beauty; a contorted and sensual corpulence, and, of course, favorably compared with the Nordic man. To be sure, such in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. The Jew at the early stage grotesque, figure.³⁴ In the end he became a menace; he held

consideration of "special cases," assimilated and immigrant Jew. Indeed, the assimilated Jews were a burden. They were singled out as fluters of the blond Germanic scribe a "decent" Jew who was considered the acme of it was decreed, and popularly marks of distinction: they were by diverged from the mean it innate Germany and the world. In which would normally be creation, they were really givingification of lustful senses. The thing, since material goods liminal and that could be attained race and through subversion. anti-Semites, was conveniently

coupled with the gratification of the senses; and both could be gained by corrupting the Aryan race with an admixture of Jewish blood. Although this was the special fear that plagued the Volkish tranquillity of Theodor Fritsch,³⁵ it was also shared by most anti-Semitic writers.

The fear of racial defilement through intermarriage, with its associations of sex, love, and physical features, became an obsession with Volkish thinkers. The image of the pure, blond, spiritual, feminine German woman succumbing to the love of a Jew became a nightmare to the prophets of the race. A flier distributed at the University of Frankfurt in the early 1920's bears witness to an anti-Semitic fusion of racial, sexual, aesthetic, and religious elements. It declared it a sin, an unnatural act, for an Aryan girl to let herself become enamored of a Jew. It was a transgression tantamount to Eve's succumbing to the sophistry of the serpent.³⁶ The Nuremberg Laws elevated this obsession to the level of a legal system and extended it even to the point of forbidding Jews to hire Christian domestics. There were countless stories about the affairs of rich Jews and Aryan servant girls, delusions which cannot be ascribed merely to the sexual frustrations of anti-Semites. Here, after all, was an image which could strike terror into the heart of every German who loved a wife and daughter. The identical appeal is used, after all, by those in the United States who advocate the segregation of the Negro, and this with equal fear and frustration. Then, too, the Germanic revival had idealized female virginity and the woman's primary role as wife and mother—the receptacle of the seed of the race. And though one of the Germanic utopias, Hentschel's *Mittgart*, had envisaged the institution of multiple marriages solely to secure pure, efficient racial propagation, it was rejected primarily because of this view. On the whole, the anti-bourgeois Volkish movement proved itself extremely bourgeois in its sexual mores.

While playing on the social and individual prejudices of many Germans, the anti-Semitic stereotype did not omit the link between Jews and money. Jewish lust for Aryan women was always connected with lust for money. Economic prejudices were always prevalent in anti-Semitism and they attained academic respectability with Werner Sombart's treatise *Die Juden und das Wirtschaftsleben (Jews and Capitalism)* (1910). This eminent economic historian linked the growth of capitalism to the role played by the Jews. As usurers in the Middle Ages and entrepreneurs in modern times, the Jews had been a vital force in building the capitalist system. He asserted that their restless character had made them the motive force of capitalism, a role which Max Weber more astutely ascribed to the ethos of Protestantism. Actually, Sombart was not condemning Jews, but merely,

as he thought, providing a historical analysis of the evolution of capitalism. Volkish writers and propagandists, however, were quick to use Sombart's treatise for their own purposes. Broadly, it agreed with their image of the Jews as the shiftless, rootless, conniving middleman and stock jobber, hoarding the gold coin and bleeding Germany dry. But Volkish thought was not to accept all of Sombart's ideas. Instead, it took snippets and condemned the rest. When Theodor Fritsch, for example, published his *Handbook on the Jewish Question*, which originally appeared under the title *The Anti-Semitic Catechism* (1887), he turned in the later editions to Sombart for a description of the Jew's economic role in modern society.⁸⁷ However, he stopped short and turned on the scholar when it came to the connection between capitalism, originating from Jewry, and culture. Here he condemned Sombart for even daring to insinuate that the Jews or their efforts could indeed create anything of beauty or culture.⁸⁸

The stock-exchange jobber, the corpulent banker, these were the stereotypes of the Jew that were widely accepted and disseminated through popular literature. The stock exchange in particular became the symbol of the nightmarish capitalism that had been foisted upon Germans by the Jews. It came to represent the hub of their control system, and it was there, early Volkish thinkers proclaimed, that the world revolution to oust the alien money lords would emanate. Adolf Wahrmund stated this clearly in 1887.⁸⁹ But popular anti-Semitic propaganda was to go one better: it fused the images of Jewish hunger for money with his lust for Aryan women. The resulting image widely used as propaganda pictured a fat Jewish banker caressing a blond woman on his knee. The same agent who milked Germans of their wealth also depleted their racial strength; that was the Volkish anti-Semitic theme. It was to become that for a multitude of Germans.

Novels depicted the debilitating effects of interracial intercourse. Arthur Dinter's *Die Sünde wider das Blut* (*Sin Against the Blood*) (1918) put across the typical message and sold in the hundred thousands. It told of the violation of a German woman's racial purity by a rich Jew, and even though she left him and married an Aryan, her offspring continued to resemble Jewish stereotypes. The book was not pornographic (so its large sales figures cannot be attributed to prurience); rather, it communicated the horror of racial defilement by a figure that was simply inhuman. The vicious stereotype of the Jew was sometimes projected to the public by state authorities. In 1915, for instance, and again in 1919, the Jewish community in Hamburg protested the captions on official police posters which described

a criminal's "special character nose."⁴⁰ In 1919 the police of Berlin in overt anti-Semitism in their reports had reached the fatalistic always presented. Their report the agitation "has its roots in the Israelitic tribe from our bridges."⁴¹

The pioneering work of Voynich in the creation of the anti-Jew strove successfully to convert in terms, the Jews were an arsenal that lacked the strength of stereotype attributed so many was in essence dehumanized. From ominous development, for in his explicitly denied human status created the Jew as a buffer he simulated this thought in their of their speakers asserted that mediary position between North non-Nordic was not a whole mapes.⁴³ In 1932, another Nation to bugs and called for their extermination was monitored by the secret police pointed out that not the masses Berlin upper-class district of Charlottenburg and joined in the "stormy had indeed eaten deeply into society. In their reasoning, whether hate, the bourgeoisie joined in Jew.

That it was the "better bourgeoisie can be attributed to the change the cease-fire of the post-Böckel Fritsch, one of the exponents efforts to a more refined anti-Semitism directly contributed attitudes. In fact, according to Otto Stöcker lost favor and violence became an "epidemic" among Fritsch's writing was directed more than at the masses, at an elite

is of the evolution of capitalism, however, were quick to poses. Broadly, it agreed ftless, rootless, conniving ie gold coin and bleeding not to accept all of Sombart's condemnation of the rest. When is *Handbook on the Jew* under the title *The Anti-Jew*; later editions to Sombart's role in modern society.³⁷ the scholar when it came ginating from Jewry, and even daring to insinuate create anything of beauty

at banker, these were the accepted and disseminated image in particular became what had been foisted upon the hub of their controllers proclaimed, that the gods would emanate. Adolf But popular anti-Semitic he images of Jewish huns. The resulting image Jewish banker caressing a who milked Germans of th; that was the Volkish for a multitude of Ger-

of interracial intercourse. (*Sin Against the Blood*) old in the hundred thousand man's racial purity by a married an Aryan, her stereotypes. The book was cannot be attributed to error of racial defilement vicious stereotype of the by state authorities. In ish community in Ham- posters which described

a criminal's "special characteristics" as a "fat Jew" with a "Jewish nose."⁴⁰ In 1919 the police of northern Bavaria deplored the increase in overt anti-Semitism in their report to Berlin. However, the police too had reached the fatalistic conclusion that Volkish thought had always presented. Their report stated that no remedy existed since the agitation "has its roots in the difference of race which divides the Israelitic tribe from our Volk; this gap can never be entirely bridged."⁴¹

The pioneering work of Volkish racial thinkers played a central role in the creation of the anti-Semitic image. The stereotype of the Jew strove successfully to convey the image of a parasite. In Darwinian terms, the Jews were an arrested development in evolution, a fossil that lacked the strength or roots to nourish itself. The racial stereotype attributed so many grotesque qualities to the Jew that he was in essence dehumanized. Fritsch's work again demonstrates this ominous development, for in his *Leuchtkugeln* (*Fireballs*) (1881) he explicitly denied human status to Jews. Here he claimed that God had created the Jew as a buffer between man and ape.⁴² The Nazis assimilated this thought in their own propaganda when, in 1931, one of their speakers asserted that non-Nordic man occupied an intermediary position between Nordic man and the animal world. The non-Nordic was not a whole man, for he still shared traits with the apes.⁴³ In 1932, another National Socialist speaker likened the Jews to bugs and called for their extermination. Interestingly, the speech was monitored by the secret police of the Republic, and their report pointed out that not the masses, but the "better bourgeoisie" of the Berlin upper-class district of Charlottenburg, had made up the gathering and joined in the "stormy applause."⁴⁴ The Jewish stereotype had indeed eaten deeply into the fabric of German bourgeois society. In their reasoning, whether out of fear or simple prejudice and hate, the bourgeoisie joined in accepting the dehumanization of the Jew.

That it was the "better bourgeoisie" who were passionately aroused can be attributed to the change in anti-Semitic tactics that followed the cease-fire of the post-Böckel era. As we have pointed out earlier, Fritsch, one of the exponents of vulgar racial hate, redirected his efforts to a more refined anti-Semitism. Fritsch's more spiritual anti-Semitism directly contributed to deepening anti-Jewish social attitudes. In fact, according to one reliable witness, it was only after Stöcker lost favor and violence fell into disrepute that anti-Semitism became an "epidemic" among the upper class.⁴⁵ From then on, Fritsch's writing was directed toward a literate Volkish elite rather than at the masses, at an elite who, he thought, would put his ex-

hortations into practice. And this community responded, as can be judged from a directorate report of the Jewish community of Vienna in 1883 which stated this early that literary anti-Semitism had attracted not just the half-cultured elements of the population but even the highly cultured ones.⁴⁶ This claim was supported by other informants. A book dealer writing to the *Zentralverein* (Central Assembly) of the German Jews in 1900 stated that "the fact that every year tens of thousands of anti-Semitic pamphlets are sent free to all officials of the state and members of the upper ten thousand cannot but produce some effect."⁴⁷ His statement was made on the basis of the high percentage of anti-Semitic literature that he found in libraries offered to him for sale.

The issues of race, presented on a literary and theoretical level, enjoyed great popularity as subjects for discussion and debate on a wide intellectual front. At times both sides were presented. In 1912, the prestigious journal *Kunstwart* reviewed the question of anti-Semitism from both the Jewish and the New Romantic point of view. One year later, in 1913, the Jewish issue burst upon the Youth Movement with full force. There it became the source of long discussion over the next few years. In fact, the Jewish problem never ceased to provide mental and emotional exercise among teachers, self-styled educators, and students.

The effects of the basic strands of Volkish anti-Semitism described in this chapter are well summarized in a discussion of the issue by the Central Assembly of the Vienna Jewish community in 1882. The meeting indicated the gravity of the situation and the extent to which the accusations had stimulated the fears and concerns of the community. Though, on the one hand, the community resolved to defend itself, on the other it gave countenance to some of the charges by calling upon its members to reform. Clearly, the accusation of immorality, the lack of true, ethical roots, cut deepest. As a primary response to this attack, the community's respected leader, Wilhelm von Guttman, moved to publish a popular summary of Jewish moral beliefs. The motion was passed and acted upon. Next, to correct the image of the Jew and destroy the stereotype, Guttman moved that among themselves Jews should attempt to eliminate loans at high rates of interest. Furthermore, Jewish youth must be discouraged from entering trades; instead, they must be encouraged to become peasants and craftsmen.⁴⁸ A decade later, his last exhortation was implemented when the banker Moritz Simon founded a Jewish orphanage at Ahlem, near Hamburg, for the explicit purpose of cultivating the youth's interest in the soil and handicrafts.⁴⁹

Thus the attacks against them, as well as, perhaps, a sharing in the

effects of the Germanic idish community to make at charges. We shall see mo youth. Indeed, it is instru attempted to remove the s little short of tragic that n that "Jewishness" the Vol who attempted to accom especially affected. Thus, the orphanage not only t make them strong and he claimed, as had the anthrc rich Class was to assert a soldiers.⁵⁰ Along these sa (gymnastic association) w Jewish people, to counte to direct them into manus image of the "over-intelle niving in trade."⁵¹ There w who reacted by declaring the same time to emulate the cultural Zionism paralle from this attitude is outside to which we shall return. of the Volkish attitudes ca they had even upon those t

In 1913, when the first and the second had not yet fight for Germany, Aby V community, wrote to his l open anti-Semitism, but m were many who kept the fi role. More than the elitist g anti-Semitic program, it lai ing of the Germanic ideolog part. Without its help, the this context, we must also e by the bourgeois German ment, as well as to the prop ary and university educatio

CHAPTER 8

Education Comes to the Aid

BY THE END of the nineteenth century the ideological foundations of Volkish thought were securely laid. During the preceding years they had been formulated and reformulated to accommodate new disciplines and answer to new conditions.

Volkish thought had always been "alienated" in the sense that its point of departure was a deep dissatisfaction with existing reality. At mid-century, after the frustrating Frankfurt Congress of 1849, men like Riehl had retreated into a nostalgia for the Volkish past. This nostalgia also translated itself into a longing for German unity, and consequently the creation of Bismarck's *Reich* in 1871 was greeted with tremendous enthusiasm.

But political unity was not good enough for many Germans. They had learned to think in cultural terms during the long period of frustration, and this habit of thought endured. For these thinkers Bismarck's unification of Germany was "merely" political, for he had not overcome that spiritual separateness which they considered to be at the heart of Germany's crisis. As if this were not enough, Germany's prophets were suddenly confronted with a new source of disruption and alienation—the industrialization of the nation. Disraeli had once called England the home of two nations, the rich and the poor. Germany suddenly found herself being similarly divided. Between 1850 and 1871 annual coal production increased from one and a half million tons to thirty million. And by 1906 the figure would reach over one hundred million tons.

This development not only produced a serious imbalance in the distribution of wealth—this had always existed—but it brought into being a socially conscious proletariat which suddenly found its political voice. That these developments were regarded as grave matters is clearly evidenced by the variety of anti-socialist legislation which

D.T. In such situations
~~discussion for a rich man~~
timing is not only essential

modifications must be made

* but were very well thought out
D. T. In such situations

CHAPTER 8

Education Comes to the Aid

By the end of the nineteenth century the ideological foundations of Volkish thought were securely laid. During the preceding years they had been formulated and reformulated to accommodate new disciplines and answer to new conditions.

Volkish thought had always been "alienated" in the sense that its point of departure was a deep dissatisfaction with existing reality. At mid-century, after the frustrating Frankfurt Congress of 1849, men like Riehl had retreated into a nostalgia for the Volkish past. This nostalgia also translated itself into a longing for German unity, and consequently the creation of Bismarck's Reich in 1871 was greeted with tremendous enthusiasm.

But political unity was not good enough for many Germans. They had learned to think in cultural terms during the long period of frustration, and this habit of thought endured. For these thinkers Bismarck's unification of Germany was "merely" political, for he had not overcome that spiritual separateness which they considered to be at the heart of Germany's crisis. As if this were not enough, Germany's prophets were suddenly confronted with a new source of disruption and alienation—the industrialization of the nation. Disraeli had once called England the home of two nations, the rich and the poor. Germany suddenly found herself being similarly divided. Between 1850 and 1871 annual coal production increased from one and a half million tons to thirty million. And by 1906 the figure would reach over one hundred million tons.

This development not only produced a serious imbalance in the distribution of wealth—this had always existed—but it brought into being a socially conscious proletariat which suddenly found its political voice. That these developments were regarded as grave matters is clearly evidenced by the variety of anti-socialist legislation which

D.T. In such situations
~~discussion for a rich man~~
tuning is not only essential

but we are left with a powerful shift in the game — a revolution most plain inside out!

times. The German bourgeoisie was enjoying what was to be its last great span of prosperity and tranquility, though none could foresee this. The Volkish movement, temporarily subdued, revived with new vigor. It was to be the true beginning and not the end of the Volkish age.

During the period of relative inactivity, the Volkish movement was busy planting the roots of its faith. The elitist groups were never isolated from important currents within the nation. There were all the academic and literary ties; there was the Youth Movement, which absorbed and became the vehicle for the young people's revolt against bourgeois mores, authoritarianism, and spiritual vacuity; and there were the vital connections with the Conservative party and with the important Bund der Landwirte, the association of farmers and landlords which had been especially receptive to Volkish ideas. Most important, however, was the intimate relationship between Volkish thought and German educational institutions. Here it identified with the widespread urge for school reform and was, in some cases, able to shift this desire into its own channels.

The ideology was to see its greatest triumph in this accomplishment. It became institutionalized where it mattered most: in the education of young and receptive minds. Schools were founded according to Volkish blueprints and principles. In the state schools the ideology infiltrated into the minds of the students through books, curricula, and teachers. Student organizations adopted Volkish principles; and teachers, as well as students, passed through the Youth Movement and entered adulthood to spread the ideas they had picked up. Volkish ideals, infused in German youth through education, prepared the soil for the shock of the war which abruptly ended the flowering of the German bourgeoisie. It was then that the Volkish movement transformed itself into a mass movement by becoming a most powerful embodiment of the reaction to the crisis of German defeat.

Education pre-eminently institutionalized the ideology. Prior to 1918, no political organization or group of like-minded people were as important as educators in anchoring the Germanic faith within the German nation. Fritz Stern writes quite correctly that "a thousand teachers in republican Germany who in their youth had worshipped Lagarde or Langbehn were just as important in the triumph of National Socialism as all the putative millions of marks that Hitler collected from the German tycoons."² These teachers were deeply affected by the crisis of modernity for the solution of which they accepted not only the dictates of the prophets of the Germanic faith but all the other aspects of the Germanic ideology as well.

* D.T. As how could a teacher not see when they were honored and well-paid

The generation of teachers that decades of the nineteenth century, ment of that phenomenon we have the turning of bourgeois German youth left. At the beginning of the nineteenth century, as university students, associates of Father Jahn's fraternities. While 1890's were growing up, anti-Semites into the universities and came to most of them belonged. The Stöckist youth and the youth or student longed. These teachers handed down which they placed greater and greater was to wage the catastrophic war. The nation of bourgeois youth who, as we the right. For in Germany bourgeois to Volkish solutions in times of need seems closely related to the institution through the various facets of the education.

This picture contrasts sharply with England, or, indeed, most of the world favored social equality, economic better and social justice; they rioted against their support to liberal regimes. No students of the eighteenth century they meant not the *ancien régime*, but of their forebears, of the ancient Romans. Not he who transgressed against humanity who ignored the interests of the Teachers and students, members of one another in forging a great propaganda thought among the population.

An investigation of the role of education, however, presents a difficult picture did not allow for a national standard. Local variation was considered German schools were not patterned we have chosen, as a practical course representative cases according to the

Some Germans, after reading the I was not my experience. My teacher to say socialist] who condemned all But such men will be in the minority

was enjoying what was to be its last tranquility, though none could foresee temporarily subdued, revived with the beginning and not the end of the

inactivity, the Volkish movement its faith. The elitist groups were never within the nation. There were all; there was the Youth Movement, a vehicle for the young people's revolt against materialism, and spiritual vacuity; and men with the Conservative party and Landwirte, the association of farmers especially receptive to Volkish ideas. It is the intimate relationship between educational institutions. Here it identifies school reform and was, in some of its own channels.

greatest triumph in this accomplishment where it mattered most: in the educational minds. Schools were founded according to principles. In the state schools the minds of the students through books, organizations adopted Volkish principles, passed through the Youth Movement to spread the ideas they had picked up from German youth through education, preparation for the war which abruptly ended the peace. It was then that the Volkish movement became a mass movement by becoming a reaction to the crisis of German

institutionalized the ideology. Prior to this group of like-minded people were anchoring the Germanic faith within themselves. Writes quite correctly that "a thousand men who in their youth had worked just as important in the triumph of the millions of marks that Hitler won."² These teachers were deeply committed for the solution of which they were the prophets of the Germanic and the Germanic ideology as well.

all a teacher not
honored and

The generation of teachers that came to fruition during the last decades of the nineteenth century, in their youth represented a segment of that phenomenon we have had occasion to mention so often, the turning of bourgeois German youth to the right rather than to the left. At the beginning of the nineteenth century these young people had, as university students, associated themselves with the aspirations of Father Jahn's fraternities. While the teachers of the 1880's and 1890's were growing up, anti-Semitic and racial thought expanded into the universities and came to dominate the fraternities to which most of them belonged. The Stöcker era had vitally influenced their youth and the youth or student organizations to which they belonged. These teachers handed down the Germanic tradition, in which they placed greater and greater faith, to the generation that was to wage the catastrophic war. They had shaped the next generation of bourgeois youth who, as we shall see, turned even further to the right. For in Germany bourgeois youth was to continue to turn to Volkish solutions in times of national crisis. That they did so seems closely related to the institutionalization of Volkish thought through the various facets of the educational system.

This picture contrasts sharply with the one that emerged in France, England, or, indeed, most of the world. Students in other countries favored social equality, economic betterment for the underprivileged, and social justice; they rioted against the established order and threw their support to liberal regimes. Not so in Germany. If the German students of the eighteenth century had cried "Down with tyrants!" they meant not the *ancien régime*, but Charlemagne, the slaughterer of their forebears, of the ancient Saxons. And so it was to remain. Not he who transgressed against humanity and social justice, but he who ignored the interests of the Volk was to be their adversary. Teachers and students, members of the same movement, reinforced one another in forging a great propaganda machine that spread Volkish thought among the population.

An investigation of the role of the Volkish movement in education, however, presents a difficult problem. Germany's federal structure did not allow for a national standardization of schools and curricula. Local variation was considerable; the tens of thousands of German schools were not patterned after a master plan. Therefore, we have chosen, as a practical course, to examine what seem to be representative cases according to the available evidence.

Some Germans, after reading the pages that follow, may say: "This was not my experience. My teachers were liberals [few will be able to say socialist] who condemned all racial and New Romantic ideas." But such men will be in the minority. To be sure, there were regions

where schools were not bedeviled by Volkish thought or where schools had freed themselves of these ideas, but not many. The fact is that schools dominated by the Volkish ideology were so numerous as to constitute the center rather than the fringe of German education.

This is attested, in part, by Erich Weymar's recent analysis of nineteenth-century history textbooks. Weymar professed to be shocked at the results of his research. Rightly so, for within those high-school textbooks is to be found every feature of the Germanic ideology. From the beginning of the century, the books praised Volkish ideas, and the destiny of the Volk with its sense of German mission pervaded most of their content. Modernity was universally and irrevocably condemned; the spirit of the Germanic forebears, the primitive but heroic inhabitants of the Teutonic forests, were held up as examples to be emulated.³ This trend persisted into the present century. It is indeed significant that an analysis of history textbooks used during the Weimar period uncovered a continuation of this trend. Even the authors who favored republican statesmen felt compelled through an inner conviction to praise Lagarde as the great German who had opposed a society dedicated solely to material and scientific progress.⁴ The relative conformity of the texts in these respects, whether from 1816 or 1926, demonstrates dramatically the penetration of the anti-modern ideology.

However, in the earlier texts, the Germanic message was tempered in important respects. Protestant Christianity was still central to the historical context, though it increasingly took on a Germanic coloration. Moreover, the Old Testament, which so many after 1900 vehemently rejected, was highly regarded as the basis for the doctrine of election.⁵ A Germanic faith was not yet the sole precondition for being a chosen people—though it was to be shortly. Nevertheless, throughout the nineteenth century, with or without the Germanic faith, Tacitus' descriptions of the ancient Germans formed the center of Germanic consciousness.⁶ While the Christian and Germanic impetus existed side by side, it was the Germanic faith which increasingly made inroads upon the Christian, to finally overshadow it at the beginning of the new century. Then, in 1905, some 273 teachers from Bremen recommended that a doctrinaire religious orthodoxy not be taught in public schools. They especially condemned the Old Testament, since it allegedly acquainted the students with the ideas of Syrian-Arabic Bedouins instead of dealing with the more vital Germanic heritage. Moreover, they held that the Scripture was alien to the Germanic experience and was outdated by the new ideas of evolution—and they quoted Darwin against Moses to prove it.⁷

In the same vein, an incident of far the trend away from orthodoxy: Gurlitt, a leader in the school reform with blasphemy, escaped serious harm at a teachers' meeting, he again s Christianity on the education and c He charged that Christianity had heritage and that the healthy bo powerfully against its poison.⁸ Sin books was confined to the years be does not deal with the hostility th Christianity and the Old Testame this by referring to the influence o rise of anti-Semitic attitudes durir far in explaining the hostility towar

Further evidence of the develop ideas in the schools was the growin during the last decades of the ninet of *Heimatkunde* into the curricu dered as "lore of the homeland," i cannot really be translated. It may terms of the aims of Heinrich Will at mid-century advocated the teac the German people with their lan they are rooted. This demand was Volkish pressure, and, in general, plied. In 1889, at a teachers' confe that the academic curriculum of tl of Germanic hero legends and fairy ciate more fully the accomplishmen were the primary schools, which tend.⁹) In the primary schools, as v the indoctrination in *Heimatkunde* young were filled with the teacher glory.

It can, of course, be argued that Volkish, but in practice it tended to was often chauvinistic and the sub Volkish. An incident in Posen, in 1 school, addressing his fellow staff m should be dismissed from instructio could not be expected to have sut about it to appreciate the message.¹

stricted freedom. Instead, the ideal and the practical, the supreme and the immediate solution lay in "giving oneself to the Volk."¹⁹

What this meant and how it was to be achieved was revealed in Gurlitt's philosophy of education. Like other school reformers, Gurlitt gave priority to man's natural rather than his intellectual make-up and similarly regarded direct experience as superior to secondary knowledge—that is, wisdom derived from books. He insisted, first of all, that a child be allowed to develop naturally—a familiar enough cry in his day. Interpreting this literally, he stated that each human should be permitted to grow within the limits set by nature, limits which could not be surmounted.²⁰ Men would be able to find their role in life by identifying with the environment, the traditions and the values of the Volk. Similarly, love of the fatherland could not be acquired through formal education, but only through a love of the *Heimat*.²¹ Gurlitt exhorted students to learn their higher religious sense from nature rather than spending their time dissecting some "dark saying" from the Bible.²² The same would apply in practical education. Instead of drilling their minds with abstract scholastic matters, the students should occupy themselves in perfecting traditional skills in workshops and learn to know nature and the soil. To be revived, the Volk needed not rootless laborers but people who lovingly cared for the soil or carried on the artisan traditions.²³

However, education was not to exclude all "academic" subjects. Such fields (revamped, to be sure, for the correct emphasis) as history, literature, and philosophy were to enhance the identity of the individual with the Volk. They were to forge the bonds which connected man with his national and racial peers through identity with the natural environment, with heroic tradition, and with a pantheistic Germanic faith that stressed the idealism of deeds in the interest of the Volk. In this vein Gurlitt criticized those textbooks which could not draw the proper distinction between the grandeur of Charlemagne and the heroic stature of the old Saxons—though they were defeated by the Carolingian monarch. Such books, he claimed, demoted the Volk to second place.²⁴ If the current system of education were continued, it would only support Lagarde's charge that German youth had lost, and was continuing to lose, its idealism.²⁵

This lost virtue was to be recaptured through the Germanic faith as called for by Lagarde and Langbehn. Like these prophets, Gurlitt considered religious feeling to be an inner manifestation of a man's whole personality. Therefore it was essential that the youth be enabled to find their own inner strength and feeling without being stifled by inflexible doctrines and obsolete traditions.²⁶ Christianity, of course, was obsolescent, as it stifled the vigor of youth, offering only

a consolation, a "something for the litt, all traditions unaffiliated with Catholic Church, that centuries spirit, and the culture of classical tions to literature and the arts, we of the Volk, past or future. Only peoples from the Bronze Age on tivity, was sufficient to produce nations. It was a unique expression of the Assyrian-Semitic nations o tions, indeed, it was one of the quently, he argued in prime Volk richness and naturalness of the a before the German Volk could were ripe for the task. And in they would automatically strengt idealism."²⁷

Gurlitt was convinced that th manic faith would be accepted by to base this belief on his own str derstands [Langbehn's] *Rembra* is delighted with Chamberlain."²⁸ ful thinking and reality may hav of his colleagues, was in person: the youth both in schools and in was extensive. Thus, for exampl. Gymnasium in Austria quoted G of the school. Students should i had said, but "cool rationality" sl stead youth should be a whole, l example of the appeal and influ personal involvement put him in dents who wanted to throw off t ciety had fastened on them. Co relatively reliable source, at least It was they who were especially well as by the religious content An admixture of these comple: principles of the Youth Moveme its advisory council. Their revol of Gustav Wyneken, who also but along more democratic and quently, no doubt that Gurlitt s

ideal and the practical, the supreme
in "giving oneself to the Volk." 19

It was to be achieved was revealed in Gurnall. Like other school reformers, Gurnall rather than his intellectual make-up or experience as superior to secondary education derived from books. He insisted, first, that men develop naturally—a familiar enough idea, literally, he stated that each human being is within the limits set by nature, limits which no man could exceed.²⁰ Men would be able to find their way in the environment, the traditions and customs, and the love of the fatherland could not be taught, but only through a love of the fatherland to learn their higher religious duties, spending their time dissecting some

²² The same would apply in practical terms: if we occupy their minds with abstract scholasticism, they will occupy themselves in perfecting traditional crafts and learn to know nature and the soil. To the rootless laborers but people who are rooted in the artisan traditions.²³

: to exclude all "academic" subjects. ure, for the correct emphasis) as his- were to enhance the identity of the were to forge the bonds which could racial peers through identity with eric tradition, and with a pantheistic idealism of deeds in the interest of ialized those textbooks which could n between the grandeur of Charle- f the old Saxons—though they were narch. Such books, he claimed, de-

²⁴ If the current system of education support Lagarde's charge that Germany is continuing to lose, its idealism.²⁵

aptured through the Germanic faith
ngbehn. Like these prophets, Gurlitt
is an inner manifestation of a man's
was essential that the youth be en-
energy and feeling without being stif-
obsolete traditions.²⁰ Christianity,
ed the vigor of youth, offering only

a consolation, a "something for those tired of life." Indeed, for Gurlitt, all traditions unaffiliated with Germanism were archaic. Both the Catholic Church, that centuries-old suppressor of the Germanic spirit, and the culture of classical Greece as well, with its contributions to literature and the arts, were inconsequential to the flowering of the Volk, past or future. Only the artistry of the ancient Germanic peoples from the Bronze Age onward, their elemental sense of creativity, was sufficient to produce a culture superior to those of other nations. It was a unique expression, totally unrelated to the heritage of the Assyrian-Semitic nations or to the Roman and Greek civilizations, indeed, it was one of the founts of these cultures. Consequently, he argued in prime Volkish fashion, the vitality, the spiritual richness and naturalness of the ancients would have to be regained before the German Volk could again assert itself. German youth were ripe for the task. And in rediscovering the Germanic context they would automatically strengthen the Volk and increase their own idealism.²⁷

Gurlitt was convinced that the New Romanticism and the Germanic faith would be accepted by a freely developing youth. He was to base this belief on his own statement that "Young Germany understands [Langbehn's] *Rembrandt* book, understands Lagarde, and is delighted with Chamberlain."²⁸ Was it really so? Although wishful thinking and reality may have overlapped, Gurlitt, unlike most of his colleagues, was in personal touch with developments among the youth both in schools and in the Youth Movement. His influence was extensive. Thus, for example, the graduating class of the Graz Gymnasium in Austria quoted Gurlitt to justify their bitter criticism of the school. Students should indeed criticize their school, Gurlitt had said, but "cool rationality" should not be demanded of them. Instead youth should be a whole, living personality.²⁹ This is just one example of the appeal and influence of this educator whose direct personal involvement put him in touch with many thousands of students who wanted to throw off the shackles which an oppressive society had fastened on them. Consequently, we may take him as a relatively reliable source, at least as regards the dissatisfied students. It was they who were especially affected by Gurlitt's philosophy as well as by the religious content of contemporary Volkish thought. An admixture of these complementary trends was embodied in the principles of the Youth Movement, with Gurlitt as the chairman of its advisory council. Their revolution was Gurlitt's brand, not that of Gustav Wyneken, who also prescribed independence for youth but along more democratic and free-thinking lines. There is, consequently, no doubt that Gurlitt sincerely looked to Young Germany

to usher in a second Reformation—"for so our century will be known"—a task, he thought, commensurate with their abilities.³⁰

Where Gurlitt philosophized about education, Hermann Lietz, Gurlitt's contemporary, went directly to work. Gurlitt, who beheld the flowering of the boarding-school movement around him, saw in Lietz's work the fruition of his own ideas of school reform. Indeed, in the hands of Hermann Lietz, who in 1898 transferred the English public-school idea to a German setting and gave it the task of transmitting the Germanic ideology, school reform became for Gurlitt the fulfillment of his own educational theories.³¹ Lietz, by his very example, influenced many German educators who were not actually involved with his boarding-school movement. Moreover, his schools were imitated both before and after the First World War. By the 1920's there were at least forty such boarding schools, which for all their variety traced their origins back to Hermann Lietz. To be sure, only a small number of students actually passed through these schools, but they made their presence felt in society, as they came to occupy positions of influence in government, business, and education. These, then, are the reasons why we must devote so much attention to Lietz: because of his imitators, who formed the German boarding-school movement, and because of the discussion he aroused throughout the educational establishment.

Lietz had a great advantage in that he could experiment outside the rules of the established educational bureaucracy. The public schools had been subject to Volkish pressure, and in many of them a Volkish spirit prevailed, but in Lietz's schools the whole range of Volkish attitudes could be applied in a more thoroughgoing way. It is thus to Lietz and his experiment that we must now turn to see Volkish educational ideas in action.

Although Lietz was to deny it, it is quite certain that he was influenced by the example of the English public schools, especially by the radical new innovations at Abbotsholme. There, while a guest teacher, Lietz observed the work of Dr. Reddie as he directed his educational institution under the motto: "Education spells Empire." The school had a nationalistic spirit, an identity with Britain's martial and "civilizing" powers, which Reddie attributed to the nation's fidelity to her ancient traditions. Lietz was particularly impressed with three of Reddie's procedures. First, there was a concentration on an English history that stressed the greatness of England throughout the ages and paid relatively little attention to other nations. Second, there was an observance of the Anglican service which was embellished with and made flexible by readings from Carlyle and Ruskin. And third, Lietz admired the heavy emphasis placed on

physical fitness and excellence of procedures to the German scene; it did seem as if he had introduced a revolutionary program of skillful adaptation of the British

Lietz's ideas came to fruition in Ilsenburg, Saxony. The school were strategically located in the small village, fields, and in this environment would be wanted to become familiar with the rhythm of the people who live in the neighborhood. The establishment led to the founding, in Ilsenburg, which housed only the whole enterprise by the peasants to accommodate the up of educational facilities, to which represented a most concerted effort. The principles of boarding-schools, Lietz's estimation, a new trend to encompass more of the child's scholarship, and one-sidedness summed it up: the strong person, not the strongest intelligence.³²

As we have noted, Lietz, in his man setting, made some changes. Whereas Reddie groomed his of the Empire, Lietz aspired to a simple belief in nature—which is—and an abiding dedication to to be acquired through a curriculum in the country, growing familiarity with the edge of the simple ways of peasant artisans. As we shall see later, the selected classes and students goals. But these goals were not they arose out of the romantic himself inherited and continued to see that his peasant heritage perspective on the world.³³ Even in exercise, he considered manual of physical conditioning. The improvements was the best way

tion—"for so our century will be commensurate with their abilities."³⁰

About education, Hermann Lietz, ready to work. Gurlitt, who beheld school movement around him, saw in his own ideas of school reform. Indeed, who in 1898 transferred the English setting and gave it the task of transmuting school reform became for Gurlitt national theories.³¹ Lietz, by his very own educators who were not actually school movement. Moreover, his schools after the First World War. By the time such boarding schools, which for all went back to Hermann Lietz. To be sure, but actually passed through these science felt in society, as they came to government, business, and education. Why we must devote so much attention to them, who formed the German movement because of the discussion he aroused.

that he could experiment outside national bureaucracy. The public pressure, and in many of them a Lietz's schools the whole range of in a more thoroughgoing way. It is that we must now turn to see

it is quite certain that he was in English public schools, especially by in Botolphclaydon. There, while a guest of Dr. Reddie as he directed his motto: "Education spells Empire." It is an identity with Britain's martial Reddie attributed to the nation's Lietz was particularly impressed. First, there was a concentration on the greatness of England through the attention to other nations. Second, the Anglican service which was able by readings from Carlyle and the heavy emphasis placed on

physical fitness and excellence in sports.³² Lietz transposed these procedures to the German scene and applied them in such a way that it did seem as if he had introduced something unique. Indeed, he implemented a revolutionary program in terms of content; it was a skillful adaptation of the British public-school system.

Lietz's ideas came to fruition in 1898 with his first school, founded in Ilsenburg, Saxony. The school and the housing for the lower grades were strategically located in the countryside—in close proximity to a small village, fields, and simple peasant folk. Lietz thought that this environment would be beneficial to the students, whom he wanted to become familiar both with the native soil and with the rhythm of the people who lived on it.³³ The success of the first establishment led to the founding, in 1901, of a second school, at Haulbinda, which housed only the middle grades. Finally Lietz crowned the whole enterprise by the purchase of the ancient castle at Bieberstein to accommodate the upper-high-school classes. This complex of educational facilities, to which an orphanage was later added, represented a most concerted effort to spread the cause of school reform. The principles of boarding-school life applied here were to start, in Lietz's estimation, a new trend in education that would be oriented to encompass more of the child than could be done through books, scholarship, and one-sided intellectual development. As one disciple summed it up: the strong personality was important for the school, not the strongest intelligence.³⁴

As we have noted, Lietz, in transferring Reddie's ideas to a German setting, made some changes. These were of crucial importance. Whereas Reddie groomed his students to enter the active service of the Empire, Lietz aspired to inculcate his charges with the pantheistic belief in nature—which increasingly took on a Germanic slant—and an abiding dedication to the welfare of the Volk. Both were to be acquired through a curriculum centered on residence in the country, growing familiarity with nature and the soil, and a knowledge of the simple ways of peasants and the trades of unpretentious artisans. As we shall see later, this was merely a bare outline, for some selected classes and students were to reach beyond these modest goals. But these goals were nonetheless effective. To a large extent they arose out of the romantic identity with rural tradition that Lietz himself inherited and continued to foster. In later years, his wife asserted that his peasant heritage had vitally influenced his whole perspective on the world.³⁵ Even when he instituted sports for physical exercise, he considered manual labor on the soil a more fitting form of physical conditioning. Working at reforestation and other land improvements was the best way to build a well-developed German.

physique and mind;³⁶ even as a sick man, on the verge of death, Lietz would help his boys plant trees.

Lietz's schools, however, did not represent a mere back-to-nature movement, though in later years it was falsely described as such. At times he was pictured as a simple peasant and his agricultural and rural interests were equated with an uncomplicated mind. One of his early collaborators even depicted him as an elemental and primitive personality, while another, Gustav Wyneken, then a staff teacher, later a figure in the Youth Movement, attributed to his superior an anti-intellectual disposition that regarded all acts of cerebration with deep suspicion.³⁷ Lietz did, of course, hold that the intellectual development fostered in urban surroundings and placed in the service of modern technology was inimical to the quintessence of the Germanic mind, but it would be erroneous to see in him a genial nature addict and an outright anti-intellectual.

Lietz was neither as pragmatic nor as primitive as some of his associates depicted him. In fact, one might almost call him an idealist primarily concerned with the spiritual destruction of the nation and with the resuscitation of the Germanic base for the Volk. From the first, he combined his views of nature and the role of the German peasantry in the national culture with the immediate and long-range interests of the German people. Deeply immersed in the Germanic ideology, he claimed that his schools were established on the principle that education presupposed national feelings and national deeds, for *Heimat* and Volk were the pillars upon which all culture rested.³⁸ It was education's task to counteract the damage done by modernity, a task best fulfilled through loving care for the soil of the fatherland and a cultivation of the historical German inheritance. Such education, he claimed, would lead to an ethical idealism commensurate with the needs of the Volk.³⁹

This concept of education covered a large area; to quote Lietz, it was education for living. One of its most significant vehicles was to be religion, but a religion that was more a religious feeling, a veneration of nature and the soil that slowly fused with a Germanic faith.⁴⁰ Lietz was especially fond of the works of Lagarde, as Lagarde too defined culture in terms of man's relationship to his *Heimat* and Volk, and Lietz made liberal use of his ideas.⁴¹ Whereas in early life Lietz could say that religion and the Bible were among the source materials for the education of youth, in his last years these were supplemented by the Germanic faith.⁴²

In their curricula, the schools spread the Germanic ideology and their courses were designed to create in the students a fervent identity with the nation. The core of their curricula was the study of the

German language and German history to teach the history courses he pioneered in the use of source material.

During the first few years, Lietz gradually the Biblical studies were history. This change was complete books of the Old Testament to be stories and chronicles.⁴³ Later he a gious value either. Christ, freed either Germanized as a heroic figure of those virtues associated with that of a Christ-centered faith took on bining historical narration with that the times, Lietz came to idealize the companion of Martin Luther, who, he the German nation with a plan for:

For the heritage of German culture Lietz turned to the literature of that subject was combined, as in the religious dedication, surrounded Lietz's hands Abottsholme's Angli something not very dissimilar to Verature, mostly with a Germanic nightly under the stars to the studentish books we have already discussed, for example, were introduced "moving" Büttnerbauer, Freytag's *Helmuth Harringa*, while the upper-bination of history, philosophy, and *man History of the Nineteenth Century* to be found in the literature of the Dor Fritsch's paper *Der Hammer*, Damaschke's book *Soil Reform*, and cism were all recommended reading.

While German literature, especially Goethe, Schiller, and Kleist, was he were almost totally neglected. While Gustav Wyneken and Paul Geheer as the new psychological literature approved. He condemned the literary intellectual content for cultivated mind which was anathema to the nation introduced a spirit of irreverence.⁴⁷

foreign languages fared equally poorly. Foreign languages—with the exception of English, which was deemed necessary in the developing competition with Britain for economic markets—and mathematics occupied an auxiliary role in the curriculum.⁴⁸

The social organization of these schools provides further evidence that German youth were being educated in accordance with definite goals. While the new institutions had at first drastically moved away from the authoritarianism of the state schools and instituted the English prefect system of student self-government, they just as quickly abandoned it. Instead, they organized the students into "families" in which the teacher was the mentor of a small group of students. In the abolition of student self-government after so short a try, Lietz reflected the patriarchal attitudes inherent in the Germanic faith. In this context Lietz recognized the importance of leadership, a quality he later deemed indispensable for the Germanic revival. Accordingly, he demanded that his own educators possess harmonious as well as powerful personalities that were capable of leading and inspiring youth. Gustav Wyneken called Lietz's system an "enlightened patriarchal despotism."⁴⁹ The teachers' task was to train young people who would easily assimilate into the social and political organizations envisaged by Volkish thought: a society based upon hierarchical principles.

Lietz's view of the state was consistent with his ideas of school organization; he thought that the state should be like a well-run farm with everything in its proper place.⁵⁰ He felt that amorphous mass parties, drawing their legal sanction from majority-rule principles, had destroyed the just order of things. To correct the imbalance it was necessary for the leadership of the nation to revert to those who were capable of leading and could envision a national greatness. The rest of society, structured according to hierarchical principles, was to be composed of the masses, graded according to occupations and intelligence.⁵¹ It is important to note that Lietz shared this outlook with the Volkish movement as a whole, a world view which persisted into the age of mass parliamentary parties as an instrument for advancing elitist concepts. And typically enough, he too held to a social differentiation based upon class and economic criteria. In his educational establishment, for example, he cut short the school attendance of the poorer students, students from his orphanage over whom he could exercise absolute control. In place of intellectual tasks, they were assigned manual work. Of them he said philosophically: "The children of the broad masses should not get half-cultured; otherwise they will make demands for the satisfaction of which there is neither the strength nor the money available."⁵²

The increasing accentuation of national institution was also reflected. At first Jews were readily received from Jews substantially helped to that of Jewish students was not inconceivable comprised the majority of the upper for this high degree of Jewish interest perhaps these Jews were reacting against perhaps it was just that they were their children out of the strait jacket from the beginning, but for one or not Lietz's favorites. And even he disappointed him when he wrote a note the social relationships at the school students were apt to be too intellectual for Lietz's Germanic tastes.⁵³

Quite suddenly, Lietz attempted. He failed in his first attempt, being at which Wyneken and Geheeb's issue, however, was further aggravated. Jew, became a member of the team interesting in itself, as it reflected a strong the attraction of Lietz's established. Lietz to be a fellow idealist. was a "hero" and his school gave which he identified—"heroes of the Germanic ideals of beauty; however the beautiful male figure, but intelligence respects he was in harmony with New Romanticism.

But Lessing was a humanist and gave inspiration from classical models misread Lietz. He set forth his ideal showed him clearly at odds with that all religions, in view of their standing in the curriculum. Lietz for even though he had rejected idealized Germanic faith was still a Lessing was a fervent patriot at that luted this feeling with a spirit of he not be drowned within the merely potential area of conflict with the heat

Lessing was dismissed. The ac

might well have been rooted in disillusionment—was a tempting target for exploitation by both the left and the right.

Tradition, however, did play a central role in the German Youth Movement. The young people remained faithful to a conservative attitude shared by most German youth throughout the previous century. The movement represented a further turning toward the right on the part of the bourgeois German youth on a scale not equaled until the Nazi harvest of a whole new generation. It is not easy to document at what point it first acquired a definite Volkish allegiance. Nor is it simple to determine to what degree the movement was actually aware of the direction it desired to take and the means to pursue it. During its first, developing years the organization was flexible, and revised its own original declaration of intentions to meet the pragmatic needs of the moment or to follow an especially influential and commanding leader.

But it was firm in its loyalty to the concept of the Volk, myth or reality. Its allegiance to the Volk, Germanic faith, tradition, heroism, nature lore, and its identity with the aesthetic qualities of Nordic man were varied but concrete. Here, among the youth, essentially Volkish aesthetic and ethical values were received with enthusiasm. By 1904, the wave of the Wandervogel had swept Germany with such force that not even Karl Fischer could adequately explain it. Surely we can regard this phenomenon as a radical expression of New Romanticism penetrating the younger generation. It too was a part of the attempt to resolve the crisis in German ideology.

After the inroads made by Volkish thought, a large segment of German youth associated hikes through the countryside with revolution, and identifying with nature was thought equivalent to subverting the existing order. And here alone it functioned as a vital part of an ideology that was conservative as contrasted with the progress of the times. Hans Blüher, the movement's first historian, stated that the upsurge was a "protest of youth against the stifling of its spirit."² Indeed, it did attempt to liberate itself from the strictures of modernity in the form of school, parents, authoritarianism, and the whole order of bourgeois mores, prejudices, and hypocrisies. But the direction it took immersed youth in a romanticism based upon the native landscape, elemental vitality, and awareness of the German past. The first Wandervogel called themselves "Bachanten," a name which does not derive from the Greek God Bacchus but from the wandering scholars of the German Middle Ages.³

Karl Fischer, the founder of the Wandervogel, regarded the movement as a romantic expression of a vital German character. In view of its sources of inspiration, he was justified in this view. He and his

early followers had drawn extensively from Lagarde and Langbehn. They also drew from biological support. Riehl inspired the movement, teaching them how to "live with the souls." And in aesthetics and art, the movement drew from the favorite depictions of youthful inspiration of nature. Not the least of these was that of Father Jahn and the part that the youth of his own day remained loyal to in Germany.⁴ The Wandervogel, as such, but with a deeper sense of the landscape which inspires (th the German *Heimat*, such love as . . . a national-Germanic background of life."⁵ In these respects, in the movement was radical and viewed.

To dismiss the romanticism of the movement as "ideal," as many historians have done, does not present a clear political program. Its peculiar approach to the nature presented an alternative way of interests. If the political identity of the movement was an essential desire to reach a workable future and custom is badly misinterpreted for contemporary politics as "su its face value."

In defining their patriotism as these young people contrasted themselves with bourgeois society to the ideals of Langbehn than to the growth of the movement's intensity. As we shall see, its originally dissipated, supplanted for a to be revived shortly before the movement in detail in connection with the movement.

The deep love of fatherland which was stressed in the Wandervogel movement sent some difficulty to Hans Blüher. He tried to resolve the contradiction of the movement's political posture of the movement a deep-seated attachment to the German state did not seem to be the morale and aspirations of Ger

illusionment—was a tempting
and the right.
central role in the German Youth
remained faithful to a conservative
both throughout the previous cen-
further turning toward the right
man youth on a scale not equaled
new generation. It is not easy to
tured a definite Volkish allegiance.
the degree the movement was actu-
to take and the means to pursue
the organization was flexible, and
of intentions to meet the prag-
allow an especially influential and

the concept of the Volk, myth or
Germanic faith, tradition, heroism,
the aesthetic qualities of Nordic
re, among the youth, essentially
were received with enthusiasm.
vögel had swept Germany with
er could adequately explain it.
phenon as a radical expression of
younger generation. It too was
rism in German ideology.

ish thought, a large segment of
ough the countryside with revo-
was thought equivalent to sub-
alone it functioned as a vital part
as contrasted with the progress
ment's first historian, stated that
against the stifling of its spirit."²
elf from the strictures of moder-
authoritarianism, and the whole
and hypocrisies. But the direc-
romanticism based upon the native
areness of the German past. The
s "Bachanten," a name which
Bacchus but from the wandering

andervögel, regarded the move-
ital German character. In view
justified in this view. He and his

early followers had drawn extensive inspiration from the writings of
Lagarde and Langbehn. They also turned to Ludwig Gurlitt for ide-
ological support. Richl inspired their sense of veneration for the land-
scape, teaching them how to appropriate the landscape into their
souls.⁴ And in aesthetics and art Fidus provided them with their fa-
vorite depictions of youthful idealism, physical beauty, and the in-
spiration of nature. Not the least important influence, however, was
that of Father Jahn and the patriotism that had been channeled into
the youth of his own day remained as a symbol for the youth of mod-
ern Germany.⁵ The Wandervögel lived up to it, with less patriotism
as such, but with a deeper sense of identity with the Volk. "Because
the landscape which inspires [the Wandervögel] is the landscape of
the German *Heimat*, such love awakens love for Volk and fatherland
. . . a national-Germanic background for all their culture and style
of life."⁶ In these respects, in the context of Wilhelmine society, the
movement was radical and viewed itself accordingly.

To dismiss the romanticism of the youth as essentially "unpoliti-
cal," as many historians have done, is a grave error. Though it did
not present a clear political program or engage in practical politics,
its peculiar approach to the nature of the German character clearly
presented an alternative way of pursuing the nation's policies and in-
terests. If the political identity of the youth is not recognized, their
essential desire to reach a working unity with the Volk through na-
ture and custom is badly misinterpreted. Moreover, their contempt
for contemporary politics as "superficial" is mistakenly accepted at
its face value.

In defining their patriotism as loyalty to the interests of the Volk,
these young people contrasted markedly with their chauvinistic par-
ents and with bourgeois society as a whole. They felt much closer
to the ideals of Langbehn than to those of Bismarck. However, dur-
ing the growth of the movement, its patriotic feeling fluctuated in
intensity. As we shall see, its original radical enthusiasm was gradu-
ally dissipated, supplanted for a time by an intense patriotism, only
to be revived shortly before the war. But this vacillation will be ex-
amined in detail in connection with other interrelated issues.

The deep love of fatherland that rises above social class and politics
which was stressed in the Wandervögel's manifesto of 1904⁷ pre-
sented some difficulty to Hans Blüher, the organization's first histo-
rian. He tried to resolve the conflict between the superficially non-
political posture of the movement and certain actions which reflected
a deep-seated attachment to the fatherland. For example, while the
German state did not seem to concern itself with such problems as
the morale and aspirations of German nationals in neighboring coun-

tries, the Wandervögel took it upon themselves to display an appropriate interest. In his history Blüher describes the journey undertaken by Fischer and his troop in 1902 to visit the German communities in Poland. It was to impress upon their fellow countrymen, settlers in that country, that the youth of Germany were interested in their fate, their aspirations and complaints, and they vowed to communicate their impressions to the people back home.⁸ This excursion was supplemented by subsequent trips to other hard-pressed German minorities in the Austrian Empire. How markedly this contrasts with the rest of Blüher's history, which describes the supposedly simple attempt by the organization to join itself with nature and to engage in activities solely on the basis of spontaneity.⁹

TH
The disdain for the patently patriotic, on the one hand, and identity with the Volk, on the other, continued to be exemplified in other practices as well. Instead of celebrating the pompous and popular Wilhelmine festivals, such as the anniversary of the Battle of Sedan, the Wandervögel held rites of Germanic origin. The celebration of the Summer Solstice was especially popular. Here was a ritual that brought forth the aura of heroism, of group participation, of conforming to a natural sublimation in the Volk.¹⁰ A typical celebration began with the lighting of a bonfire in a selected romantic spot. A speaker then would invoke the true spirit of the German people, praise the virtues of Germanic ancestry, and exhort the youth to emulate this great heritage. This was followed by singing, after which each youth, as an act of rededication to Germanic values, jumped through the fire. Their motto, "To maintain oneself in spite of all the powers that be," clearly expressed a revolutionary dynamism which directed itself against the modernity of the bourgeois world and which held forth a vision of a vital union with romantic Germanism.¹¹

The identity with the Volk was continued in other fields as well, though in a less spectacular way. Fischer fused the influence of several Volkish thinkers, among them Riehl and Langbehn, with the spirit of adventure found in the fiction of Karl May, a famous German author who concocted tales of American Indians. From these stories Fischer derived a sense of romantic and simultaneously idealistic action, for May's heroes, scouts like "Old Schatterhand" and noble Indians like "Winnetou," were the epitome of vitality, chivalry, and endurance; they were imbued with a sense of exploration and possessed an individuality that was virile as well as virtuous.¹² Here, perhaps naively, Fischer saw his "idealism of deeds" at work. He aspired to more than adventure; he wanted to create an identity that would lead to deeds,¹³ an idealism that would arise spontane-

ously out of the contact between yo
wandering through the countryside,
of such an idealism. It would famili
had preached so avidly: an intimate
an acquaintance with the customs ar
ant folk, and the perception of the i
present and tradition. Fischer thoug
ing contact" with the Volk heritage
thing to be gained from merely lo
Here his Wandervögel would find th
an acquaintance with the customs ar
ant folk, and the perception of the i
present and tradition. Fischer thoug
ing contact" with the Volk heritage
thing to be gained from merely lo
Here his Wandervögel would find th
an acquaintance with the customs ar
ant folk, and the perception of the i
present and tradition. Fischer thoug
ing contact" with the Volk heritage
thing to be gained from merely lo
Here his Wandervögel would find th

Interestingly enough, the Wande
contrasted with that depicted in the
they must have seen in their homes.
union with a benign force in nature.
well as a fusion with, a vital and ele
comparable energies were at work
could the appropriate fusion of indivi
Georg Götsch, an early Wandervöge
behind this submergence when he s
Siberian landscape, that after his jow
unities and encompassing element
looked.¹⁶ He was not speaking of the
room nature scene, but of the harsh n
mental nature. Both Frank Fischer,
important theoreticians, and Götsch
and nature went hand in hand.¹⁸ a c
similar to Fontane's description of th
in the shaping of a stalwart character.

tional toughness permeated the ideal
helped shape the concepts of physic
given functional roles in the ideal of G

A further reflection of the young
in a common cause was their love of p
popularity of Frank Fischer's collecti
published in 1905, demonstrated tha
garded as more meaningful than the
individual. With their traditional ther
youth to share emotions and values. I
point of view of a group that worked
goals. For their songs the Wandervöge
ries, rejecting contemporary and ron
erally scored for one voice only.¹⁷ As

on themselves to display an appropriate journey undertaken to visit the German community upon their fellow countrymen, set forth of Germany were interested in complaints, and they vowed to the people back home.⁸ These frequent trips to other hard-pressed in Empire. How markedly this history, which describes the supranationalization to join itself with nature on the basis of spontaneity.⁹

triotic, on the one hand, and identified to be exemplified in other celebrating the pompous and popular anniversary of the Battle of Sedan, German origin. The celebration of popular. Here was a ritual that of group participation, of concern in the Volk.¹⁰ A typical celebration fire in a selected romantic spot. A true spirit of the German people, ancestry, and exhort the youth to was followed by singing, after rededication to Germanic values, motto, "To maintain oneself in spite expressed a revolutionary dynamism of the modernity of the bourgeoisie of a vital union with romantic

continued in other fields as well, Fischer fused the influence of seven Riehl and Langbehn, with the of Karl May, a famous German of American Indians. From these romantic and simultaneously idealists like "Old Schatterhand" and were the epitome of vitality, chivalry with a sense of exploration it was virile as well as virtuous.¹² his "idealism of deeds" at work. he wanted to create an identity idealism that would arise spontane-

ously out of the contact between youth and the landscape. Roaming, wandering through the countryside, was to provide the substructure of such an idealism. It would familiarize the youth with what Riehl had preached so avidly: an intimate knowledge of one's native land, an acquaintance with the customs and aspirations of the simple peasant folk, and the perception of the intimate relationship between the present and tradition. Fischer thought that this would produce a "living contact" with the Volk heritage that would go deeper than anything to be gained from merely looking at national monuments.¹⁴ Here his Wandervögel would find that context in which their idealism of deeds would become operative.

Interestingly enough, the Wandervögel's love of nature sharply contrasted with that depicted in the idyllic scenes which, as children, they must have seen in their homes. For them it was not a pastoral union with a benign force in nature. Rather it was a conquest of, as well as a fusion with, a vital and elemental essence. Only where two comparable energies were at work could a fair merger take place, could the appropriate fusion of individual into the whole be manifest. Georg Götsch, an early Wandervögel leader, aptly described the idea behind this submergence when he stated, in his description of the Siberian landscape, that after his journey there he beheld the "great unities and encompassing elements" of nature everywhere he looked.¹⁶ He was not speaking of the sentimental aspects of a sitting-room nature scene, but of the harshness and independence of an elemental nature. Both Frank Fischer, one of the movement's most important theoreticians, and Götsch stressed the idea that hardiness and nature went hand in hand,¹⁶ a concept that was in many ways similar to Fontane's description of the Prussian landscape and its role in the shaping of a stalwart character. This note of physical and emotional toughness permeated the ideals of the Youth Movement and helped shape the concepts of physical beauty which, in turn, were given functional roles in the ideal of German youth.

A further reflection of the young people's desire to achieve unity in a common cause was their love of polyphonic music. The immense popularity of Frank Fischer's collection of German folk songs, first published in 1905, demonstrated that the group function was regarded as more meaningful than the self-awareness of the isolated individual. With their traditional themes, the folk songs enabled the youth to share emotions and values. They described events from the point of view of a group that worked in harmony toward common goals. For their songs the Wandervögel went back to earlier centuries, rejecting contemporary and romantic tunes, which were generally scored for one voice only.¹⁷ As in the fusion of the individual

with nature, here too there was a subordination to the virtues of a greater good. The individual was circumscribed by forces that gave him identity—not in the abstract, but in a living community of tradition. Folk songs, like roaming through the countryside, were not merely romantic forms of expression; both stimulated a community of purpose and, through a merging with nature and tradition, a community of the soul.

Though these methods of achieving group identity seem simple and innocent, there was another aspect which became problematical and controversial. Again it was Blüher who pointed to it. In his book *Wandervögel as an Erotic Phenomenon* (1912), which gained notoriety because some thought he was accusing the Youth Movement of encouraging homosexual relations in its ranks, Blüher described the role played in the movement by what he called Eros. While for him Eros certainly meant a sexual attraction between men, these drives did not necessarily lead to an overt display of affection, nor did they culminate in physical sexual relations. Instead, the Eros impulse worked, socially and culturally, to deepen friendships between males and to increase the cohesion of a male group. Basing his argument on his own observations and somewhat influenced by the theories of Freud, Blüher claimed that men who stand in close relationship to one another inevitably display homosexual impulses which, however, are sublimated in the form of surplus energy. This vital force, not finding a physical or organic release, eventually finds expression in true creativity which centers on the *Männerbund*, the society of men.¹⁸ As evidence, Blüher listed several factors he observed among the Wandervögel. First, there was the *charisma* of the leaders, that captivating quality possessed by the exceptional few, the most imaginative, creative, and attractive personalities. Second, there was the ideal of male beauty, which found expression in the admiration for the muscular and lithe Germanic types. And third, there was the exclusion of women (who nonetheless founded their own organizations).

How serious were Blüher's findings and what connection did they have with the Volkish ideology? In terms of the ideal of male beauty the connection was obvious, as may be seen from our analysis in previous chapters. The Wandervögel journals were filled with descriptions of the ideal Germanic man; that given by Carl Bösch, another leader of the movement, may stand as typical. It defined a true Germanic personality as one which possesses an "instinctive" quality linking his soul to nature and the Volk. In addition, he must have that instinct for beauty and form through which he will want to steel his body and make it beautiful.¹⁹ Though this concentration on the phys-

ically strong and beautiful was a artificiality and hypocrisy in sex deep-seated shame of the naked bo functional place in the lives of the ir a conscious ideal of male beauty am paintings of Fidos, which were re ment's journals. Moreover, this ce with strength and activism, with th of Blüher and others, the idea of th vated to a general principle not or well. As such it will play an impor was one of the ideals of the Youth / for the majority of the Wandervö purely sexual meaning which Blüher To be sure, Wilhelm Jansen, who su to encourage the development of a and nude bathing ("light and air bat sexuality by rival leaders in the n physical ideal described by Bösch r respectable Volkish paper praised t the Youth Movement and as a parar closeness to nature and the Volk.²¹ form, centered, as it was, upon the the Eros of male membership reflect role of women in society and in th their own branch of the Wanderv cepted as an authentic expression o the First World War did mixed gro

But there was a more significant membership and beauty, and that v principles of organization. The V impressed with the Wandervögel's their own elitist ideas in operation.] which the youth were able to organ strong leadership, while holding the common ideology, appeared as an capitalist class society. To one leade War amidst the ruins of the shatt seemed to be the only remaining tri ganization. It transcended the dichot oriented capitalist society and the ce that it incorporated the best of bot Volk, and community.²² The You

is a subordination to the virtues of a circumscribed by forces that gave it, but in a living community of tracing through the countryside, were not less; both stimulated a community living with nature and tradition, a com-

chieving group identity seem simple aspect which became problematical Blüher who pointed to it. In his book *Phänomenon* (1912), which gained notoriety by accusing the Youth Movement of its in its ranks, Blüher described the what he called Eros. While for him attraction between men, these drives were not display of affection, nor did they relations. Instead, the Eros impulse to deepen friendships between males in a male group. Basing his argument somewhat influenced by the theories of a who stand in close relationship to homosexual impulses which, however, surplus energy. This vital force, not released, eventually finds expression in the *Männerbund*, the society of several factors he observed among was the *charisma* of the leaders, that the exceptional few, the most important personalities. Second, there was the and expression in the admiration for types. And third, there was the excellent founded their own organiza-

things and what connection did they In terms of the ideal of male beauty may be seen from our analysis in pre-war journals were filled with descriptions that given by Carl Bösch, another as typical. It defined a true German possesses an "instinctive" quality Volk. In addition, he must have that strength which he will want to steel his strength this concentration on the phys-

ically strong and beautiful was a protest against the bourgeoisie's artificiality and hypocrisy in sexual matters, as indicated by their deep-seated shame of the naked body, it had both an aesthetic and a functional place in the lives of the individual Wandervögel. It became a conscious ideal of male beauty among the youth as portrayed in the paintings of Fidus, which were reproduced in most of the movement's journals. Moreover, this concept of beauty was associated with strength and activism, with the "idealism of deeds." In the hands of Blüher and others, the idea of the *Bund*, the male society, was elevated to a general principle not only of life but of government as well. As such it will play an important role in our story. The *Bund* was one of the ideals of the Youth Movement, but, in all probability, for the majority of the Wandervögel it was largely devoid of the purely sexual meaning which Blüher alone had superimposed upon it. To be sure, Wilhelm Jansen, who succeeded Fischer as leader, sought to encourage the development of an ideal type through gymnastics and nude bathing ("light and air baths").²⁰ He was accused of homosexuality by rival leaders in the movement and expelled. But the physical ideal described by Bösch remained. As late as 1924, a highly respectable Volkish paper praised the love of nudity as the core of the Youth Movement and as a paramount expression of their genuine closeness to nature and the Volk.²¹ However, this love of physical form, centered, as it was, upon the male body, in conjunction with the Eros of male membership reflected a negative attitude toward the role of women in society and in the Volk. Even when girls formed their own branch of the Wandervögel they were not readily accepted as an authentic expression of the ideals of youth. Only after the First World War did mixed groups come into existence.

But there was a more significant aspect of the emphasis on male membership and beauty, and that was the effect it had on Volkish principles of organization. The Volkish movement was especially impressed with the Wandervögel's *Bund* formation. Here they saw their own elitist ideas in operation. The *Bund* structure, by means of which the youth were able to organize their members on the basis of strong leadership, while holding them together by ties of Eros and common ideology, appeared as an alternative to both Marxism and capitalist class society. To one leader, writing after the First World War amidst the ruins of the shattered nation, the *Bund* structure seemed to be the only remaining true German form of political organization. It transcended the dichotomy between individualistically oriented capitalist society and the collective emphasis of socialism in that it incorporated the best of both by basing itself on leadership, Volk, and community.²² The Youth Movement's concept of the

just before the war, did most to propel the ideology in this direction, and with significant results. In 1913, in a famous article, he asserted that the Youth Movement was the only agency capable of restoring Germany to health. The age of science and reason which had done Germany serious injury had to be transformed into an age of culture, which under present conditions could be found only in the precepts of Germanism. Langbehn's prescription for a nation of artists found its echo here. Omitting reference to either Bismarck or Frederick the Great, Breuer cited Kant instead in his appeal for a Volkish commitment. The philosopher's principles of civic duty were read as Volkish cultural imperatives. The Volk was an organic growth basic to any society. The Wandervögel should recognize their duty and become the conscience of the Volk.²⁹ And this was the Wandervögel's conception of their task when they gave a cool reception to the ultra-patriotic proposals in the debates leading up to the Meissner meeting. It also formed the basis for their attitude toward Jews, and explains as well their soul-searching vacillation with respect to the humanist proposals of Gustav Wyneken.

Though the Meissner resolution of 1913 was vague in all respects, calling only for truth and responsibility, the underlying ideological currents of the Youth Movement became more explicit when faced with questions of immediate relevance. Such an opportunity arose in the framing of the policy on admitting Jews into the Wandervögel and in defining the role of the Jews relative to Germans. It was precisely in this area, in the confrontation with the Jewish question, that the Wandervögel gave expression to the Volkish substance which had underlain their ideological presumptions from the very start.

The exclusion of a Jewish girl from membership in the female branch of the Wandervögel in 1913 thrust the Jewish question into the open. This incident, however, was not the first of its kind. Rather, it served as a catalyst in opening up formal discussions of the issue after a long history of such incidents that had colored the approach of many of the Wandervögel groups. Now all of the Wandervögel chapters were compelled to formulate a definite policy. Essentially four positions were brought forward in the national and local debates that followed in the next few years. Some opted for allowing assimilated Jews to participate in the movement; another faction, vociferous and increasingly popular after 1918 and supported by the Austrians, held that Jews were racially inferior and therefore pariahs; a third point of view, endorsed by many of the leaders, favored recognizing the Jews as an autonomous and separate Volk that had merits similar to those of the German Volk; finally, a smaller group favored granting the Jews essentially unrestricted admittance.

But, however the final judgment was reached, the confrontation with the Wandervögel's consciousness of the V

Those who would accept the as-
garded Jews as a whole as culturally a
mans. But they granted the possibility
change. One writer emphasized this
Jews who could count several genera
be excluded if, in their appearance
"Jewishness."³⁰ Obviously, the phys
the Germanic criteria were very mu
far removed from the liberal idea of
this respect the Youth Movement clea
doors on the Jew as a Jew in Germany
crack through which Jews who had
themselves, who had grasped the uni
acter, its landscape and tradition, coul
volt of German youth.

The exception made for the Germ
some moment, for it meant that a Voll
out a racist outlook that automatically
in the youth organization or the nat
chapters and Wandervögel groups, the
finders), a Volkish youth group esta
policy of accepting assimilated Jews.
mitted Jews on this basis. Nevertheless
a pro-assimilationist Jewish periodical
Jews on the basis of Germanization at
who are more Nordic than the Nord
made fun of all the same."³¹ Since the
tained the cult of beautiful Nordic ma
were not likely to be accepted. This at
the ideology was always determinant ir
tion even among those groups that rejec

The idea that the Jew was racially c
man Volk was first presented to the Wa
the First World War. Supported by
movement's leadership, the *Wanderve*
the Volk and the youth organization in
dominated by two of the faction's the
Fulda, a young teacher, and Dankwart
the youth to become familiar with the w
Lanz von Liebenfels, an intimate memb

the ideology in this direction, in a famous article, he asserted the agency capable of restoring peace and reason which had done harm into an age of culture, to be found only in the precepts for a nation of artists found either Bismarck or Frederick the Great. The appeal for a Volkish commitment to civic duty were read as Volkish as an organic growth basic to and recognize their duty and beyond this was the Wandervögel's gave a cool reception to the ultra-right up to the Meissner meeting, and toward Jews, and explains with respect to the humanist

1913 was vague in all respects, the underlying ideological became more explicit when faced with the Jewish question, that the Volkish substance which options from the very start. Membership in the female thrust the Jewish question into was not the first of its kind. Setting up formal discussions of incidents that had colored the groups. Now all of the Wandervögel formulate a definite policy. Forward in the national and a few years. Some opted for assimilation in the movement; another faction after 1918 and supported the racially inferior and therefore led by many of the leaders, famous and separate Volk that German Volk; finally, a smaller racially unrestricted admittance.

But, however the final judgment was rendered, for the many local chapters the confrontation with the Jewish question sharpened the Wandervögel's consciousness of the Volk.

Those who would accept the assimilated Jew nevertheless regarded Jews as a whole as culturally and racially different from Germans. But they granted the possibility that the exceptional Jew might change. One writer emphasized this point when he stated that those Jews who could count several generations in the country could not be excluded if, in their appearance and soul, they had shed their "Jewishness."³⁰ Obviously, the physical qualification here shows that the Germanic criteria were very much in force. This was, indeed, far removed from the liberal idea of a German-Jewish symbiosis. In this respect the Youth Movement clearly reflected the closing of the doors on the Jew as a Jew in Germany. There remained only a slight crack through which Jews who had acclimatized and transformed themselves, who had grasped the uniqueness of the German character, its landscape and tradition, could enter to participate in the revolt of German youth.

The exception made for the Germanized Jew was, however, of some moment, for it meant that a Volkish ideology could exist without a racist outlook that automatically barred Jews from membership in the youth organization or the nation. Along with several local chapters and Wandervögel groups, the Neue Pfadfinder (New Pathfinders), a Volkish youth group established in 1920, adopted the policy of accepting assimilated Jews. Its South German branch admitted Jews on this basis. Nevertheless, it was not all that simple. As a pro-assimilationist Jewish periodical contended, the acceptance of Jews on the basis of Germanization affected "only those Jews . . . who are more Nordic than the Nordic Aryans. Secretly they are made fun of all the same."³¹ Since the Neue Pfadfinder also entertained the cult of beautiful Nordic man, Jews who looked "Jewish" were not likely to be accepted. This attitude strongly indicates that the ideology was always determinant in defining the limits of toleration even among those groups that rejected total exclusion of Jews.

The idea that the Jew was racially distinguishable from the German Volk was first presented to the Wandervögel in the years before the First World War. Supported by only a small segment of the movement's leadership, the *Wandervögel Führerzeitung* discussed the Volk and the youth organization in racial terms. This paper was dominated by two of the faction's theoreticians, Friedrich Ludwig Fulda, a young teacher, and Dankwart Gerlach. Gerlach exhorted the youth to become familiar with the work and thought of the racist Lanz von Liebenfels, an intimate member of the Guido von List cir-

cle, which maintained the existence of a mystical Aryan race.³² These racists advocated that the racially different and inferior Jews be refused membership in the Wandervögel, that their own organizations be denied equal status with the German groups, and, in fact, that the Jews be ostracized from the company of youth and the Volk. They based the correctness of their attitude on an instinctively Germanic anti-Jewish prejudice; as one writer put it: "A Jew is an impossibility at the festival of the changing sun."³³ Fulda's and Gerlach's arguments differed little from the general anti-Semitic arguments of the racist element of the Volkish movement and they need not be reiterated here. Suffice it to say, though, that at that time most of the Wandervögel rejected the extremism of their approach. By and large, the Wandervögel settled for a seemingly more harmonious coexistence which they thought would be fair to both peoples.

The third view on the Jewish question had its origins in the social thought of the founder of the Wandervögel, Karl Fischer, who conceived of the Jews as a separate but equal Volk. Consequently, he argued, they had the right and obligation to stand by their nature, heritage, and tradition—in short their peoplehood—just as the Germans did. On these terms he showed respect for the Jews—but not as Germans, as a separate Volk.³⁴ This point of view prevailed throughout a large section of the Youth Movement and was reflected in the more comprehensive theory which held that humanity consisted of separate Volks, each possessing unique traits.

It was this section of the Youth Movement that for a time displayed a certain sympathy with Zionism, which it recognized as the peculiar expression of the Jews' longing for their own Volk. This attitude was not unique or radical, for it enjoyed some following in Volkish circles at large. For example, Karl Bückmann, a Volkish writer, approvingly cited Martin Buber's *Three Speeches on Judaism*. For Bückmann, Buber's discourse on the Volk and blood ties was sufficient evidence that the Jewish ethos, like that of the Germans, was rooted in the Volk.³⁵ Within such a conceptual framework the usual anti-Semitic agitation became irrelevant, since the Jewish problem had found its logical solution in Zionism. Jews should be encouraged to draw together around their traditions and beliefs; this would naturally produce a separation of the two peoples. These views do stand in direct and sharp contrast with the low opinion of the Jews held by racial theorists such as Chamberlain. But Bückmann was not alone in his opinion and the question continued to be raised as to whether a clean break between the Germans and the Jews would not put everything in order for both.

Interestingly enough, the argument had its adherents not only

among German youth but among the Jews as well. For example, later, Moses Calvary, one of the spokesmen, asserted in 1916 that from their roots if they adopted a policy to encourage the cultivation of clothing which they wanted to transform (Blue and White), the Jewish Youth Movement was dedicated to the creation of a new Volk, not dissimilar to what the German Youth Movement was for its Volk. Calvary, believing it profoundly tied to the Volk, excluded the German Youth Movement the way the landscape, traditions, and beliefs of the Jewish people were. Calvary knew that what was bound to produce a new Volk in Palestine in the early years of the Jewish Youth Movement was the Jewish youth experienced similar inner conflicts which arose immediately instead of a distant land.

Undoubtedly, certain concepts indebted to the Germanic ideals, which were equally valid for the Blau Weisse, about his days in the Blau Weisse the heroic rather than Jewish coexistence of the Youth Movement appealing to his part of the Wandervögel not only were also influenced by work of the *Jüdische Jugend* and even Schul beauty.³⁶ Organizationally the group was a *Bund*, and replaced its earlier identity and natural" concepts of movement of Jewish youth, attempt to assimilate certain aspects of the German Youth Movement into its theory. Another instance of German-Jewish cooperation was rejected by the vast assimilationist faction of the Wandervögel. This policy, the more liberal faction of the nat-

* SMCN - book

of a mystical Aryan race.³² These different and inferior Jews be re-vögel, that their own organizations German groups, and, in fact, that the many of youth and the Volk. They made on an instinctively Germanic put it: "A Jew is an impossibility."³³ Fulda's and Gerlach's argument anti-Semitic arguments of the movement and they need not be reit-ugh, that at that time most of the am of their approach. By and large, seemingly more harmonious coexist-fair to both peoples.

question had its origins in the social Wandervögel, Karl Fischer, who con-but equal Volk. Consequently, he obligation to stand by their nature, their peoplehood—just as the Ger-red respect for the Jews—but not³⁴ This point of view prevailed youth Movement and was reflected which held that humanity con-ssing unique traits.

Movement that for a time displayed which it recognized as the peculiar their own Volk. This attitude was ed some following in Volkish cir-Bückmann, a Volkish writer, ap-*three Speeches on Judaism*. For the Volk and blood ties was suffi-s, like that of the Germans, was conceptual framework the usual evant, since the Jewish problem nism. Jews should be encouraged tions and beliefs; this would nat-vo peoples. These views do stand low opinion of the Jews held by

But Bückmann was not alone in ed to be raised as to whether a d the Jews would not put every-

ent had its adherents not only

among German youth but among Jewish youth as well. Among the latter, Moses Calvary, one of the Jewish Youth Movement's most able spokesmen, asserted in 1916 that Jews would indeed sever themselves from their roots if they adopted a German identity and outlook.³⁵ To encourage the cultivation of closer ties with the Jewish traditions, which they wanted to transform into national traits, Blau Weiss (Blue and White), the Jewish Youth Movement, was established. It was dedicated to the creation of a Jewish nation, but, singularly enough, not dissimilar to what the German Youth Movement desired for its Volk. Calvary, believing the individual to be inseparably and profoundly tied to the Volk, exhorted the Jews to learn from the German Youth Movement the ways of achieving close identity with the landscape, traditions, and beliefs of the Volk.³⁷ But it was the German landscape they learned to know and identify with—a development that was bound to produce conflicts within those who believed Palestine to be the proper environment for Jews. Moses Calvary drew attention to this ambivalence when he stated, in a remark to a leading Zionist, that his dreams "ripened under pine trees and not under palms."³⁸ Yet Calvary was a thorough Zionist, and he left Germany for Palestine in the early 1920's. Nonetheless, many Jewish youth experienced similar inner conflicts regardless of their deep Zionist faith, conflicts which arose from an identity with the real and immediate instead of a distant landscape.

Undoubtedly, certain concepts of Jewish nationhood were greatly indebted to the Germanic ideals; what was true for Buber's *Speeches* was equally valid for the Blau Weiss. One former member, reminiscing about his days in the Blau Weiss, recalled that it was the ideal of the heroic rather than Jewish confraternity that made the Jewish Youth Movement appealing to him. Moreover, the Jewish counterpart of the Wandervögel not only accepted the heroic ideal; its members were also influenced by works such as Conrad Ferdinand Meyer's *Jürg Jenatsch* and even Schulze-Naumburg's works on Nordic beauty.³⁹ Organizationally the group constituted itself as an *Orden*, a *Brud*, and replaced its earlier ideas of democracy with the "more efficient and natural" concepts of leadership. Thus, this important movement of Jewish youth, attempting to evolve a deep-seated Zionist identity, assimilated certain aspects of the ideology of the German Youth Movement into its theoretical framework. Here we have another instance of German-Jewish symbiosis, but the Zionist solution was rejected by the vast assimilationist liberal Jewish majority.

Admittance without regard to race or creed was the official attitude of the Wandervögel. This policy, however, was supported by only the more liberal faction of the national leadership and a small per-

centage of the local chapters. The integrationists first presented their arguments in 1916 in a debate on the Jewish question that was carried on in the organ of the Freideutsche Jugend, the university organization which united all former Wandervögel. All points of view received a hearing. Articles opposing anti-Semitism were printed alongside a reprint of Lagarde's views and articles which attacked Jews. In this debate the position of the liberals took shape, especially in the articles of the movement's highly respected Knud Alhorn. He asserted that a healthy and well-run organization with a Volkish emphasis could best be secured by the maintenance of strict standards of selection within the individual groups. These standards were to be defined by the needs of the group and judged by how well they performed; not through the indiscriminate application of racial criteria. Accordingly, these practical standards would be able to provide the best guarantees against infiltration by foreign and divisive influences.⁴⁰ Alhorn's argument, in the end, became the basis for the leadership's refusal to demand the outright exclusion of Jews.

Ample evidence exists to show that this debate was essentially a review of decisions which had been implemented locally throughout the early years of the Wandervögel—decisions which were to pursue their set course in the future. Within the individual chapters the picture was not very bright. In fact, according to an inquiry made in 1913-14, 92 per cent of the local chapters reported no Jewish members. Even more revealing was the fact that 84 per cent had specifically adopted resolutions excluding Jews from membership.⁴¹ In the light of this, the leaders' decision not to prevent Jewish membership had little meaning, since they also refused to interfere in the affairs of the local groups.⁴² And these local groups, whatever their basis for discrimination—race, autonomy for different Volk identities, or assimilation—set the pattern for future development. Meanwhile, the pressure from the racist-oriented Austrian Youth Movement had steadily increased. The Austrian organization had officially adopted the Aryan paragraph (admitting Aryans only) as early as 1911, and even as late as 1918 they castigated their German brothers for having "foreign blood in their midst."⁴³

As the basic Volkish tendencies were reflected in the resolutions of the Jewish question, so they also found expression in the refusal by the Wandervögel to rewrite their ideological creed in a humanist direction. The rebuff received by Gustav Wyneken in his attempt to influence the movement is significant in that it exemplified the integrity of the movement's Volkish roots. After breaking with Lietz and founding his own school at Wickersdorf, Wyneken became interested in the Youth Movement through reading Blüher's books. He

believed that his own ideas essentially and that where there were differences favor. He too entertained the concept of expressing itself culturally and only means of regaining an authentic contemporary mechanization of life: nature.⁴⁴ Here the similarity between ceased, for Wyneken had in mind means.

Wyneken spoke at the Meissner meeting blatantly patriotic exhortations employ more significantly, he also rejected the of reference for deeds, values, and German youth to refrain from committing Volk, he presented them with a different instead to keep their eyes and ideals from, the highest of human values. For here as freedom in an individualistic sense person's individuality toward the high human spirit could attain and that the a Wyneken thus presented a Hegelian alternative Volk, an alternative that rejected the Volk but also as the repository of the *Geist*. the *Geist*, both human and absolute, development, furthered through a critical had broken with Lietz) and a creative movement of a collectivity of individuals would develop an ever more profound absolute values and not narrow patriotism the Volk would play central roles.⁴⁵

In his effort to draw the youth into Wyneken aligned himself with the nasium student newspaper *Der Anführer* he found like-minded youth who agreed and on discarding the Volkish framework critic Walter Benjamin, who later in his position, called upon youth, under the present critically and engage them commensurate with future needs.⁴⁷ Whether supported the development of a tri Eros could emerge out of the confining *Anfang* were filled with views reminiscent of the early Youth Movement

Volkish ideas. Indeed, the ideals of Hermann Lietz, who had dismissed the young Wyneken for differing with him, had triumphed.⁵⁵ They proved to be closer to the mainstream of the ideology of the youth than the revolutionary concepts of Wyneken.

This is not surprising. Two thirds of those involved in the Youth Movement came from a middle-class background, at the very least, and the interests of such youth had always been channeled toward national concerns. Throughout the First World War, the youth had wholeheartedly supported the struggle led and rationalized by their elders, whom they had tried to repudiate two decades earlier. Then they failed to rally to the revolution that ushered in prospects of democracy. As one high school student explained to Wyneken, they were merely boys, unfamiliar with freedom, its responsibilities and its application, and therefore unreceptive to his ideas.⁵⁶ The older bourgeois youth were outrightly hostile. Like the Volkish movement, these youths did want a revolution, but one oriented toward roots and Germanism, not toward the upheaval of the existing order, not even toward the uncharted seas of the human spirit. They wanted to end their alienation by finding roots, not through a flight forward such as Wyneken advocated.

In short then, the Youth Movement was a bourgeois phenomenon that could not discard its class interests and fears.⁵⁷ Though the youth rebelled, theirs was a futile attempt to cast off their essential limitations. Their achievements in the cultural field amounted to only a minor victory that did not alter the alignment of political or economic forces. Their radical turn toward the right only reinforced their anti-modernist position, and in the particular juncture of events and circumstances that made up the Weimar Republic, it placed them in the camp of anti-democratic thought. Thus it is erroneous to absolve the Youth Movement of all and every guilt for the Nazi catastrophe. This has been done, however, by historians who have essentially exonerated the movement. Yet hundreds of thousands of youngsters passed through the Youth Movement, and many of them found it not very difficult to accommodate themselves to the ideological propositions of the Nazis. Their youthful experience, it seems, had not accustomed them to a form of government which was incompatible with the new faith.

That is not to say that the officials of the Wandervögel were on amicable terms with the Nazis, at least not during the 1920's. In fact, during the years of the Republic, most members of the Youth Movement were openly hostile toward National Socialism. The majority of the Wandervögel did not share the racism of the Nazi youth, and the National Socialists, once they geared their drive for

power and mass support, frowned upon Eros and exclusiveness.⁵⁸

Whatever its later relations with Na little doubt of the Youth Movement's V which was combined with a rejection. Indeed, the youth looked beyond bou ment, which they considered artificial that their own movement supposedly of German youth regarded the *Bund* (political and social organization, in tu cism and Germanic faith, and held the j contempt. This was an ominous sign fo tions. For the Volkish movement, how and welcome.

The picture we have sketched of the ology on German youth is significant dents, school reformers, and the Yoult the New Romanticism and directed it Whole generations thought that reide expressed in the Germanic ideology wa crisis. Now the further question arises mediate generation of the war and po ideological outlook. What of the unive Did they, as custodians of a long huma to the historical trends we have describe

* The Nazis at
by Hitler's date
work w parls

* Hitler perceived this possibility
Scene w Baldur von Schirach

of Hermann Lietz, who had dis-
satisfied with him, had triumphed.⁵⁶
Mainstream of the ideology of the
Leopolds of Wyneken.

Most of those involved in the Youth
Movement had a middle-class background, at the very least,
and always been channeled toward
the First World War, the youth had
struggle led and rationalized by their
experience two decades earlier. Then
the notion that ushered in prospects of
independent explained to Wyneken, they
with freedom, its responsibilities and
unreceptive to his ideas.⁵⁸ The older
generation hostile. Like the Volkish move-
ment, resolution, but one oriented toward
the upheaval of the existing order,
loss of the human spirit. They wanted
roots, not through a flight forward

movement was a bourgeois phenomenon
interests and fears.⁵⁷ Though the youth
ought to cast off their essential limita-
tions, a cultural field amounted to only a
re-alignment of political or economic
and the right only reinforced their
the particular juncture of events and
Weimar Republic, it placed them in
light. Thus it is erroneous to absolve
every guilt for the Nazi catastrophe.
Historians who have essentially ex-
tended the thousands of youngsters
movement, and many of them found it not
themselves to the ideological proposi-
tion. If experience, it seems, had not ac-
quainted them with government which was incompatible

officials of the Wandervogel were on
at least not during the 1920's. In fact,
public, most members of the Youth
Movement toward National Socialism. The
did not share the racism of the Nazi
movement, once they geared their drive for

was this possibility
Edgar von Schwanitz

power and mass support, frowned upon the *Bund* concept and its
Eros and exclusiveness.⁵⁸

Whatever its later relations with National Socialism, there can be
little doubt of the Youth Movement's Volkish orientation of thought,
which was combined with a rejection of the parliamentary process.
Indeed, the youth looked beyond bourgeois representative govern-
ment, which they considered artificial and lacking the genuineness
that their own movement supposedly possessed. Whole generations
of German youth regarded the *Bund* of males as a genuine form of
political and social organization, in tune with their New Romanti-
cism and Germanic faith, and held the parliamentary process in utter
contempt. This was an ominous sign for the Republic and its institu-
tions. For the Volkish movement, however, the ideas were familiar
and welcome.

The picture we have sketched of the influence of the Volkish ide-
ology on German youth is significant. Teachers, high school stu-
dents, school reformers, and the Youth Movement institutionalized
the New Romanticism and directed it at a most vulnerable target.
Whole generations thought that reidentification with the Volk as
expressed in the Germanic ideology was the solution to the German
crisis. Now the further question arises as to how the older, the im-
mediate generation of the war and postwar eras received the same
ideological outlook. What of the university students and professors?
Did they, as custodians of a long humanist tradition, remain immune
to the historical trends we have described so far?

* The Nazis who are brothers
by Hitler's determination to
work w parliament.

sioned both a pro-Protestant and on, shortly after it was established invited in a more exclusive Germanism gained the upper hand and discarded and largely replaced by eral Volkish aspirations also fused was reflected in the emblem of the ung man stretching his arms from s symbolized man; man as he was er of his will linking him to the

Verein placed its Volkish aspiration. For them anti-Semitism in its the weapons to combat the enemy same time objectified the foe in nor people. A unique view of this play performed by the Verein in n of the German nation and the ictor in the play is a Polish Jew eternal Jew, who narrates the rise esies the eventual decline of Germany in his hasty forecast and ex the desert, rootless, nomadic—the nded with a *tableau vivant* which many" as the wave of the future.⁷ entral to the Verein and the fra program of anti-Jewish prejudice, Jewish students, and even violent by student organizations. They reasons long after Stöcker and ort. And though under the Na iticize its earlier years as lacking anti-Semitic feeling, the *mea culpa* contrary, the Verein had been From the very first, it exhorted measures against Jews and to of their programs.⁹

been among the last to be critical of Jews had not been a central conventions of 1882 and 1886, of singularly few Jews to members, who were in close contact acted more quickly in refusing

to pledge Jews. And their action there was to affect the subsequent history of anti-Semitic measures in Germany. They provided the impetus for a more accelerated program, though their singular role should not be exaggerated, both north and south, since the soil was fertile for the seeds of anti-Semitism.¹⁰

However, it will be instructive to take a brief glance at this southern neighbor of Germany. There the racial outlook assumed greater proportions and significance in the light of the minority status held by the Germans. Of the population of Austria-Hungary, the Germans constituted only a small percentage, with Slavs, Magyars, and other Central European peoples comprising the majority. Even the Jews made up a sizable portion of the population, especially in Vienna, where there were more Eastern European immigrants than in all of Germany. Vienna, Guido von List's "Holy City" and the place where Hitler first received his anti-Jewish impressions, together with Linz, Hitler's birthplace, stood in the center of the strife—with Linz, perhaps accidentally, chosen as the location where fraternities met to pass their racist and Germanic resolutions.

The role played by Stöcker in Germany was performed in Austria by Georg Ritter von Schönerer. He also applied himself to student affairs and drove them in a Volkish direction. Prior to the 1870's, Austrian universities had been relatively free of anti-Semitism, but this tranquillity was shattered by 1889, when the fraternities adopted the Aryan paragraph as a criterion for membership.¹¹ The move had other ramifications as the racial attitude spread and engulfed the whole gamut of student relationships. Near the end of the century, when the question was posed whether a Jew could render satisfaction in dueling, many students contended that the Jew could not be a partner in a duel since he had no honor to defend. Though it might seem absurd and insignificant in our own day, at that time dueling was a major symbol of status and those who could not engage in it found themselves excluded from the proper society. The fact that in 1896 the general assembly of Austrian fraternities at Waidhof officially endorsed the view forbidding Jews the honor of challenge is startling proof of the extent to which the anti-Semitic stereotype had penetrated the social elite among Austrian German students.¹² Yet the actual application of the Waidhofer resolution was slow, for by 1914 it had been accepted completely by only 29 out of 44 fraternities.¹³ But P. G. J. Pulzer is correct when he states that for many of the young Austrians of the 1930's Nazism seemed merely a logical application of the slogans which their fathers had been mouthing since their fraternity days.¹⁴ Much the same would hold true for Germany.

The Austrian pace, once started, was duplicated in Germany during the 1890's. By 1894, Jews had been so effectively barred from fraternities that at the general convention of the university organizations they were no longer counted as constituent members.¹⁵ Yet the exclusion in Germany differed from that in Austria in one respect: while the south applied its restrictions even in the case of baptized Jews, the north still allowed Jewish converts to Christianity into its ranks. This clemency, however, was of short duration. In 1919 the German fraternities subscribed to the Eisenach Resolution, whose racist basis decreed that baptism and spiritual conversion could not mitigate the inherited racial divisions. Then, in 1920, the German fraternities also denied the Jew the honor of dueling.¹⁶ It was not long thereafter that the fraternities could pride themselves on being *Judenrein*, and the corps followed suit.

In Germany the students were not content with setting their own house in order; they wanted to do the same for the nation as a whole; they wanted to take up the Volkish revolution. Not to be outdone by the anti-Semites of the Volkish movement, in 1880 they drew up a supplementary petition to the Anti-Semitic Petition which had gathered 200,000 signatures in support of excluding Jews from government jobs, public life, and the professions. The role of the students was the more insidious in that it was conducted under the banner of impartiality and objectivity. They declared themselves better judges of the Jewish question since they had no axes to grind and no economic competitors to eliminate, or, as they put it, they had no special interests and "jealousy of Jewish competition [did] not apply to us."¹⁷ Surely this was a strange claim considering the close competition waged by the bourgeoisie for professional posts and economic advancement in all areas. The success of the student petition was especially great in northern Germany, where, relative to the population, it gathered a large number of signatures—400 in Göttingen alone.¹⁸

Liberal students, of course, contested the propriety of these petitions and circulated their own disclaimers. Their petition, asking for no favored treatment of Jews and calling for moderation on the issues, did less well in Göttingen, finishing with 180 signatures. But it is typical that even these liberal students (as they called themselves), opposing the Anti-Semitic Petition, denounced "pushy" Jewish students who demonstrated the Jewish question "ad oculos." Moreover, they conceded the existence of racial differences between the Jews and themselves.¹⁹ Can there be a clearer indication of the deep penetration of the Volkish ideology among students?

Manifestations of anti-Semitic feeling increased with the years.

From 1907 onward, *Die Mitteilungsblätter* devoted to fighting anti-Semitism, began with student affairs. There was much to regret when Walter Kohler, the distinguished le class read the commentary by Willamovsk was greeted with derisive remarks from noyed by the response, he mentioned that the students broke into thunderous appl spirit had bloomed into an antagonism th of schoolroom differences. It had been en national crisis. In 1922 the threat of a st force to compel the University of Berlin t morial service for the murdered Walthei sporadic and isolated events that had no th Jewish reaction to the measures taken by seriousness of the situation.

From the beginning, Jews reacted to th fraternities by founding their own organiz lished in 1886 at the University of Breslau. read like an indictment, and its validity p century. The Jewish students eloquently prevailing conditions [at the University], cal hatred of the adversary, all those [Jew of independence and personal honor have In their isolation they despair of improvii moving document, mirroring the feeling fifty years later, called a helpless minority the majority. Though under the Nazis the the previous regimes it was just as intens fraternity was a reply to the despair felt academic circles; it was an attempt to acc ing attitudes and to work hopefully for th nity of men at once German and Jewish, i fact that union, after all, was possible w effort.

Their path, however, was beset with dif ish fraternities were ostracized, denied th their honor in dueling, and omitted from ings of the rest of the university communi sity administrations repeatedly dissolved By 1901 the faculty of the University of "the very existence of a Jewish fraternity peace among the students." Though this

was duplicated in Germany during the 19th century so effectively barred from participation of the university organization of its constituent members.¹⁸ Yet the situation that in Austria in one respect: even in the case of baptized converts to Christianity into its of short duration. In 1919 the Eisenach Resolution, whose spiritual conversion could not. Then, in 1920, the German honor of dueling.¹⁹ It was not could pride themselves on being

content with setting their own name for the nation as a whole; revolution. Not to be outdone movement, in 1880 they drew up anti-Semitic Petition which had of excluding Jews from government professions. The role of the student was conducted under the banner they declared themselves better they had no axes to grind and no, as they put it, they had no Jewish competition [did] not ap- peal claim considering the close tie for professional posts and the success of the student petition Germany, where, relative to number of signatures—400 in

ed the propriety of these petitions. Their petition, asking for moderation on the issue, with 180 signatures. But it was (as they called themselves), pronounced "pushy" Jewish student question "ad oculos." More racial differences between the clearer indication of the deep among students? ing increased with the years.

From 1907 onward, *Die Mitteilungsblätter*, the chief Jewish journal devoted to fighting anti-Semitism, became increasingly concerned with student affairs. There was much to report. For example, in 1907, when Walter Kohler, the distinguished legal theorist, suggested his class read the commentary by Willamovsky and Levy, both Jews, he was greeted with derisive remarks from the students. When, annoyed by the response, he mentioned that Levy had been murdered, the students broke into thunderous applause.²⁰ By the 1920's, this spirit had bloomed into an antagonism that transcended the bounds of schoolroom differences. [It had been enlisted in the service of the national crisis. In 1922 the threat of a student riot carried enough force to compel the University of Berlin to cancel its proposed memorial service for the murdered Walther Rathenau.²¹ Were these sporadic and isolated events that had no thread of development? The Jewish reaction to the measures taken by Gentiles documents the seriousness of the situation.

From the beginning, Jews reacted to their exclusion from Gentile fraternities by founding their own organizations. The first was established in 1886 at the University of Breslau. Its appeal for membership read like an indictment, and its validity persisted into the twentieth century. The Jewish students eloquently stated: "Depressed by the prevailing conditions [at the University], embittered by the fanatical hatred of the adversary, all those [Jews] who still have a feeling of independence and personal honor have retired from student life. In their isolation they despair of improving conditions."²² It was a moving document, mirroring the feeling of what Theodor Lessing, fifty years later, called a helpless minority delivered to the hatred of the majority. Though under the Nazis their despair was final, under the previous regimes it was just as intense and tragic. The Jewish fraternity was a reply to the despair felt in the universities and in academic circles; it was an attempt to accommodate to the prevailing attitudes and to work hopefully for the better. For, as a community of men at once German and Jewish, it aspired to symbolize the fact that union, after all, was possible with a little toleration and effort.

Their path, however, was beset with difficulties. Socially the Jewish fraternities were ostracized, denied the satisfaction of defending their honor in dueling, and omitted from formal or informal gatherings of the rest of the university community. Moreover, the university administrations repeatedly dissolved the Jewish organizations. By 1901 the faculty of the University of Heidelberg decreed that "the very existence of a Jewish fraternity is sufficient to endanger peace among the students." Though this was a faculty decision, it

who pressured for such restrictions.²³ They persevered and eventually, after their inception, attained official recognition. The struggle should be sufficient to prove symbiosis among students.

The twentieth century saw a general trend among many as a whole. Yet this did not indicate the same time the social isolation of Jews. For example, the Kyffhäuser Bund, a Jewish question seemed to have receded into directed anti-Semitism by now the ethnic circles.²⁴ On the whole, anti-Semitism emanating from the Volkish section, ascribed to elitist frameworks for imitations, however, were eventually recognized in 1918 an increasing number of Jewish hating partners.²⁵ That this was an exception, is undeniable. But it was not the basis. In other words, it signified the Jews and Germans which had long been a means, an acceptance of a German-

ruptly ended after 1918, when the war more produced a deep crisis. Under the stigma of defeat, and, as was fair at the University of Berlin, they found expression. In the face of this serious situation of the intellectual community to bridge the gap. The Reform Fraternities-Seminitism and engaged in halfhearted efforts together. The Freie Wissenschaftliche Akademische Association), founded between Jew and non-Jew, attempted to German descent into closer relationship was doomed, as the organization be-

jective to turn to an analysis of the difficult student anti-Semitism under the monarchy. It must be remembered that, at least among students, anti-expression of Volkish beliefs. For the acting in the cause of the Volk, the line with their bourgeois sensibili-

ties, these students shied away from socialist ideas. They were not going to wage a struggle against the Wilhelmine state, nor were they honest enough to follow their emotions and join the Youth Movement in the university in the revolt against the bourgeois style of life. And though they sincerely believed the Volk to be an institution above the state, yet, because of their opposition to popular democracy, they could hardly be expected to attack the Emperor—whom, in any case, they believed to be in their own camp. But the Volkish revolution remained in the forefront of possibilities—not, to be sure, under the monarchy, but during the hapless attempts at democracy under the Weimar regime. Consequently, frustrated under the monarchy, the Volkish movement, student and non-student, concentrated on the Jew, a concentration which was continued under the Republic, where it met with greater success. Under democratic rule, a complete turn to the right as well as in a Volkish direction became possible. The regime, more liberal in nature, permitted a great range of opposition, and all sorts of Volkish, anti-republican agitation retained a mantle of respectability. Yet, even here, where discontent could be resolved in a true social revolution, the students kept their Volkish identity and supported agitation against a regime that, to them, symbolized Jewish control.

The revolt against the Jews rather than against social injustices or economic and political forces was an element in the Volkish thinking which Adolf Hitler was to exploit to the fullest. As a sham revolution, it promised much; above all, it precluded a genuine social upheaval. Thus the Jews were crucial foils. In this context the Volkish movement was bound to become popular: smash the Jewish conspiracy and the Volk will bloom forth unhindered. In fact, the elimination of Jews would be accepted as a deed of liberation. Hitler plumed all possibilities, and with devoted, pliable, and acquiescent accomplices even carried out the "anti-Jewish revolution" beyond the belief of those who accepted his promises in *Mein Kampf* at face value.

While the students can be called into account as instigators of many Volkish policies at the universities, they were not alone. The faculty also played its part. In Germany professors tended to be either scholars who withdrew into their own specialty, taking scant notice of the world around them, or men who attempted to play the role of prophets. The first kind of academic wanted only to be left in peace and could hardly be expected to defend freedom or to take stands on issues of the day. The professor as prophet, with very few exceptions indeed, was to be found on the side of the nationalists. After all, they were state employees who had to be confirmed di-

rectly by the government. Like the schoolteachers, they almost naturally drifted into the Volkish camp.

For many, the public image of the professor was set by the historian Heinrich von Treitschke, professor at the University of Berlin, who used the lecture platform for patriotic purposes. He was active prior to unification, but his influence was especially notable during the years after unity had been achieved. It reached its climax in the last decades of the century—precisely the years which witnessed the developments among the students which have been our concern. Standing before packed audiences, Treitschke eloquently proclaimed his faith in a Germanic morality and his deep feeling for the Volk. A note of militancy pervaded his lectures, as if he were attempting to transcend his deafness and in his lectures accomplish the feats of courage that were denied him on the battlefield. And, typically enough, he too turned to the Jewish question to resolve certain problems in Germany's history and in current developments.

Treitschke's article "A Word about Our Jews" (1879) placed his prestige at the disposal of the anti-Semitic movement at large. He also recognized the existence of the problem and thought it of considerable importance, especially as Germany was newly unified, a young nation; it needed a consensus of total support and was searching for its own self-consciousness. There was an ambivalence in his work on the Jewish problem which derived from his national considerations as well as his rejection of the total racial context. Like Gustav Freytag, he favored the possibility of assimilating the Jews. He believed that native German Jews, at least the best and most willing among them, could become Germans in the full sense of the word if they discarded their "Jewishness" completely. However, there were dangers inherent in this solution. For, if assimilation should fail, it would produce a bastard German-Jewish culture that would destroy the purity of the thousand-year Germanic heritage.²⁷

Germany could not afford such a setback; the Jews should recognize that, said Treitschke, Germany was a young nation, emerging from years of weakness, just beginning to exercise its strength. And it was searching for national self-awareness. If, then, in this complicated and delicate development some Jew should be injured or his beliefs restricted, it was all part of the risks one should expect when residing in a vitally changing state. Youth knows no restrictions; it must try things out and adapt itself to the new reality. Treitschke's was a vital "idealism" that found influential spokesmen and became a popular point of view. Eugen Diederichs was to restate it and the conservative theorist Möller van den Bruck picked up the thread in contrasting young Germany with the old nations, the vigor and

"expansiveness" of youth with the age.²⁸ All of them, Treitschke, Die living in the youth and vigor of Volk had finally begun to assert its their midst.

Treitschke's advocacy of the p symbiosis became more halfhearted lost his faith in the ability of the Je card all of his heritage. In this regi sive increase all around him of an ing religious, and anthropological studie new doubts. Contradicting his ear marked that assimilation could go c and tribal nature would allow. But Treitschke equivocated. Sometimes German Jew, who could become a alien Jew of Eastern Europe. At otl of Germany in the Nineteenth Cen Germanized Jew, as when he critici bach for creating "phony" peasants Jews," asserting that the author's "J empathy with German peasantry."²⁹ tism of Böckel or even that of the st toward the Jews was neither racial from condemning all of Jewry as th times, even deplored the effort wast it could have been better employed the Volk.

Treitschke's modified anti-Semitism his adherence to Volkish views. He Germans with a nostalgia for their o These olden days had been times o composed of craftsmen and nobles, enjoyed its labors and prospered u hierarchy. Modern urbanism had d Germanic heritage. Modernity, unle its course of destruction. Here again cused him of ruining thousands o through usury and the introduction o

Treitschke's intellectual contributi cause of the Volk. Here his *History Century* assumed special significance. literature, art, and politics and pres

✱ the credit c

schoolteachers, they almost naturally.

the professor was set by the his-
rofessor at the University of Ber-
for patriotic purposes. He was ac-
influence was especially notable
een achieved. It reached its climax

—precisely the years which wit-
he students which have been our
audiences, Treitschke eloquently
morality and his deep feeling for
vaded his lectures, as if he were at-
ss and in his lectures accomplish
med him on the battlefield. And,
to the Jewish question to resolve
ory and in current developments.
bout Our Jews" (1879) placed his
ti-Semitic movement at large. He
ie problem and thought it of con-
s Germany was newly unified, a
as of total support and was search-
There was an ambivalence in his

ch derived from his national con-
i of the total racial context. Like
ossibility of assimilating the Jews.
ws, at least the best and most will-
Germans in the full sense of the
ewishness" completely. However,
this solution. For, if assimilation
istard German culture that
ousand-year Germanic heritage.²⁷

a setback; the Jews should recog-
ny was a young nation, emerging
aning to exercise its strength. And
awareness. If, then, in this compli-
ome Jew should be injured or his
f the risks one should expect when
e. Youth knows no restrictions; it
liff to the new reality. Treitschke's
influential spokesmen and became
iederichs was to restate it and the
den Bruck picked up the thread
with the old nations, the vigor and

"expansiveness" of youth with the decline and "shrinking" of old
age.²⁸ All of them, Treitschke, Diederichs, and van den Bruck, be-
lieving in the youth and vigor of Germany and trusting that the
Volk had finally begun to assert itself, cried woe to the stranger in
their midst.

Treitschke's advocacy of the possibility of the German-Jewish
symbiosis became more halfhearted as the times changed and he
lost his faith in the ability of the Jew, even if he so desired, to dis-
card all of his heritage. In this regression he reflected the progres-
sive increase all around him of an ingrained anti-Semitism. Historical,
religious, and anthropological studies had helped him formulate these
new doubts. Contradicting his earlier statements, Treitschke re-
marked that assimilation could go only as far as religion, tradition,
and tribal nature would allow. But how much would they allow?
Treitschke equivocated. Sometimes he would favorably contrast the
German Jew, who could become a German, with the undesirable
alien Jew of Eastern Europe. At other times, such as in his *History
of Germany in the Nineteenth Century*, he would even attack the
Germanized Jew, as when he criticized the novelist Berthold Auer-
bach for creating "phony" peasants who, in reality, were "disguised
Jews," asserting that the author's "Jewishness" prevented a genuine
empathy with German peasantry.²⁹ Compared with the anti-Semi-
tism of Böckel or even that of the students, Treitschke's antagonism
toward the Jews was neither racial nor all-inclusive. He refrained
from condemning all of Jewry as the enemy of Germanism and, at
times, even deplored the effort wasted on anti-Semitic action when
it could have been better employed in pressing the direct cause of
the Volk.

Treitschke's modified anti-Semitism was only one indication of
his adherence to Volkish views. He also looked back to the earlier
Germans with a nostalgia for their ordered social and economic life.
These olden days had been times of rootedness, when the nation,
composed of craftsmen and nobles, warriors and tillers of the soil,
enjoyed its labors and prospered under the benefits of a settled
hierarchy. Modern urbanism had destroyed the harmony of this
Germanic heritage. Modernity, unless stopped, would continue on
its course of destruction. Here again he brought in the Jew and ac-
cused him of ruining thousands of German villages and farms
through usury and the introduction of modernity.³⁰ ★

Treitschke's intellectual contribution was of great value to the
cause of the Volk. Here his *History of Germany in the Nineteenth
Century* assumed special significance. The work successfully linked
literature, art, and politics and presented itself, quite rightly, as a

★ the credit card

CHAPTER 11

Leadership, *Bund*, and Eros

TO MANY PEOPLE, both inside and outside the Volkish movement, the prospects for a vital spiritual assertion on the part of the German nation seemed dim as the nineteenth century drew to a close. Culturally there seemed to be a lack of idealistic fervor. The arts and society seemed imprisoned by conformity to the functions of a bureaucratic state. In neighboring France a multitude of changes had taken place—at least there was frequent turmoil and a broad range of public controversy. Revolutionary ideas in art and literature had found a similarly fertile soil in France, while the new art forms were only borrowed by Germany afterward and enjoyed only a weak flourishing. Shortly before the end of the nineteenth century and into the first decade of the twentieth, the German intellectual community was unable to find a cause to identify with. The bourgeoisie seemed too philistine, disinclined to inspire or encourage diversity of thought, to tolerate new artistic forms, and to moderate their moral and social codes. For intellectuals and exponents of Volkish thought alike—and the two categories are not mutually exclusive—it was a time of frustration, without ideals or heroism or leadership. Many thought it a period of trial in which the German people walked between death and the devil, striding ever onward, the knight in search of the Holy Grail.¹

To be sure, various forces were at work trying to create meaningful spheres of individual identity. The Volkish movement had done well in forging broader perspectives of Volk, nature, Germanic faith, and the Aryan race. Diöderichs declared the century of New Romanticism, encouraged the formation of groups of initiates, and called for the implementation of an "idealism of deeds." And the Youth Movement combined the two in its own peculiarly pragmatic brand of Volkish identity. Aesthetically, Fidus depicted an

LEADERSHIP,

idealized Nordic manliness that by its natural habitat, sublimated forces, and striving toward a new pathetic to the cause of the Volken, the tendencies in the nation change could be effected, and about. Still others thought in terms of the means required to lead to these latter groups and to the new turn.

What seemed to be lacking were the adepts, New Romantics, and the myths that embodied the longings seen earlier how this concept of the world's problems as those influenced by Romanticism came to see them. To see how such men infused brought it to full flower. To the dead, unable to enter into interaction, a spiritual character that reflected. Certainly it had a history to that was alive, though subdued the future? What did the Germans have to offer? Here the general and, above all, from Nietzsche's

The philosophers Arthur Schopenhauer, Hans F. K. Günther, and the others, influenced by Nietzsche, considered the gains in man's, Germanic material framework. Though the merits—such as its heroism, ancient Germans, and a society to be transvaluated. The new myths from the continuum of history: will, his imagination, and his times—the real spirit, not just embodied in man's constant aspiration to merge with the cosmos. In the identity. On the one hand, it was times, of history, of the collective other, it was absolute in its essence through the power of the will in the nineteenth century for the sake

idealized Nordic manliness that emanated from the Volk, surrounded by its natural habitat, sublimating its religious feelings in cosmic forces, and striving toward a new spiritual future. But others, sympathetic to the cause of the Volk or merely concerned with the alienating tendencies in the nation's development, also asked how a change could be effected, and beyond that, who was to bring it about. Still others thought in terms of organizations and theorized about the means required to lead the nation out of stagnation. It is to these latter groups and to the answers they provided that we must now turn.

What seemed to be lacking, according to these men—Volkish adepts, New Romantics, and admirers of Stefan George—was a mythos that embodied the longings of the German people. We have seen earlier how this concept of mythos lay at the heart of the world's problems as those influenced by Eugen Diederichs' New Romanticism came to see them. Now we must return to this mythos to see how such men infused it with Nietzschean ideas and thus brought it to full flower. To them, the German soul seemed to be dead, unable to enter into intercourse with the cosmos, and lacking a spiritual character that reflected its values, aspirations, and abilities. Certainly it had a history to identify with, a tradition of heroism that was alive, though subdued, in the Volkish heart. But what of the future? What did the German soul want of the future, what did it have to offer? Here the generation that learned from Diederichs and, above all, from Nietzsche stepped in and provided an answer.

The philosophers Arthur Bonus and Ernst Bertram, the racist Hans F. K. Günther, and the poet Stefan George, all heavily influenced by Nietzsche, considered that the new mythos had to be gained in man's, Germanic man's, transcendence of his limited historical framework. Though the past was not to be rejected *in toto*, its merits—such as its heroism, the free and genuine life of the ancient Germans, and a society ordered according to estates—were to be transvaluated. The new mythos, correspondingly, was removed from the continuum of history and elevated as the product of man's will, his imagination, and his artistic creativity. The spirit of the times—the real spirit, not just the mirrored reflection—was to be embodied in man's constant aspiration toward perfection, his striving to merge with the cosmos. In this respect, the mythos had a double identity. On the one hand, it was limited by the perspectives of the times, of history, of the collective national aspirations; and on the other, it was absolute in its efforts to transvaluate known values through the power of the will—which, in effect, meant scrapping the nineteenth century for the sake of the Volkish revolution.²

und, and Eros

and outside the Volkish movement, assertion on the part of the German nineteenth century drew to a close. Cult of idealistic fervor. The arts and conformity to the functions of a France a multitude of changes had frequent turmoil and a broad range of ideas in art and literature had since, while the new art forms were forward and enjoyed only a weak end of the nineteenth century and eth, the German intellectual committed to identify with. The bourgeoisie to inspire or encourage diversity in forms, and to moderate their actuals and exponents of Volkish ideas are not mutually exclusive—ideals or heroism or leadership. In which the German people, striding ever onward, the

at work trying to create meaning. The Volkish movement had perspectives of Volk, nature, Ger-ederichs declared the century of formation of groups of initiates, of an "idealism of deeds." And two in its own peculiarly pragmatic, Fides depicted an

The establishment of such a mythos was no mean task. Men of exceptional qualities were needed. The consensus, not collectively or consciously arrived at, among these disciples of Nietzsche was to look to an exceptional personality, a leader. In a sense, these longings can be explained by the times. Frustration, an extreme sense of disappointment, a deep discontent at a situation where change was necessary but no forces capable of implementing it seemed at hand, all led to solace in illusions. It was a time of prophets, of poetic seers; it was a time when only a charismatic leader seemed capable of ending the malaise of the intellectuals. Thus the intelligentsia looked to a heroic leader for release. The most vivid image of this leader was that exemplified by Willibald Hentschel, who saw the Germanic hero in Dürer's knight, who, in the forbidding company of death and the devil, nonetheless, tranquil and full of hope, rides toward the Holy Grail of Germany's future.³

Arthur Bonus and Ernst Bertram likewise endorsed the idea of a new heroic personality who would embody the new mythos of Germany. For Bonus the hero had to possess a strong autonomous will, a sense of heroic determination that would replace the old Christian mythos, which had stressed the good and the bad, guilt and repentance.⁴ Bertram went a step further. He had discovered in Nietzsche the heroic personality capable of combining the new mythos with the aspirations of the nation. In his book on Nietzsche, Bertram claimed that a legend of the great man, imbued with his thoughts and goals, would be sufficient to serve as the basis of the new mythos. Great and heroic men, he claimed, generated a spiritual substance that persisted in the strivings of every man. To create this identity, however, it was necessary that the model be made intelligible to every man, that it be embodied in the forms most easily appreciated by people at large. He claimed that this could be achieved through legends, relegating to the realm of spiritual experience the task of communicating the "quintessence" of the great man.⁵

For Bertram's purpose, it was essential that Nietzsche be removed from his historical context. He had to be detached from the body of German philosophical thought and placed above its limitations. Thus Nietzsche was to be depicted as a philosopher who had transcended the pettiness of his people's thinking and raised himself to the stature of an *Überdeutscher*, a climactic German. Moreover, certain of Nietzsche's pronouncements as well as his very person were to be construed in a manner favorable to this interpretation. Nietzsche was the knight who bravely traveled along his path of necessary horrors, oblivious of the surrounding dangers, in pursuit of his ends; while his anti-Germanism was read as a transcendence of the petti-

ness of Germany and the grandiose mythos.⁶ "Evidence" for this interpretation was found in the philosopher himself. Had not the great man had to pass through grave dangers by which they were destined by the int courage of their suffering? This was rary situation in Germany, and Nietzsche's leadership qualities that were to le it deserved.

For Bertram, Nietzsche's prophecy of Germanism that aspired to rise "beyond" was interpreted to depict the new self represented the "lightning breakt of the Volk at the moment of its gre multaneously, he also represented an through the saving will and the saving legend, Nietzsche had posited a new in the youthful Elysian century.⁸

Thus Nietzsche was declared to be interpretation was echoed by writers leaning. Alfred Baumler, a popular i the Nazis directly.⁹ Today we recogn tion. Yet, to use Bertram's terms the less historicism"¹⁰ are beside the point, acclaimed by generations as the correct transcends reason as it does good and Nietzsche had ridiculed and rejected Lagarde's works.¹¹ In spite of it, he b Volk. His rejection of things as they a plight, were taken as a projection of a p his transcendence of historical limitac was finally fused, as noted earlier, with This combination of the extraordinary with the endurance and courage of th ized version of the German leader. In who, like Guido von List, expected above." This had a considerable impact. it additional currency when he had h Lanzinger as a medieval knight, astride s termination as his gaze penetrated into the picture of the knight, any initiate o believed in the lavish promises of future; the appropriate moral: courage in the

thos was no mean task. Men of
The consensus, not collectively.
the disciples of Nietzsche was to
leader. In a sense, these longings
ation, an extreme sense of disap-
uation where change was neces-
menting it seemed at hand, all
me of prophets, of poetic seers; it
ic leader seemed capable of end-
s. Thus the intelligentsia looked
most vivid image of this leader
entschel, who saw the Germanic
the forbidding company of death
and full of hope, rides toward the

likewise endorsed the idea of a
 d embody the new mythos of
 to possess a strong autonomous
 ion that would replace the old
ed the good and the bad, guilt
 p further. He had discovered in
 capable of combining the new
 ation. In his book on Nietzsche,
 the great man, imbued with his
 sent to serve as the basis of the
he claimed, generated a spiritual
age of every man. To create this
 that the model be made intelli-
 d in the forms most easily appre-
 ed that this could be achieved
 calm of spiritual experience the
 "mice" of the great man.⁶

ntial that Nietzsche be removed
 p be detached from the body of
 laced above its limitations. Thus
 philosopher who had transcended
 g and raised himself to the sta-
 German. Moreover, certain of
 as his very person were to be
 o this interpretation. Nietzsche
 along his path of necessary hor-
 lingers, in pursuit of his ends;
 as a transcendence of the petti-

ness of Germany and the grandiose fulfillment of a new German
 mythos.⁶ "Evidence" for this interpretation was taken from the
 philosopher himself. Had not the great man stated that all people
 had to pass through grave dangers before achieving the climax to
 which they were destined by the intensity of their despair and the
 courage of their suffering? This was read to apply to the contempo-
 rary situation in Germany, and Nietzsche was regarded as embody-
 ing leadership qualities that were to lead the nation to the greatness
 it deserved.

For Bertram, Nietzsche's prophecy was the grand gesture of a
 Germanism that aspired to rise "beyond itself," and, for the legend
 Bertram concocted to depict the new mythos, the philosopher him-
 self represented the "lightning breakthrough of the self-knowledge
 of the Volk at the moment of its greatest inner danger—while, si-
 multaneously, he also represented an awakening and development
 through the saving will and the saving instincts."⁷ According to the
 legend, Nietzsche had posited a new mythos and with it had created
 the youthful Elysian century.⁸

Thus Nietzsche was declared to be a Nordic prophet. Bertram's
 interpretation was echoed by writers of more explicitly Volkish
 leanings. Alfred Bäumler, a popular philosopher, transmitted it to
 the Nazis directly.⁹ Today we recognize the error of this interpre-
 tation. Yet, to use Bertram's terms the right and wrong of "shame-
 less historicism"¹⁰ are beside the point, for, like a mythos, the image
 acclaimed by generations as the correct one, even though erroneous,
 transcends reason as it does good and evil. It mattered little that
 Nietzsche had ridiculed and rejected the intellectual material of
 Lagarde's works.¹¹ In spite of it, he became a living mythos of the
 Volk. His rejection of things as they are, his statement of Germany's
 plight, were taken as a projection of a power of will which facilitated
 his transcendence of historical limitations. The Nietzschean mythos
 was finally fused, as noted earlier, with the image of Dürer's knight.
 This combination of the extraordinary will power of the philosopher
 with the endurance and courage of the knight produced the ideal-
 ized version of the German leader. In addition, it appealed to those
 who, like Guido von List, expected the leader to "come from
 above." This had a considerable impact. Later on, Hitler was to give
 it additional currency when he had himself portrayed by Hubert
Lanzinger as a medieval knight, astride a horse, wearing a look of de-
termination as his gaze penetrated into the future. When beholding
the picture of the knight, any initiate of the National Socialists who
believed in the lavish promises of future grandeur for the nation, drew
the appropriate moral: courage in the face of danger and a steeled

suppression of doubt.¹² To a leader of the Artamanen, the knight inspired a similar vision that stressed the imperatives of action and courage as the impetus driving the hero ever onward.¹³ And though the Volkish emphasis was slow in coalescing, by 1938 a consensus had been fully achieved. It was then that Bertram, writing in the *Völkische Beobachter*, identified the knight as a peasant figure, close to the soil and secure in his actions. He was a Faustian man, active and of flesh and blood, fighting merely intellectualized (geistige) power.¹⁴

Where Bertram's knight attempted to set the mythos of the age while remaining above temporal and historical ties, the hero envisioned by Hans F. K. Günther was circumscribed by ties to the Volk. He was the servant of the Volk, his actions and ideas confined by the immediate interests of the people and soil from which he stemmed. Here was an explicitly Volkish hero, one who could assume leadership over those disciples who had formulated the correct ideas but lacked the resources and guidance to implement them. The vision was promulgated in Günther's book *Ritter, Tod und Teufel: Der heldische Gedanke* (*The Knight, Death and the Devil: A Heroic Thought*). Written in 1924, the work brought the author to the attention of Walther Darré, the future agricultural specialist of the Third Reich, and gained him entrance to the social and intellectual circles of the National Socialists.¹⁵ It was a favorable beginning, and Günther eventually became one of the principal racial experts under the Nazi regime.

In the book itself, Günther reduced Nietzsche to a few ideas concerning the powers of will and the germination of a superman through an inherent consciousness of election. The knight represented the hero, standing at the beginning of the world, who grasped man's fate and, through his inner strength, molded it according to his own criteria. The knight's values, however, emanated from the Volk, whose racial virtues were inalienable and eternal. So it was only a question of reapplying them. The knight, the modern superman representing qualities usually ascribed to the ancient Germans—heroism, loyalty, honesty, racial purity—was dedicated precisely to reclaiming the greatness of the Volk. Here Günther fused the Nietzschean ideals with Germanic vision. He tamed his hero, who was at one and the same time a unique leader and bound by the spirit of the Volk.¹⁶ This was a step, a reduction of the will to power, which Bertram never countenanced; and as we shall see, it was also at variance with other visions of heroic German leadership.

But this image gained great popularity under the Nazis. More so than Bertram's knight, Günther's Germanic hero was endowed with

all the right Volkish virtues. It was as was propagated by subsequent writers. Günther's knight extensively as a man the farmers to give their wholehearted. The National Socialist writer Eberth incorporated the theme of "the knight of his poetry. Here, in poetic form, person of Adolf Hitler.¹⁷ The motif and years after the Second World War Pleyer repeated the same theme. Th confronted by a new adversary, pr victory is again assured.¹⁸

Although the image of the knight relevance to the Volkish context, it was successfully presented to a greater. Characteristically, the image had devices and statements. Bertram, too, sion of the mythos stood outside reality moreover, the poet alone could appreciate times, provide the solution. Bertram, an early follower of Stefan George, now turn.

It has been generally accepted that with his own prophetic function as a his role as a poet-seer, as a herald of poetry was the most suitable vehicle for tions of the times, which, he thought through the strength and determination at the heart of the matter, and was, as uncommitted to any particular political was not limited by the seeming fatalistic or realistic considerations. He was a touch with the pulse of the nation. In that the poet should stride forth as it enjoyed the support of romanticism as teenth century, when Chateaubriand poetry greatly surpassed the value of The Germanic ideology had likewise the highest good, as a measure of how to the genuine forces of life.

George, in a sense, represented the urge toward a Germanic creativity. In the value of science and the supremacy

der of the Artamanen, the knight in-
 essed the imperatives of action and
 the hero ever onward.¹⁵ And though
 in coalescing, by 1938 a consensus
 is then that Bertram, writing in the
 ed the knight as a peasant figure,
 his actions. He was a Faustian man,
 od, fighting merely intellectualized

empted to set the mythos of the age
 and historical ties, the hero envi-
 was circumscribed by ties to the
 the Volk, his actions and ideas con-
 of the people and soil from which
 ically Volkish hero, one who could
 iciples who had formulated the cor-
 es and guidance to implement them.
 in Günther's book *Ritter, Tod und*
 (*The Knight, Death and the Devil*;
 1924, the work brought the author
 e, the future agricultural specialist of
 entrance to the social and intellec-
 tualists.¹⁶ It was a favorable beginning,
 one of the principal racial experts

duced Nietzsche to a few ideas con-
 d the germination of a superman
 ess of election. The knight repre-
 beginning of the world, who grasped
 strength, molded it according to
 values, however, emanated from the
 inalienable and eternal. So it was
 em. The knight, the modern super-
 ly ascribed to the ancient Germans
 ial purity—was dedicated precisely
 the Volk. Here Günther fused the
 ic vision. He tamed his hero, who
 ique leader and bound by the spirit
 a reduction of the will to power,
 ed; and as we shall see, it was also
 eroic German leadership.
 popularity under the Nazis. More so
 Germanic hero was endowed with

all the right Volkish virtues. It was this doctrine of leadership which
 was propagated by subsequent writers. Walther Darré was to use
Günther's knight extensively as a model figure in his exhortations to
the farmers to give their wholehearted support to the new Germany.
 The National Socialist writer Eberhardt Wolfgang Möller even in-
 corporated the theme of "the knight, death, and the devil" into some
 of his poetry. Here, in poetic form, the knight was presented in the
 person of Adolf Hitler.¹⁷ The motif, without Hitler, has survived,
 and years after the Second World War, the Volkish poet Wilhelm
 Pleyer repeated the same theme. This time, to be sure, the knight is
 confronted by a new adversary, presumably the Russians. But his
 victory is again assured.¹⁸

Although the image of the knight, hero, leader, had its particular
 relevance to the Volkish context, the same image, in poetic form,
 was successfully presented to a great number of other literate peo-
 ple. Characteristically, the image had always lent itself best to poetic
 devices and statements. Bertram, too, claimed that the comprehen-
 sion of the mythos stood outside rational and scholarly analysis; that,
 moreover, the poet alone could appreciate all the subtleties and, some-
 times, provide the solution. Bertram, interestingly enough, had been
 an early follower of Stefan George, and it is to that poet we must
 now turn.

It has been generally accepted that George was fairly intoxicated
 with his own prophetic function as a poet. He seriously believed in
 his role as a poet-seer, as a herald of change. To him it seemed that
 poetry was the most suitable vehicle for describing the tragic condi-
 tions of the times, which, he thought, could be alleviated only
 through the strength and determination of a leader. Poetry struck
 at the heart of the matter, and was, at the same time, impartial and
 uncommitted to any particular political solution. Above all, a poet
 was not limited by the seeming fatalism of materialistic, historicist,
 or realistic considerations. He was above them. He was in direct
 touch with the pulse of the nation. In this framework, it was logical
 that the poet should stride forth as the new prophet. The idea had
 enjoyed the support of romantics as early as the start of the nine-
 teenth century, when Chateaubriand had stated that a few lines of
 poetry greatly surpassed the value of all discovered mathematics.¹⁹
 The Germanic ideology had likewise stressed Volkish creativity as
 the highest good, as a measure of how close man's inner senses were
 to the genuine forces of life.

George, in a sense, represented the ultimate development in the
 urge toward a Germanic creativity. Indeed, he absolutely rejected
 the value of science and the supremacy of man's rational faculties.

on or work one will find "no Hölderlin, the Greeks, and him on in his poetic identity, if a truly creative Volkhood, a hero's antagonism to modern heritage and, significantly, companionship, especially as it George joined his disciples others in celebrating heathen feeling of genuine primeval

turned to individual leaders, need for an elite leadership— of a single leader. Instead of concept of the "order," such as that George promoted. The for he sincerely believed that The coming century was to . It would be an era in which image, creativity, and activity and culture. George saw both godliness and manliness will²²

the elite from whose ranks the ideas were similar to those of denied that conventional together in a common purpose, and the power of Eros, of dedication of the elite. Eros, as we designate as a function of beauty, which was supposedly an indispensable creation, of cultural mal that it could not be [for cultural rebirth, which would be attained only through the sharing of the beauty of both the

ings for leadership and the reality in his own life. In who possessed all the beauties named Maximin, who, in "transformed magic into who died in his youth, pos-

sessed a godlike quality which was not to be found in any of his other disciples.

Here, among his disciples, all with dispositions similar to his own, was the core of the elite. George himself selected the members and judged them by the beauty of their carriage, by the quality of their bearing, and by the fire burning in their eyes. The group was linked by a shared Eros inspired by the "master," George, on whom all their group rituals centered. George surrounded his movements with secrecy and held his meetings in the back rooms of a friend's residence.²³ Discussion would revolve around the problem of reviving a feeling for the beauty of primeval forces in a modern world which was indifferent to the culture of classical times. On occasions, such as around 1912 but also at other times, the circle approached the Volkish outlook and the Germanic faith. At times like these, George would be particularly despondent regarding the future of Germany. He was afraid that within fifty years the essence of Germanism, the German soul, would vanish and be obliterated by the encroaching disease of urbanism. In this respect, he expressed a loathing for the influence America was exerting on Europe and characterized the United States as a world of ants.²⁴

George personally was not a man of action, and it was left to others to apply his ideas in an area where they inflamed the passions: in politics, and especially in the kind disdained by George, mass politics. George disagreed with them and had nothing but contempt for their intellectualism. Moreover, he rejected the blatant Volkish ideology and looked with sadness upon certain events conducted in the name of the German Volk. He deplored the anti-Semitism of rabid Germanists like Alfred Schuler and Ludwig Klages, men whom he had befriended in his youth. In later years he rejected the proffered presidency of the Nazi Poets' Academy—electing to die in exile, in Switzerland. While he presided over his own circle of initiates he refused to deny membership to anyone on the basis of race or creed. Jews, just as young romantic German Gentiles, felt themselves drawn by his appeal and there were many who idealized his thoughts. Aside from the esthetes and the intellectually precocious, many people who were not necessarily of a Volkish persuasion accepted his prophetic insights as a reflection of their own concern for the nation.

But many of George's disciples developed overtly Volkish attitudes. For example, Alfred Schuler and Ludwig Klages, two Volkish fanatics who had been close to George for some time, broke with him in 1904 and proceeded to lay a greater stress on the denunciations of modernity which fit into a Volkish and Germanic category

of thought. Both men elevated their hate of the Judeo-Christian conspiracy into a position of priority totally unacceptable to George. In their hands the emphasis on primeval forces became a recapturing of the blood of their Germanic forebears. And, like Bertram, both found their belief incarnated in the person and what they believed to be the philosophy of Nietzsche. Klages de-emphasized the will to power as embodying the virtues of capitalism, which he rejected, because it left no room for the functioning of the inherited and genuine soul of the Volk.²⁷

Though there was direct antagonism between George and Klages on the relevance of the Volkish thesis, on other levels they shared a number of ideas, the most important of which concerned the structure and nature of organization. Both were elitist in outlook and both adhered to the principles of the *Orden* and the *Bund*. The former had more formal connotations, since it tended to refer to groups of men organized to perform a specific service or task. The *Bund* comprised a more flexible association and simply referred to a social organization regarded by its members as the true community of man with a common soul. Moreover, it was claimed that the *Bund* did away with the artificiality of bourgeois society and its hypocritical relationships, morality, and culture. But though we have already examined the *Bund* in connection with the Wandervögel and Stefan George, we must now take a closer look at this important phenomenon. For the *Bund* became an important and lasting ideal for many Volkish thinkers, a new means by which an elitist society could be organized. Our best source of information on the subject is Hans Blüher, who must be recognized as the theorist *par excellence* of the *Bund*.

The great experience in Blüher's life was his association with the Wandervögel at the beginning of the century. But he had gone on to study philosophy and German philology and had become increasingly interested in defining a philosophy of nature. However, Blüher did not teach, but instead became a publicist, writer, and private scholar. His restless mind was always fertile with ideas and ready to do combat. Small wonder that he despised the mass movement of National Socialism and during the Hitler period retired into the private world of his own study. His fervid dislike of the Nazis was, no doubt, due in large part to the ideal of the *Bund*, the community of a male elite, in which he had believed ever since his Youth Movement days, for the Nazi mass movement seemed hostile to elitist ideas.

It needs to be stated at the outset that the idea of a male community, based as it was on sexual affinities and similarity of ideolog-

ical dispositions, was not unique of the concept and its service is peculiarly German. The ideas of homosexuality, were known not only currently, in France and England. Proust shared Blüher's concepts of homosexuality. But they regarded them differently. Neither they nor their contemporaries thought of using sexual inversion as a cosmic theory which attempted to explain social and political organization. The latter course and it is to its application.

Blüher's theory of the function of the erotic is the subject of his book *Die Rolle der Erotik in der männlichen Gesellschaft* (The Role of the Erotic in the Male Community). His analysis on the origins of culture asserted that culture was a product of sexual urges that accompanied the impetus to transferring them to a new object of passion. The sexual drive gave way to longings of more noble nature once man's sensual gratifications had been directed into the realm of culture, however, did not deny the merit of sexual life. Instead the cosmic identity of the male sphere had to be accompanied by a culture which author held sexual health and grandeur. Eros, Eros had to be ennobled by culture. relationships produced not children, but the total concentration of the passions in the sexual lives, but works of lasting value. In other words, Eros was to be a catalyst, not simply used up in biological propagation.

Within such a scheme, the homosexual, regarded as the most socially creative male directs his total sexual energy toward providing them with the means of life. He is essentially captured, circumscribed, and held true for a homosexual, who is devoted toward cosmic concerns and, above all, to the true *Bund*.³⁰ Unfettered by home, family, and children, he creates in his creative occupations and sublimates

hate of the Judeo-Christian conceptually unacceptable to George. In rival forces became a recapturing of the bears. And, like Bertram, both a person and what they believed Klages de-emphasized the will to of capitalism, which he rejected, functioning of the inherited and

nism between George and Klages thesis, on other levels they shared important of which concerned the on. Both were elitist in outlook of the *Orden* and the *Bund*. The ions, since it tended to refer to a specific service or task. The association and simply referred to a members as the true community moreover, it was claimed that the city of bourgeois society and its and culture. But though we have ection with the Wandervogel and a closer look at this important e an important and lasting ideal means by which an elitist society e of information on the subject is zed as the theorist *par excellence*

life was his association with the the century. But he had gone on philology and had become in- philosophy of nature. However, became a publicist, writer, and was always fertile with ideas and that he despised the mass move- ing the Hitler period retired into . His fervid dislike of the Nazis the ideal of the *Bund*, the com- he had believed ever since his i mass movement seemed hostile

et that the idea of a male com- finities and similarity of ideolog-

ical dispositions, was not unique to Germany. Only the application of the concept and its service in political and social causes were peculiarly German. The ideas of Eros and the tendency toward homosexuality, were known not only in Germany but also, and concurrently, in France and England. In France, André Gide and Marcel Proust shared Blüher's concepts and were attracted to both Eros and homosexuality. But they regarded such inclinations as personal matters. Neither they nor their contemporary in England, Oscar Wilde, thought of using sexual inversion or sublimation as a basis for a cosmic theory which attempted to provide alternatives to present social and political organization. The *Bund*, in Germany, took the latter course and it is to its application there that we must now turn.

Blüher's theory of the functioning of Eros presented in his book *Die Rolle der Erotik in der männlichen Gesellschaft* (*The Role of the Erotic in the Male Community*) (1917) was an offshoot of Freudian analysis on the origins of culture. Both Freud and Blüher asserted that culture was a product of sexual sublimation. The refining of sexual urges that accompanied social restrictions was seen as the impetus to transferring the energy used in sexual attraction to a new object of passion. The simply personal "pleasure principle" gave way to longings of more noble dimensions. It was thought that once man's sensual gratifications were sublimated his energy could be directed into the realm of cosmos and metaphysics.²⁸ Blüher, however, did not deny the merits, function, or necessity of sexual life. Instead the cosmic identity as it was forged in a *Bund* atmosphere had to be accompanied by a satisfying sex life; in fact, the author held sexual health and gratification as synonymous with the forces of Eros. Eros had to be engaged in a situation where human relationships produced not children, whose survival would demand the total concentration of the parents at the expense of their spiritual lives, but works of lasting cultural and social value. In other words, Eros was to be a catalyst in fostering cultural creativity, not simply used up in biological propagation.²⁹

Within such a scheme, the homosexually inclined came to be regarded as the most socially creative individual. Because the normal male directs his total sexual energy and affection toward his family, toward providing them with the material essentials of life, Eros here is essentially captured, circumscribed, and dissipated. This does not hold true for a homosexual, who is able to direct his surplus energy toward cosmic concerns and, above all, toward cementing the ties of the true *Bund*.³⁰ Unfettered by common everyday worries of home, family, and children, he can direct his sexual energies into creative occupations and sublimate them in cultural activities. Within

the *Bund*, which was laid out according to leadership principles, those members who were the most attractive, spiritually as well as physically, would gravitate toward leadership positions. For Blüher the homosexual experience was common to all males to one degree or another.³¹ It was these men, infused with the true Eros, who through their surplus energies would guide the *Bund* toward genuine goals, giving all of themselves to the cause. Such leaders were to be the heroes, the sources of brave and courageous deeds as well as the inspiration for other men to join the group.³²

A.H. Blüher, however, did not restrict the concept of Eros to the *Bund* structure or to leadership. He also applied it to the state. In dealing with the nature of the state, its organization and purpose, Blüher claimed that the concept of the *Bund* was elemental in the origin of the nation.³³ A state was more than just a utilitarian framework; it was an integral aspect of human organization. Those who traced the origins of the state to various forms of social contract, he quickly dismissed as theorists who reduced the essence of human organization to calculations of political power. The state, as an organism in the service of the Volk, had a greater purpose than merely the protection of its members; it represented greater and more mysterious forces which united the citizens of a nation around a common point of identity. Blüher delegated this function to Eros.³⁴ It was the subliminal force that provided the state with an elite and culture. Accordingly, he measured the strength of the state in terms of the Eros that bound its people together. The *Bund* infused with Eros was a social organization that derived its *raison d'être* from the elemental sexual and erotic urges that underlie the relationships between men. That is not to say that sexual values displaced all others. On the contrary, factors such as proper physical proportions, common cultural affinities, and similar heritage, history, and race were all seen as interconnected with Eros in producing that entity peculiar to one country and alien to all others. Here also the revival of the correct and most conducive organization of men was a part of the longing for a new mythos.³⁵

Freudian psychology was obviously influential in making explicit the theory of the *Bund*, but the disillusionment with bourgeois society and the contemporary forms of social organization was basic to its popularity. Moreover, Volkish thought had always been conservative with respect to the role of women in society, relegating them to the home as their Germanic ancestors would presumably have wished. In addition, the women's rights movement had been active and vocal ever since the end of the nineteenth century and the Volkish thinkers regarded it as a threat to the Volk. The modern woman,

the suffragette, was a symbol of the demand for women's rights and the demand for men's rights. The demand for men's rights came to be sexual urges as ultimately creative female to a lower and more biological, cultural, artistic, and political creativity, and political creativity was circumscribed by biological needs while the pursuit of truly creative ends.

A considerable literature grew up from the presuppositions which Blüher laid out. The popular work of Otto Weininger, *schlecht und Charakter* (*Sex and female-male dichotomy*) into a centered theory of Eros relegated that of men. Women, Weininger claimed, they were preoccupied with providing for the needs of the state; they could not responsibly possess the state, and they could not lend a touch of objectivity "feminine-motherly" as an element of "masculine-creative" as the superior capacities of man. And he developed only to grow increasingly more abhorred the female an inferior role as well. As the female was of the state was contrasted with the Aryan. The state was equated with those of women: material goods at the expense of spirit formed love into lust. However, woman was secondary to the male in a racial context was lower than the whole Aryan race. Jews were antithetical to the soul and the state.

Where Weininger's argument left the cosmology of racial difference, an advocate of Germanic superiority symbolized by the sun, while the Jew only reflected light in the form of parasitically reflected the sun's light. original creativity were compelled Judging by the number of anti-Semitic to the Jew as a "moon creature," I some currency. Lomer may have been but these increasingly irrational ideal

according to leadership principles, most attractive, spiritually as well as in leadership positions. For Blüher common to all males to one degree infused with the true Eros, who could guide the *Bund* toward genu- to the cause. Such leaders were to brave and courageous deeds as well as join the group.³²

But the concept of Eros to the *Bund* was applied to the state. In dealing with organization and purpose, Blüher's *Bund* was elemental in the origin of man just a utilitarian framework: its organization. Those who traced the origins of social contract, he quickly dismissed the essence of human organization. The state, as an organism in the end, had a purpose other than merely the projected greater and more mysterious of a nation around a common point of function to Eros.³⁴ It was the substrate with an elite and culture. According to the state in terms of the Eros of the *Bund* infused with Eros was a *raison d'être* from the elemental to the relationships between men. It displaced all others. On the con- sidered proportions, common cultural history, and race were all seen as including that entity peculiar to one. Here also the revival of the correct of men was a part of the longing

was influ- entially influential in making explicit disillusionment with bourgeois soci- of social organization was basic to thought had always been conserv- women in society, relegating them to their ancestors would presumably have rights movement had been active in the nineteenth century and the Volk to the Volk. The modern woman,

the suffragette, was a symbol of hated modernity. This upsurge in the demand for women's rights contributed to the fact that a significant number of men came to consider their own emotional and sexual urges as ultimately creative, while relegating those of the female to a lower and more biological order. In one case Eros led to cultural, artistic, and political creation, while in the other it was circumscribed by biological needs which allowed no time or energy for the pursuit of truly creative ends.

A considerable literature grew up around this theme, based upon the presuppositions which Blüher was, later, to formulate so strikingly. The popular work of Otto Weininger, an apostate Jew, *Geschlecht und Charakter (Sex and Character)* (1903), elevated the female-male dichotomy into a cosmic principle. The masculine-centered theory of Eros relegated women to a position ancillary to that of men. Women, Weininger claimed, lacked the Eros peculiar to men; they were preoccupied with marriage, with reproduction, and with providing for the needs of the offspring. Consequently, they could not responsibly possess the cultural Eros. Weininger, attempting to lend a touch of objectivity to his thesis, paid tribute to the "feminine-motherly" as an elemental force, but he eulogized the "masculine-creative" as the superior force typifying the spiritual capacities of man. And he developed his argument even further—only to grow increasingly more absurd and irrational. He not only accorded the female an inferior role but introduced a racial argument as well. As the female was opposed by the male, so the Jew was contrasted with the Aryan. The traits of the Jews were equated with those of women: both were preoccupied with material goods at the expense of spiritual interests and similarly transformed love into lust. However, whereas the female was only secondary to the male in a racial context, the Jew, both male and female, was lower than the whole Aryan race. Women were simply inferior; Jews were antithetical to the soul and to spiritual life.³⁶

Where Weininger's argument left off, others stepped in and completed the cosmology of racial dichotomy. Georg Lomer, for instance, an advocate of Germanic sun worship, saw the Aryan male symbolized by the sun, while the Jew, like the female, represented only reflected light in the form of the moon.³⁷ Just as the moon parasitically reflected the sun's light, so the Jews, lacking an original creativity, were compelled to merely imitate their betters. Judging by the number of anti-Semitic pamphlets which referred to the Jew as a "moon creature," Lomer's idea seems to have had some currency. Lomer may have been more *outré* than Weininger, but these increasingly irrational elaborations of the theme only in-

icated that the wellsprings of the ideology were already contaminated.

Whereas Weininger had attempted to identify the cosmological distinctions between male and female, Aryan and Jew, others went on to apply them in broad racial terms. This process was manifest in the manner in which elitism was reduced to signify election through the blood. The theory was presented by Lothar Helbing, whose work *Der dritte Humanismus (The Third Humanism)* (1928) stated that the genuine Eros of the state depended, in the first place, on the purity of blood inheritance. Earlier Blüher had denied Jews participation in Eros for fear that they would improve their own racial and spiritual strain and thus drag humanity down to a level of materialism and utilitarianism.³⁸ Significantly enough, this was consistent with the Volkish charge that Judaism was implicated in an anti-Germanic conspiracy.

Though many people did not endorse the whole body of Volkish or Germanic ideology, it attracted enough adherents to constitute an issue of considerable importance. And even if a large number of these adherents did not subscribe to the whole gamut of the theories, they accepted the basic ideas and were active in disseminating them. Thus, though only a relatively small part of the total population accepted the concepts of *Eros* and *Bund*, it was a vociferous group, sincerely believing that the *Bund* of males provided the cell "from which all states have their origin."³⁹ The Youth Movement had found the new principles of organization congenial to its needs, and had high hopes for applying them in other areas. Looking to the future, the members of the Youth Movement exclaimed that "the *Bund* is our state, the state of youth, and is our guide to the state of the future."⁴⁰ They felt that they had discovered a radically new organization in total opposition to the contemporary social structures, which had been erected on the basis of a spiritually shallow rationality and a crass materialism. In contrast, their organization was the true reality which must be the basis of the future state if the nation was to be saved from extinction. By the 1920's Volkish thought had come to grips with this trend and had accepted many aspects of it. For all the prudery of the National Socialists, the idea of leadership structured on Eros was continuously alive in the feudal groupings around the standard bearers of the New Reich. Enemies were to cry homosexuality and the accusation struck home in the youth circles, among the elite gatherings of sensitive poets and literati, and especially in the ranks of the early National Socialists. But the charge, with its suggestion of moral depravity, was beside the point. Whether or not a sexual experience was involved, the concepts of

* To the cultural, Röhm adds the purificative value of the brutal.

Eros and *Bund* nourished leadership.

We must now look at idealized Volkish ideology and principles. These *Bünde* early Nazi party was a result in his drive for power. The party the ideal of the *Bund* the 1920's.⁴¹ Other organizational commitments, also abided to put across their views of German ideology. What is of they prescribed for that cri-

the ideology were already contami-

tempted to identify the cosmological male, Aryan and Jew, others went terms. This process was manifest in reduced to signify election through presented by Lothar Helbing, whose (*The Third Humanism*) (1928) of the state depended, in the first inheritance. Earlier Blüher had denied fear that they would improve their and thus drag humanity down to a Humanism.⁸⁸ Significantly enough, this charge that Judaism was implicated

endorse the whole body of Volkish enough adherents to constitute an. And even if a large number of to the whole gamut of the theories, were active in disseminating them. small part of the total population and *Bund*, it was a vociferous group. of males provided the cell "from in."⁸⁹ The Youth Movement had organization congenial to its needs, and them in other areas. Looking to the Youth Movement exclaimed that "the youth, and is our guide to the state of they had discovered a radically new to the contemporary social structures, the basis of a spiritually shallow race. In contrast, their organization was the basis of the future state if the nation. By the 1920's Volkish thought and had accepted many aspects of National Socialists, the idea of leadership continuously alive in the feudal groupings of the New Reich. Enemies were accusation struck home in the youth of sensitive poets and literati, and early National Socialists. But the moral depravity, was beside the point. Once was involved, the concepts of

Röhm adds the
of the brutal.

Eros and *Bund* nourished many Volkish theories of elitism and leadership.

We must now look at the organizations which further institutionalized Volkish ideology and which functioned according to *bündisch* principles. These *Bünde* were of the utmost significance. The early Nazi party was a typical *Bund*, though Hitler changed this in his drive for power. However, within the Strasser wing of the party the ideal of the *Bund* remained alive and relevant throughout the 1920's.⁴¹ Other organizations, more orthodox in their Volkish commitments, also abided by *bündisch* concepts. These groups tried to put across their views on national affairs and the crisis of the German ideology. What is of interest to us is the nature of the solution they prescribed for that crisis.

ons Carry On

ot remain in the realm of theory. A number of groups had shaped themselves according to leadership and the close cohesion of male comradeship. But however noble an ideal they had, its effectiveness was limited by the extent to which it fitted into an actually existing situation. In the nineteenth century and to what extent was it possible to plan for the reorganization of German society? Various organizations had tried to do so. Some were based on the philosophy of Max Weber, others on the philosophy of Max Wundt, a professor of philosophy at the University of Berlin. The concepts were somewhat more polished, but they were not the passions of earlier groups. Both strove to transcend the limitations of the existing regimes, whether monarchy or republic. They held the conviction that blood and soil gave the unity of the Volk and that this constituted the basis of peoplehood.¹

At a number of points, there were also significant changes in the audiences of the 1920's were receptive. On the whole, it is correct to say that there was an appeal to an expanding Volkish spirit, which was held their own, with two significant changes in the Pan-German Association. The role and nature of the Youth Movement. Now we must turn to the Pan-

Germans as representative of a Volkish organization which made itself and its message felt in the community at large.

The organization of the Pan-Germans deserves special emphasis because it was a relatively well-known, influential, and respectable society. Before the First World War it was the most important of the organizations that advocated a program based on various Volkish precepts. Only after the war, when numerous *Bünde* contested for dominance and splintered the following of the Pan-Germans, did the organization lose its commanding position.

The Pan-German Association was organized in 1890 as a patriotic group protesting the prospective release of the island of Helgoland to the English. The Pan-Germans almost immediately became sponsors of a German imperialism based on a Volkish rationale and formed themselves into a permanent body. They endorsed an expansionist foreign policy, advocating an enlargement of German territory in Europe as well as in the colonies. They subscribed to Volkish ideas to the extent that they demanded that a true racial and cultural unification be achieved in Germany which would give the German *Geist* a vital role in culture, social organization, and politics.² Moreover, they showed typical Volkish prejudices in selecting their areas of operations; for example, rather than forging a strong link with industry, they preferred to devote themselves to agricultural issues. This position, however, was soon recognized as untenable in a Germany where a part of industry stood ready to contribute members and money to the Pan-Germans, largely because of their rabidly expansionist foreign policy.

The change came mostly after the war, due to the ever increasing influence of one member of the organization: Alfred Hugenberg, the former director of Krupp's industrial empire,³ who forged a connection between industry and the Pan-Germans. Hugenberg's early affiliation with the organization and its leadership might well have rested, to a large extent, on their vociferous advocacy of a war to prevent the encroachment of militarily stronger neighbors. For the Krupp director this belligerent attitude might have translated itself into orders for rearmament, at a time when industry faced several exceptionally severe depressions. However, there were many concepts which Hugenberg and the Pan-Germans had in common, among which their anti-leftism, anti-socialism, and more rabid anti-communism were high in priority.⁴

We have said that the Pan-Germans were highly respectable. Prior to and especially during the war, the organization's list of members was graced with the names of such prestigious men as the sociolo-

+

Stresemann, and the historian Stresemann, supporters of a policy, soon left the organization the emphasis on agriculture and grew.⁵ Further press audiences, was supplied by Ernst Häckel and the romanticist Schemann, the popularizer of the executive board. He enjoyed a competent and Ernst Hasse, set the tone with the cessation of further thirteen years later, in 1908, he Heinrich Class. Class became it with an iron hand until the Pan-Germans he drew members, such as the racist ed outside the organization, les. Of special significance litary and political groups. les and he made unstint- eaving behind the mark of stood him in good stead. s attracted the devotion of Teachers, retail merchants, ed to the organization and All of them liked respecta- ul to their Volkish cause. ade his ideological position b der Kaiser war (If I Were points was the advocacy of ualize the ideal society em- mits on the discretion of the elitist parliament composed h, those with extensive land gnal service to the state. He government the "organic" ' In the book he also showed se the cause of land or that to support the latter. His a interests led him to advo- settle the eastern territories that such concerns led the

Pan-Germans into qualified support for a Germanic utopia such as Willibald Hentschel's Mittgart.¹¹ However, he opened a gap in the Volkish resistance to modernization and industry. Class's book paid tribute to the contributions that industry had made to the cause of the nation and the Volk. Some of the industrial enterprises, in the words of the Pan-Germans' *Alldeutsche Blätter*, "contained healthy Germanic elements within them."¹² Class had kind words for the Krupp enterprise, which was singled out as an example of a nationally valuable industrial complex (for all we know, this might have been part of the attempt to play up to Hugenberg). But he extended no such good will to the department stores and the banks. He viewed these with the venom typical of the Volkish movement, which had always denounced them as the overt agents of exploitation and the embodiment of the Jewish conspiracy.¹³

Whatever Class had endorsed in his book he was also willing to implement himself—above all, if he were made dictator. He did not rule out that possibility. Many years later, in the 1930's, when the organization had lost much of its support, the Pan-Germans still fervently believed that Class might yet take his place as the "born leader" of the nation.¹⁴ Class's disappointment at the failure of his aspirations, which had no real basis, was so intense that he never reconciled himself to the facts. The hope had been ridiculous. Hitler, after all, had a mass following, while Class had only the support of a dwindling organization. Instead, it was his close friend Hugenberg, who, having built on the earlier support of the Pan-Germans and become the leader of the conservative political party the DNVP, associated himself with Hitler's regime as a cabinet member with the vague hopes of collecting the pieces if the regime lost the confidence of the nation. *

Class led the Pan-Germans from a moderate attitude on the Jewish question toward vehement hostility against Jews. Anti-Semitism, as we have documented it, had always been a principal ingredient of a Volkish outlook; this case was no exception. From 1908 on, Class launched a determined campaign against the Jews, declaring them to be carriers of modern materialism and, consequently, enemies of the Germanic spiritual substance.¹⁵ Along with his predecessor and other members of the organization, he advocated that the state limit the immigration of Jews; but Class would also restrict the cultural and professional activities of native German Jews. The Jews were to be excluded from teaching, banking, and public office and forbidden to own landed property. Moreover, their persons and possessions were to be subject to double taxation. Their activity in the theater and in the literary journals, which had in-

* potentially, answer up to Hugenberg with us
A.H. He is looking to collect the pieces if we fail

two decades of the nineteenth century and newspapers which employed tar of law on their masthead.¹⁶ the so-called "Juden Ordnung," the Remberg Laws, proposed in 1919 "safety against Jewish Domination," was a German translation of the "Juden Ordnung" systematizations, indeed from German society hanging for those who disoriented the Pan-Germans considered this rich Class. It is highly probable that the points which Class himself organization had earlier found it is a measure of Class's success that a declaration which linked Jewish influence. The Pan-Germans everything with a human face line which is contradicted by

in spreading racial doctrines. It is, however, not surprising. It had a continuous record on its first official proclamation, based on race and culture. With the drive was intensified and outside admitted as members. Class H. S. Chamberlain in a lawsuit encouraged the work of the racial from he recruited for the organization in invaluable addition, for he latest information on the details, usually bearing "spiritual-ace," were listened to with attention of Kuhlbeck's ideas. Both men praised the Bund the shock troops of a racially ver, succeeded in making the function of political anthropology racial hygiene. Like Woltz and rewrote the great events

of the past from a Germanic or Aryan perspective, as when he declared to the Pan-Germans that the blond Aryan was the real transmitter of all European culture.²⁰ What Kuhlbeck and the Pan-Germans discussed did not, however, remain within the organization. Kuhlbeck, for example, wrote on the Renaissance in the publisher's catalogue of Eugen Diederichs' publishing house. He followed Woltmann by linking Germanism to the Renaissance. Yet here, curiously enough, he toned down the usual emphasis on the desirability of racial purity by advising that Aryan blood could do well with a small dose of dark blood to enhance its artistic creativity. For this statement he claimed a respectable source which had been honored by the Pan-Germans: Gobineau.²¹

The organization's other attempts to make itself felt in German life and government extended into the realm of politics. Here it initiated a minor revolt against the Volkish abhorrence of all political maneuvering: it established ties with a political party. Of course, it did not go so far as to constitute itself as a political party seeking office, but it considered it opportune and advantageous to link itself with the policies of a like-minded organization. Immediately after 1918, the Pan-Germans entered into close relations with the reconstituted German conservative party, the Deutschnationale Volkspartei.²² To the distress of the Pan-Germans, it was not really to their advantage. The direct benefit of the connection went not to them, but to the DNVP. However, in the beginning it held some promise.

The Pan-Germans came to the political scene with a reputation that stood well with the conservatives, especially with those who saw the system of politics itself as degenerate and inoperative and hopefully endorsed the ideology of the Volk, which held out the promise of a regime that would rise above parliamentary politics. From the beginning of the war, the Pan-Germans had stood for a determined drive for German victory, and in the last stages of the war they spearheaded the attack against Chancellor Bethmann-Hollweg and his peace proposals because they regarded them as too compromising. Their super-patriotism paid off. Conservatives in the highest military and government posts were especially grateful to Class and the Pan-Germans for their ideological support and for the considerable sums they helped to raise for the prewar expansion of the German fleet. As a token of gratitude, or in recognition of services rendered, they granted Class entrance to their councils.

In forging the alliance with the DNVP, the Pan-Germans simply extended their policies into a new, expanded field. Their main efforts were concentrated on attacking the Republic. Opposition to the Republic had always been eminently respectable and it came naturally

to Class and his followers. But in addition to directing overt hostility toward the parliamentary state, the Pan-Germans forged intimate contacts with the military and government establishment which enhanced the effectiveness of their ideological propaganda. Their ideology had remained uncontaminated. Its Volkish elements had been cultivated and strengthened through intimate connections with other Volkish organizations that had sprung up since the war. In fact, in spite of the direct relations with the DNVP, Class still attempted, though unsuccessfully, to bring about a coalescence of all radical Volkish groups into one representative organization. The venture foundered over differences in ideological emphasis. However, Class was able to gain for the Pan-Germans the total commitment of the violently anti-Semitic Völkisch Schutz- und Trutzbund (League for Protection and Defiance),²³ which, among other things, financed many of the racial works of Hans F. K. Günther. In this respect, the Pan-Germans reaped a harvest in two fields: in political respectability and among the less respectable organizations that provided them with their ideological imperus and strength.

The double aspect of the Pan-Germans—their respectability, on the one hand, and their extreme Volkish outlook, on the other—was best illustrated in their propaganda efforts. Through close personal connections, the organization was able to aid the most important organ of Volkish thought, the newspaper *Deutschlands Erneuerung* (*Germany's Rebirth*).²⁴ It was published in Munich under the editorship of J. F. Lehmann, an early and close associate of Hitler. The paper attained such distinction that every important theorist in the Volkish movement, regardless of his particular emphasis, contributed to it—among them Class, a deputy editor who published numerous articles; Dr. Paul Bang, the economic expert of the DNVP, who formulated the economic policies of his party; Alfred Rosenberg and Wilhelm Frick, who joined in representing the Nazi viewpoint; and Georg Schiele, who added his voice to the Volkish chorus as a supporter of the Artamanen.

For a time, before the fateful years 1932 and 1933, the Pan-Germans worked compatibly with the political organizations of the right, from the DNVP to the National Socialists. In these relationships the organization hoped to further its ideological position, and Class worked to enhance his own political aspirations. The progress of his cause was reported in his own newspaper, *Deutsche Zeitung*. The early issues, which reported the rise of Hitler, wrote of the new political force in a sympathetic light. Class strongly condemned the efforts to expel Hitler from Germany after the failure of his putsch. He declared that it would be scandalous to keep

Hitler out of Germany. Eastern European Jewry, the union with the East between Hitler and gravitated away from share Hugenberg's racialists and finally several could kiss Class's Hitler Emperor, by 1932 the leader as an upstart.²⁵

The history of the came to power. The turned toward the 1930's. The change of ranks of the Pan-Germans of them first shifted there went over to Hitler only the Nazis. We see the policies of the Nation of their own Volk. Several historians who Pan-Germans.²⁶ But Hitler's ideas may have were not original with and belonged to the Pan-Germans lies spectable of the Volk 1920's. Through it, Volkishment itself; and the Youth Movement and of the Germanic ideology.

With the slow disintegration retired into semi-obscure found "freedom."²⁷ The leaders, who realized they usurped their aspirationment.

The efforts of the Volkish movement were them never gained ground they left their mark not a watershed in the art. Gräff made a futile at

* Landsberg
on the edge

dition to directing overt hostility the Pan-Germans forged inside government establishment their ideological propaganda. minated. Its Volkish elements through intimate connections had sprung up since the war. With the DNVP, Class still at- tending about a coalescence of all representative organization. How- ever, the ideological emphasis. How- ever, the total commit- ment to Schutz- und Trutzbund which, among other things, was F. K. Günther. In this re- spect in two fields: in political and in the organizations that pro- vided strength.

and their respectability, on the other—was not. Through close personal relations to aid the most important (Deutschlands Erneuerung) in Munich under the edi- torial associate of Hitler. The most important theorist in the particular emphasis, con- sidered editor who published the economic expert of the policies of his party; Alfred Gröber, in representing the Volk- ish voice to the Volk-

1932 and 1933, the Pan- German organizations of the National Socialists. In these relation- ship, ideological position, and aspirations. The progress- ively, *Deutsche Zei- tung*, rise of Hitler, wrote of the fight. Class strongly con- sidered after the failure to be scandalous to keep

Hitler out of Germany while undesirable foreigners—that is, Eastern European Jews—were constantly being admitted.²⁵ As the union with the DNVP became more intimate and the contest between Hitler and Hugenberg seemed imminent, Class slowly gravitated away from Nazi sympathies. Furthermore, he began to share Hugenberg's misgivings about the leader of the National Socialists and finally severed all ties with him. Thus, while in 1920 Hitler could kiss Class's hand and honor him as the author of *If I Were Emperor*, by 1932 the Pan-German leader publicly condemned Hitler as an upstart.²⁶

The history of the Pan-Germans drew to a close when Hitler came to power. The membership, as apart from the leadership, had turned toward the more viable National Socialists by the early 1930's. The change-over was perceptible in the depletion of the ranks of the Pan-Germans—40,000 in 1922 to 8,000 in 1933.²⁷ Most of them first shifted their allegiance to the DNVP and only from there went over to Hitler, but, at the time, Class blamed and resented only the Nazis. We should not be surprised at the shift. To many the policies of the Nazis merely represented the logical consummation of their own Volkish ideas. This fact has been emphasized by several historians who have called the Hitler regime a child of the Pan-Germans.²⁸ But this conclusion is a vast exaggeration, for while Hitler's ideas may have coincided with those of Class, these ideas were not original with the Pan-German leader. They developed from and belonged to the whole Volkish movement. The importance of the Pan-Germans lies in their success as the strongest and most respectable of the Volkish organizations until their decline in the 1920's. Through it, Volkish ideas found firm footing within the establishment itself; and thus this organization must be ranked with the Youth Movement and the educational system as the chief transmitters of the Germanic ideology from the prewar to the postwar world.

With the slow dissolution of the Pan-Germans after 1933, Class retired into semi-obscurity and proclaimed his love for a newly found "freedom."²⁹ This reaction was duplicated by other Volkish leaders, who realized that Hitler had beaten them to the draw and usurped their aspirations to form a dictatorship of the Volkish movement.

The efforts of the Pan-Germans to become representative of the Volkish movement were emulated by other organizations. Most of them never gained great renown, distinction, or influence; but they left their mark nonetheless. Just prior to the war, which formed a watershed in the activity of the Volkish organizations, Otger Gräff made a futile attempt to create a united Volkish front under

* Landsberg — Hitler, commenting on the editorial in the *Deutsche Zeitung*

ifen (the Hawks), represent-
 ovement which disseminated
 t strength in Austria, where,
 ichmann passed through as a
 e and violent for the German
 d by Fidus, H. S. Chamber-
 e-collar union, the Deutsch-
 (HV), Gräff failed in his at-
 is efforts, remained only one
 s.³⁰

nt attempts to forge a united
 pidly increased in number in
 ting, it seemed, had failed to
 le killing and mutilation that
 hetted the appetites of the
 ng people were driven by
 aving lost the battle and the
 at the cessation of hostilities
 isive contest in the field; or,
 dly looking for something to
 ie state they had fought for
 ill of these factors coalesced
 eling of the soldiers return-
 ing from it had infused both
 with a renewed spirit of na-

t line had strengthened the
 gether by a common spirit,
 nly valid form of social or-
 astrophe. The experience of
 d its way into literature and
 afflict which influenced the
 bject. Two of the most dis-
 mood were made by Franz
 wecker, who later became
 : summed up the feeling of
 perceiving the nation." He
 iving earth in which we had
 : back and had experienced
 action can there be such a
 ena of blood, cruelty, and
 Ernst Jünger, to whom we
 : a trial of endurance, char-

acter, and national heritage. His book *Stahlgewitter (Thunder of Steel)* (1919) exalted the storm troopers, the men who braved the baptism of fire, and called them the true aristocracy of the nation. Both writers, glorifying the contest between men, had done their work: they had inspired a youth dislocated by the war and the ensuing events to believe that only by recapturing the war spirit would they restore their self-identity within the greater, revived glory of the Volk.

Some youth acted immediately. Soon after the armistice seventy-three *Bünde* came into being. As time went by, each maintained an independent position, but their memberships tended to overlap. The most volatile and distinctive of these groups were the Free Corps, voluntary army units that continued to fight on Germany's eastern frontier in defiance of Allied demands. Realizing that the war was lost on the western frontier, they still were determined to halt the spread of communism, to keep the enemy in the east, the Poles and Lithuanians, from taking more German soil. The Free Corps were not a part of the regular army but real *Bünde*, united by a common spiritual bond and led by a single heroic figure. One of their members, Ernst von Salomon, later wrote that these *Bünde* were effective only when they centered on real leaders.³² Whatever Volkish inspiration these units possessed was only heightened once they returned home from the east. Most of the members streamed into other *Bünde*, concentrating upon the nation's internal problems as well as on the French occupation of the Ruhr. To both problems they brought a determination to have them resolved in the interests of the German Volk.

When the existing organizations did not suit their fancy or did not measure up to their standards of toughness and purpose, former Free Corps members formed their own *Bünde*. Beppo Römer, for instance, and his *Bund Oberland* returned from fighting against Polish encroachment in Silesia to help defeat the leftist government of Bavaria.³³ Many groups, like the Organization Escherich, believed that they were defending an idealistic concept of life against the inroads of materialism, which they translated in practical terms to mean supporting the Volkish ideology and defeating all leftist movements.³⁴ The *Bund Wherwolf*, for instance, which concentrated first on fighting the socialists and then the French in the Ruhr, depicted itself as representative of the revitalized "new generation" which opposed all socialism, plutocracy, and liberalism.³⁵ When they realized that they were too divided to constitute a viable force within the nation, many members of the various *Bünde*, as soon as a larger movement with an impetus similar to their own came along,

spiritual intercourse with earth and cosmos.⁴² This mystically religious emphasis highlighted his opposition—reflecting a similar thinking in the whole Volkish movement—to the later Hitler and to Catholicism, the foreign theology.

At first Wulle had courted Hitler, and he claimed later that they had even come to an agreement in 1923, in which Hitler had promised to lead the northern wing of the Deutsch-Völkische Freipartei. But this agreement came to nothing⁴³ and shortly thereafter Wulle became a highly vocal opponent of Hitler and the Nazi party. His antagonism stemmed from a combination of disillusionment with the mass politics practiced by Hitler and a growing fear that a pro-Catholic Fascism, such as seemed to have grown up in Italy, would endanger the Germanic heritage. Of particular anxiety to Wulle was Hitler's political maneuverability; he was able to negotiate even with the Catholic Center party—when it was to his advantage. Wulle later condemned Hitler as the "Bavarian cross-breed between Mussolini and Louis XIV."⁴⁴

As we have already noted, the rationale for Wulle's opposition to the Nazis is to be found in his devotion to the Volkish mysticism, in the light of which he considered the power politics of Hitler immoral and heretical. Before the state could be reformed, he proclaimed, the soul of the German nation had to be purified. Only after that was accomplished could the Third Reich blossom forth. Simply destroying the existing state structure was by no means sufficient. Political parties alone could not achieve the Volkish goal; a whole new Germany must first be created!⁴⁵

By 1932, left without an orthodox Volkish alternative, Wulle supported the cabinets of both von Papen and Schleicher. He was not fully satisfied with either—in his eyes they were too lenient on the Jewish question⁴⁶—but they were the last competent representatives of conservative authoritarianism, and might serve to prevent a takeover by Hitler. After the Nazis assumed power, Wulle was considered dangerous enough—in spite of his explicit support of Hitler's anti-Marxism and anti-Semitism⁴⁷—to be incarcerated in a concentration camp. He was eventually released through the intercession of the Nazi minister of interior, Wilhelm Frick, the National Socialist closest to the Volkish leaders.⁴⁸

Gräfe-Goldebee, a close associate of Wulle, was another significant figure who emerged from the Volkish organizations. He too was devoted to Volkish principles, but he was a man of greater personal force and had better social connections. Originally he had also been a member of the DNVP, but, like Wulle, he became dissatisfied with its slow progress in fostering Volkish interests and left the

party to join the Freie with the DNVP and for- garded as a member. The tage, regarded Gräfe-Gol-

During the 1920's Gräfe-Goldebee's attitude toward Hitler. A Strasser, he signed the p his abortive putsch.⁴⁹ outright hostility. For decided that the leader identifying irrevocably 1929 he thought that Hi Volk by hushing up the which the Versailles Tre Gräfe-Goldebee charged and political reasons, hav cusation, Gräfe-Goldebee Fascism and thus to the i

Gräfe-Goldebee pursued that year, in a letter to Socialiste party; although people an awareness of Germany. Its leaders were the true, creative leader nizes the imperfection c injected a note of septic the Catholic German Si lacked all talent for state provide the saving force: for, just as it was "incor let us say, from Munic present circumstances, t necessary caliber of lea (and Gräfe-Goldebee w gaged in a demagogic f ceivably result in Natio their dependence on the added danger that could authoritarian structure of

Gräfe-Goldebee and DNVP, where they had shared their views. More Protestant North and it v

+

l cosmos.⁴² This mystically re-
 position—reflecting a similar
 ment—to the later Hitler and to

, and he claimed later that they
 in 1923, in which Hitler had
 of the Deutsch-Völkische Frei-
 to nothing⁴³ and shortly there-
 opponent of Hitler and the Nazi
 in a combination of disillusion-
 d by Hitler and a growing fear
 s seemed to have grown up in
 heritage. Of particular anxiety
 verability; he was able to nego-
 party—when it was to his ad-
 der as the "Bavarian cross-breed"
 14

ionale for Wulle's opposition to
 ion to the Volkish mysticism, in
 ie power politics of Hitler im-
 te could be reformed, he pro-
 on had to be purified. Only after
 hird Reich blossom forth. Sim-
 ture was by no means sufficient.
 sieve the Volkish goal; a whole
 15

Volkish alternative, Wulle sup-
 pen and Schleicher. He was not
 es they were too lenient on the
 ie last competent representatives
 l might serve to prevent a take-
 med power, Wulle was consid-
 his explicit support of Hitler's
 o be incarcerated in a concen-
 leased through the intercession
 elm Frick, the National Socialist

of Wulle, was another significant
 h organizations. He too was de-
 was a man of greater personal
 ctions. Originally he had also
 ke Wulle, he became dissatisfied
 Volkish interests and left the

party to join the Freiheitspartei. However, he retained intimate ties
 with the DNVP and for all intents and purposes continued to be re-
 garded as a member. The DNVP, in turn, and perhaps to its advan-
 tage, regarded Gräfe-Goldebee as a close ally.

During the 1920's Gräfe-Goldebee at first maintained a cordial at-
 titude toward Hitler. Along with General Ludendorff and Gregor
 Strasser, he signed the petition for Hitler's release from prison after
 his abortive putsch.⁴⁹ This friendliness, however, soon turned to
 outright hostility. For reasons similar to Wulle's, Gräfe-Goldebee
 decided that the leader of the National Socialists had equivocated in
 identifying irrevocably with the Volkish cause. For instance, in
 1929 he thought that Hitler had betrayed the sacred interests of the
 Volk by hushing up the plight of the Germans in the southern Tyrol,
 which the Versailles Treaty had placed under Italian rule. Moreover,
 Gräfe-Goldebee charged, Hitler had done so for purely mercenary
 and political reasons, having been paid off by Mussolini. With this ac-
 cusation, Gräfe-Goldebee, like Wulle, linked Hitler with Italian
 Fascism and thus to the international Catholic conspiracy.⁵⁰

Gräfe-Goldebee pursued this line of thought even up to 1932. In
 that year, in a letter to a friend, he maintained that the National
 Socialist party; although an excellent instrument for arousing in the
 people an awareness of nationhood and the Volk, could not save
 Germany. Its leaders were concerned with self-glorification, whereas
 the true, creative leader puts the cause above himself and recog-
 nizes the imperfection of all that is human. Here Gräfe-Goldebee
 injected a note of sectional and religious prejudice by stating that
 the Catholic German South, the seat of the early Nazi strength,
 lacked all talent for statesmanship. Only the Protestant North could
 provide the saving forces. The leader had to come from the North,
 for, just as it was "inconceivable that a Bismarck could have come,
 let us say, from Munich, or a Luther from Baden," so, under
 present circumstances, the South would be unable to provide the
 necessary caliber of leadership. Moreover, the National Socialists
 (and Gräfe-Goldebee wrote this before the purge of Röhm) en-
 gaged in a demagogic flirtation with socialism which might con-
 ceivably result in National Bolshevism. Gräfe-Goldebee feared that
 their dependence on the undisciplined and rowdy masses was an
 added danger that could lead to the destruction of the disciplined,
 authoritarian structure of the nation.⁵¹

Gräfe-Goldebee and Wulle were not alone in these fears. The
 DNVP, where they had first received their political indoctrination,
 shared their views. Moreover, the party's strength lay mainly in the
 Protestant North and it was strongly anti-Catholic. It is obvious that

these tendencies would greatly restrict the effectiveness of such a Volkish movement and its affiliates. It is difficult to see how they could attain national power if the whole of the South was written off as politically sterile. Hitler, as we know, did not make this mistake. His anti-Catholicism was subordinated to the business at hand. He negotiated with any group if it was to his advantage. When it suited him, he even dealt with the Catholic Center party. And the fact that he himself came originally from the South effectively discredited the regional prejudices of his Volkish adversaries.

In addition to the individual *Bünde* and the outstanding personalities who emerged from them, the Volkish organizations made another contribution to the furtherance of the Germanic ideology. The newspapers that the various organizations published proved to be the most effective means of communicating the ideas of the movement. The Volkish journals provided a forum through which everyone, from Class to Wulle, from the *Deutschnationale Volkspartei* to the National Socialists, could be heard. Among them *Deutschlands Erneuerung* and Wulle's *Deutsche Tageblatt* were the most important. Other papers, representing a narrower spectrum of the movement, such as Eckart's *Auf Gut Deutsch*, published the works of such men as the Nazi Alfred Rosenberg, the educator Hermann Lietz, the dramatist Ernst Wachler, and the ubiquitous racist Theodor Fritsch.

We must now turn to a significant question, which has already been partly answered: Why, if the *Bünde* were so widespread and, at least temporarily, popular, did they not prove to be a more durable political force? For one thing, the membership of these organizations, including the early National Socialists, was very unstable.⁵² Their size at any given moment depended on a variety of factors: the immediate situation, the needs of the members, politics, education, and so forth. For another, the constant turnover in many of the smaller organizations prevented the development of a dedicated, stable cadre. But the most important reason is that the *Bünde* were essentially elitist. They scorned to proselytize, to appeal to the masses, to organize themselves into political parties. Above all, they failed to unite. As we know, Hitler did not make the same mistakes. By instituting a social program, making skillful use of propaganda, and training a dynamic leadership, Hitler solved the problem for the Nazis.

However, the Volkish organizations were not entirely ineffective. Despite their divisive tendencies and their inability to resolve differences of opinion, they continued to agitate and to produce important political figures—a reflection of their tenacity and widespread

support. Ideologically, the and they shared basic cor ally, they were deadly e interpreted as clashes betw For most of the figures v selves as charismatic leade man from above," and I even Mahraun had similar i

In evaluating the contr history backwards. In 19 would triumph over the Hugenberg still held fast turn would come after vo intermediaries, had squashed we must again emphasize that fundamentally all the ally their solutions for th same. But some were m selves to the realities.

From this analysis, the regime that they opposed gerated.⁵³ These men hel to destroy the Republic, him only when he becam when he had become a riv basis for their opposition; ical differences. That Hi lenced them was only log only divisive influences at attempting to consolidate essentially National Social it with him, however insig groups, the DNVP and th very roots of the alliance manic ideology.

restrict the effectiveness of such a
 tes. It is difficult to see how they
 whole of the South was written off
 : know, did not make this mistake;
 nated to the business at hand. He
 as to his advantage. When it suited
 lic Center party. And the fact that
 the South effectively discredited
 ish adversaries.

Bünde and the outstanding person-
 the Volkish organizations made
 erance of the Germanic ideology.
 organizations published proved to
 communicating the ideas of the
 provided a forum through which
 rom the *Deutschnationale Volks-*
 , could be heard. Among them
 Wulle's *Deutsche Tageblatt* were
 representing a narrower spectrum
Auf Gut Deutsch, published the
 red Rosenberg, the educator Her-
 Vachler, and the ubiquitous racist

cant question, which has already
Bünde were so widespread and, at
 not prove to be a more durable
 : membership of these organiza-
 l Socialists, was very unstable.⁵²
 epended on a variety of factors:
 of the members, politics, educa-
 constant turnover in many of the
 ie development of a dedicated,
 it reason is that the *Bünde* were
 o proselytize, to appeal to the
 political parties. Above all, they
 did not make the same mistakes.
 king skillful use of propaganda,
 Hitler solved the problem for the

as were not entirely ineffective.
 their inability to resolve differ-
 agitate and to produce impor-
 their tenacity and widespread

support. Ideologically, there was not much to choose between them,
 and they shared basic concepts with the National Socialists; politi-
 cally, they were deadly enemies. But this antagonism should be in-
 terpreted as clashes between personalities in the struggle for power.
 For most of the figures we have discussed here thought of them-
 selves as charismatic leaders. Class believed himself to be the "great
 man from above," and Hugenberg, Wulle, Gräfe-Goldebeck, and
 even Mahraun had similar ideas.

In evaluating the contributions of these men we must not read
 history backwards. In 1932 it was not at all obvious that Hitler
 would triumph over the rest of the Volkish leaders. At that date,
 Hugenberg still held fast to his ambitions, while others hoped their
 turn would come after von Papen and Schleicher, the God-sent in-
 termediaries, had squashed the upstart. But, at the risk of repetition,
 we must again emphasize that these were political antagonisms and
 that fundamentally all these men shared a common ideology. Basi-
 cally their solutions for the crisis of the German ideology were the
 same. But some were more successful in accommodating them-
 selves to the realities.

From this analysis, the claim of Volkish survivors of the Nazi
 regime that they opposed the rise of Hitler would seem to be exag-
 gerated.⁵³ These men helped to spread the Volkish ideology, tried
 to destroy the Republic, assisted the rise of Hitler, and turned on
 him only when he became the principal threat to their aspirations,
 when he had become a rival personality. There was little ideological
 basis for their opposition; nor, in fact, did they claim serious ideolog-
 ical differences. That Hitler, after his assumption of power, si-
 lenced them was only logical; they had done their work and were
 only divisive influences at a time when a more powerful force was
 attempting to consolidate its power. Only a few organizations, not
 essentially National Socialist, escorted Hitler to power and shared
 it with him, however insignificantly, for a time. It is to two of these
 groups, the DNVP and the Stahlhelm that we must turn to see the
 very roots of the alliance between the German right and the Ger-
 manic ideology.

CHAPTER 13

Bedeviled Conservatives

IN PREVIOUS CHAPTERS our investigation was of necessity carried forward beyond 1918, for the ideas and the careers of men with whom we have been concerned developed, to a certain extent, independently of the events of the war. But though in many cases these men were not in close touch with reality, the war nonetheless marks a crucial period in the history of Volkish thought. The ideology, of course, had been widely disseminated before the war, but afterward it was suddenly transformed into a politically effective system of thought. It was after the war that the ideology acquired a mass base. And it was after the war that National Socialism emerged to translate what had been a utopian vision into a ruthless reality.

The year 1918 brought with it the kind of development which justified the fears of the Volkish thinkers. A war had been lost, and the prestige of the nation had been undermined. In 1918 revolution broke out in both the North and the South of Germany. While the revolution in the North, which resulted in the abdication of the Emperor, was brought under control by the new government of the Republic, that in the South threatened to get out of hand. In Munich, first a left-wing republic was established (1918) and then a soviet republic (1919) patterned after the Russian model. The Volkish thinkers reacted strongly to these developments in Bavaria: their worst fears of a communist Germany seemed to be coming true. The birth of Nazism was greatly facilitated by these developments in Munich. Not only did the leaders of this Bavarian Republic adhere to anti-nationalist (indeed pacifist) doctrines, but many of them were Jews besides. The Bavarian Republic was crushed in 1919 with the help of the Free Corps, troops who had refused to demobilize after the war and who became attracted to Volkish ideals. The Bavarian

danger was removed, and the German Republic endured. Though it was "middle of the road" politically, those of Volkish leanings regarded it as the product of a left-wing revolution and thought that its true nature was symbolized by radical uprisings like the one that occurred in Munich.

Had the Republic found a more lasting stability, the history of Volkish thought might well have ended in 1918. But the middle classes found themselves increasingly threatened by inflation, and even during the few so-called "good years" of the Republic their status was in grave jeopardy. Increasingly they turned toward radical political solutions. And while the middle classes turned primarily toward the right, unemployment—rising toward six million within the first decade of the Weimar period—produced a strong left-wing movement among the working classes.

Haunted by the specter of a floundering nation, Germans of both political extremes sought alternatives to a parliamentary republic. With the failure of so many German hopes and dreams, the political thinking of those opposed to the Republic became increasingly utopian and unrealistic. Indeed, as we shall see, Volkish strength continued to increase even during the "good years" of the Republic; nor was it fundamentally affected by the various economic crises of the 1920's. The German right was rapidly becoming a Volkish right.

Apart from the National Socialist party (NSDAP), the political party which benefited most from the Volkish atmosphere, yet one which was also bedeviled by it, was the reconstituted Conservative party, now known as the Deutschnationale Volkspartei (DNVP). In 1918 leading members of the Conservative party proclaimed a new party which promised to pay greater attention to the masses. The party adopted the name German National Peoples' party in order to symbolize this new spirit. In reality the members of the party continued to be known popularly as the Conservatives, and we shall use both terms interchangeably. Unlike the Volkish groups which we have discussed thus far, the DNVP was a major political party, polling some six million votes at its peak. An analysis of the influence of Volkish thought upon the DNVP is thus of the utmost importance, for it goes far toward revealing the extent to which this ideology penetrated the "respectable" right. This was not a party of poets, philosophers, or the uprooted; it was composed primarily of those who believed in the sanctity of private property, the Church, and the state. Moreover, consistent with the prewar conservative tradition, the DNVP advocated loyalty to the house of Hohenzollern, and continued to do so as late as 1928.

The DNVP always conservative allegiance challenged by Volkish this tension, Volkish concerns, became even Republic.

While the postwar generously close to the been initiated in the were marked by econ- tives entered into sever field of agriculture, co from a rural to an urb: the Bund der Landwir principles of blood an- ance was quickly fo: mans, and it was stren Republic. Most signifi- tives of the 1880's and Stöcker's programs to that time, the Conserv: were the uncompromi-

These anti-Semitic a- tinued as undercurrent party. The newly fou looking back in the d: that anti-Semitism doe looking toward more trend came to the surf: the Conservative party Germans and the Vater- servative party itself, carried on by men lik became the party's pr: referred to as Knüppel virulent attacks on th when the Conservative the Volkish impetus steadily.²

The Kapp putsch tempted to overthrow ship of the Conservati succeeded for a very

man Republic endured. Though it ally, those of Volkish leanings re- ing revolution and thought that its ical uprisings like the one that oc-

re lasting stability, the history of : ended in 1918. But the middle ightly threatened by inflation, and ood years" of the Republic their ncreasingly they turned toward ible the middle classes turned pri-loyment—rising toward six mil- the Weimar period—produced a the working classes.

ndering nation, Germans of both ves to a parliamentary republic. an hopes and dreams, the political e Republic became increasingly s we shall see, Volkish strength he "good years" of the Republic; by the various economic crises of as rapidly becoming a Volkish

st party (NSDAP), the political the Volkish atmosphere, yet one as the reconstituted Conservative nationale Volkspartei (DNVP). ervative party proclaimed a new ter attention to the masses. The ational Peoples' party in order to the members of the party con- e Conservatives, and we shall use e the Volkish groups which we was a major political party, poll- ak. An analysis of the influence VP is thus of the utmost impor- ing the extent to which this ide- right. This was not a party of d; it was composed primarily of of private property, the Church, t with the prewar conservative alty to the house of Hohenzol- 1928.

The DNVP always attempted to give priority to the traditional conservative allegiances, and yet these principles were constantly challenged by Volkish agitators within the party itself. As a result of this tension, Volkish precepts, mixed with traditional conservative concerns, became ever stronger during the period of the Weimar Republic.

While the postwar era saw the conservative elements draw dangerously close to the Volkish movement, the trend had already been initiated in the 1880's and 1890's. During these years, which were marked by economic dislocation and recession, the conservatives entered into several alliances with Volkish organizations. In the field of agriculture, confronted with the painful process of shifting from a rural to an urban economy, the conservatives identified with the Bund der Landwirte, which had been founded on the Germanic principles of blood and soil. In the sphere of foreign policy, an alliance was quickly formed with the recently founded Pan-Germans, and it was strengthened and consolidated under the Weimar Republic. Most significantly, on the Jewish question the conservatives of the 1880's and 1890's had come to support most of Adolf Stöcker's programs to exclude Jews from German economic life. At that time, the Conservative party's Tivoli program stated that "Jews were the uncompromising opponents of conservative principles."¹

These anti-Semitic attitudes, which were of Volkish origin, continued as undercurrents throughout the history of the Conservative party. The newly founded DNVP was Janus-faced, with one side looking back in the direction of Adolf Stöcker, who had believed that anti-Semitism does not apply to baptized Jews, and the other looking toward more radically racist Volkish notions. The latter trend came to the surface during the war, when leading members of the Conservative party allied themselves more closely with the Pan-Germans and the Vaterlandspartei (Patriotic party). Within the Conservative party itself, the tradition of the eighties and nineties was carried on by men like Gräfe-Goldebee and Richard Kunze, who became the party's propaganda chief in 1913. Kunze was popularly referred to as Knüppel Kunze (Kunze with the stick) because of his virulent attacks on the Jews. After Germany's defeat in the war, when the Conservative party had reconstituted itself as the DNVP, the Volkish impetus gained new vigor and continued to increase steadily.²

The Kapp putsch of 1920, in which right-wing elements attempted to overthrow the Republic, was important in the relationship of the Conservatives to the Volkish ideology. Wolfgang Kapp succeeded for a very brief time in establishing his regime in Berlin

that it influenced people outside the party, the body of German conservatives at large. Again we must reiterate that although the Volkish proponents in this, as in so many similar situations, did not gain outright control of the organization, still their participation and the public image they projected were sufficient to inculcate in a great many people a political and ideological alternative which reflected a Volkish mood. Within the DNVP, this showed itself most successfully through the propaganda department. Here they worked to boil their views of the party's program and policy toward the Jews down to the essentials. In the DNVP's drive for popular support at the polls, its attitude on the Jewish question had always been an acceptance of the Jewish stereotype. Although at first this anti-Semitic propaganda was merely an undercurrent and optional for local party chapters, in time it attained official stature and support.

Anti-Semitic propaganda was used to castigate the Republic. The fear of revolution and the fear of Jewish dominance were linked—as when radical socialists such as Eisner and Leviné (leaders of the left-wing Bavarian Republic, both of whom were killed by right-wing fanatics) were compared with respectable middle-class personalities such as the Minister-President of Prussia, Paul Hirsch. The fear of a Jewish conspiracy—capitalist or communist, depending on the situation—was also used extensively. As early as 1919, the party circulated a flier depicting Jewish stereotypes, the *Kohn Sorten* (the Kohn types), which, along with other pamphlets, warned the electorate that if it failed to vote the DNVP ticket Germany would become a slave of Judah.¹⁴ As time went on and the DNVP mustered greater electoral strength, the anti-Semitic appeal also grew in intensity and the fear of the Jewish conspiracy was used for all it was worth. The fliers of 1920 had asked the rhetorical question: "What has become of Berlin?"—to be answered: "A playground for the Jews!" By 1924 the party had declared that its efforts had been expanded to battle the "Jewish influence on all fronts." It exhorted the public to do likewise.¹⁵ The use of portraits (or, rather, caricatures) of various Jewish public figures, making them scapegoats for the economic and political crisis in Germany, became popular, culminating in the DNVP poster of 1932, which depicted a series of Jewish faces with the caption: "Such men have guarded the beauty and dignity of the Republic."¹⁶ But this crude campaign propaganda had a sophisticated side, in its visual restatement of a commonplace of Volkish thought. The public was told that the unpleasant and repulsive external features of the Jew did in fact correspond to an equally distasteful, egotistical, and alien internal nature, and that the two races, the Jews and the Aryans, were inher-

ently incompatible and of the purity of German blood.

Thus, the Conservative was a central tenet of the DNVP. On the other side by side with the Semitic fliers were the DNVP made such success. Oskar Hergt his leadership, admitted to facilitate in an external DNVP.¹⁷ A decade welcomed anti-Semitic propaganda posters. The history of the party committed to the Volkish.

While respectable moved in the best so their aides were on the agenda. The volume Conservative and the function of the Jew that the Jews were in Germany would have been.

By the 1920's the and in much of the DNVP, and was absent. Years of Volkish had culminated in the attainment of the causes aligned with the clever Goebbels and such propaganda unpopular objectification.

By 1929, the DNVP, and yet there to the organization such as R. G. Quaatz committed suicide policy. Yet Quaatz Many Jews were not late as 1928 Jewish office requesting information.

a matter of expediency—for this was just before an election to the Diet—headquarters sidestepped the issues and either replied after the election or ignored the questions entirely. A prime example of this occurred in 1932, when the question was of some importance in deciding the allegiance of many Jewish election districts.²⁰

Why Jews continued to be interested in the DNVP has been debated innumerable times, but we do not have a really satisfactory answer. Two explanations, by no means mutually exclusive, may be suggested. Many Jews misunderstood the profundity of anti-Semitism in Germany and underestimated its effectiveness as a political weapon. They regarded the Germanic ideology as part of a nationalistic movement within which Jews might be accepted if they submerged themselves deeply and inextricably in the cause and the Volk. There was precedent for such thinking. Had not many early advocates of the Volkish outlook—such as Kapp, among the more recent—distinguished between the native and the immigrant East European Jew? The DNVP itself fostered the illusion when it harped on the dangers of further Jewish immigration from the East.²¹

The second reason for the Jews' continued adherence was more tactical and therefore more rational. They simply chose the lesser evil. From the point of view of the Jews, if a movement advocating the most radical brand of Volkish anti-Semitism was about to triumph, as the 1932 Nazi victory at the polls portended, then supporting the DNVP seemed a logical move. What were they hoping for from the DNVP? What was it in the party that provided them with some hope that the choice would be a correct one and to their advantage? It was the traditional element that had been bedeviled by the Volkish extremism, but which still defined the party's objective as the retention of order and property under a revived monarchism bolstered by Christian ethics. Thus what the Jews identified with was the core of traditional conservatism which still seemed to reflect the aspirations of the movement.

What were these elements which, although they had been surrounded by Volkish ideas and pressures, had not completely succumbed to the popular appeal of fanaticism and could still maintain the party's image as a champion of traditional conservatism? There was, as we have said, a considerable devotion to the idea of monarchy in the Wilhelmine tradition of Protestant Christianity. One of the party's favorite election appeals, for instance, depicted a mother and daughter reading the Bible, with the caption: "We cling to the word of God, vote DNVP!"²² And even where it identified with anti-Semitism, it did permit the Jews the alternatives of conversion and

spiritualization. Their variety in that it deriv-
ism toward the Jews:
served the interests of
quently, it had a built-
resorting to anything
March 1933, the centre
the soul of the Volk
party opposes as a mat
The Nazis, devoid of
of honorary anteceder
and his mass-oriented a

This rejection of fo
party which was ende
majority of the DNVP
Traub. Traub represe
guided a whole sector
who formed a special s
Dibelius. The minister
participation in the fig
at the same time an op
and German culture.
would also encourage
Reichs Chancellery bei
these Protestant minis
against ultramontane
ized the captive Sunde
enveloped them in the
than in Germanic sun s

In 1928 Gottfried I
great "misfortune that
ophy of conservatism l
something for everybo
ter of fact Traub, earl
doxy of this conservat
religious movement ea
prewar Social Democr
and "introduced" Tra
joined the imperialistic
dox Lutheran Church.
political problems of t
Republic, he participat
best to subdue the volk

Ac
w
A. H.
reading

↳ "What swine they are!" says A. H.

joined the inner circle of the DNVP. Up to this point in his life, his radical political development reflected the pattern of the Conservative party; he even shared its qualified endorsement of Hitler. Traub appreciated and supported what he considered Hitler's "pure" nationalism but felt that it was too circumscribed and restricted by the leader's fanatical personality. He even went so far as to endorse the Hitler-Ludendorff putsch, and hearing of its failure—which he ascribed to Hitler's extremism—exclaimed that it was the "worst hour in my life."²⁷

Though Traub had severed official connections with the Jatho movement, he still retained the imprint of his past associations. He conceived of Lutheranism in somewhat mystical terms and thought of it as the spiritual ingredient within the broad concept of the state as well as the religion of the personal and individual soul. Like Diederichs, he stressed the importance of the *Geist*, but he was an even more thoroughgoing Hegelian. He believed that the *Geist* saw the present as a mirror of the future, a future which would bring freedom through the instrumentality of the state viewed as an expression of the Volk.²⁸

In this context, he inveighed against the supposed domination of the Jews as reflecting the supremacy of a materialism which prevented the Volk from attaining its due greatness. To him, Jewish and proletarian materialism, along with the vulgar desires of the masses, were elements hostile to the Germanic ideology.²⁹ And since he feared the use of radical and violent methods of eliminating the Jewish problem more than the materialism of the Jews, Traub fell out of sympathy with the National Socialists after Hitler came to power. The battle against Jewish influence was important for Traub, but it was not the central task. He believed that obsession with Jews endangered Germany's military potential. For if the anti-Jewish emphasis became the primary concern, as in National Socialism, the German soldier would not fight France with a "holy hate," but rather with the feeling that the French soldier was also a dupe of the Jewish conspiracy. Thus his will to fight would be weakened as enmity toward that conspiracy united the two "dupes" more than it divided them.³⁰ However, this rather odd rationalization must not obscure the fact that Traub's point of view was similar to that of several other Volkish figures. Men such as the Volkish writer Wilhelm Stapel also played down the Jewish question (while fully accepting the Volkish stereotype) because the salvation of the Volk must come through its own inner strength and not merely through war against the principal adversary.

When Traub rejected the policies of Hitler during the Third Reich

he was sincere. He was in their isolation under former Volkish policies frankly states that he v lution," has also blame marked for exterminat cal precepts of Karl B pecially Protestantism, power, that authority r

If Gottfried Traub c within the party, Pau sented the extreme Vol the Jews in the cent Meister he authored o upon the Jews: *Judä* He condemned the Jev pecially economic ones than a form of Jewish i was characteristic of must analyze it furth economic questions to that they were relatec Volk.³⁴ The Germans, but regarded it as limit ations, as was done by existed only within th ished the role of the Therefore free trade v

Bang believed that many's problems, and l of Friedrich List. Wit ployers and workers fc assuming the role of g again appeared, now t the emphasis was no lo dustry to the land, be tuted the greatest mar self-sufficiency entaile the nation would be marker. In his prescrij called for spaciousness blood meant race, onl work. The Jews were

* an argument w A. H. Woodcock
the Volk philosopher and total books

Up to this point in his life, he followed the pattern of the Conservative endorsement of Hitler. Traub considered Hitler's "pure" nationalism as unscripted and restricted by the state. He went so far as to endorse the ending of its failure—which he claimed that it was the "worst

connections with the Catholicism of his past associations. He hated mystical terms and thought of the broad concept of the state and individual soul. Like Dietrich of the Geist, but he was an even more convinced that the Geist saw the future which would bring freedom to the state viewed as an expression

of the supposed domination of the state of a materialism which precluded greatness. To him, Jewish and the vulgar desires of the masses, the material ideology.²⁹ And since he believed in the methods of eliminating the Jew from the Jews, Traub felt that the nationalists after Hitler came to power was important for Traub, he believed that obsession with Jews was fatal. For if the anti-Jewish ideology, as in National Socialism, the state with a "holy hate," but the soldier was also a dupe of the fight would be weakened as the two "dupes" more than it. The odd rationalization must not be viewed as similar to that of the Jew as the Volkish writer Wilhelm (while fully aware of the Jewish question) the salvation of the Volk through and not merely through

Hitler during the Third Reich

Whodunnit
and total books

he was sincere. He was one of the few former Volkish leaders who, in their isolation under Hitler, watched the culmination of their former Volkish policies with undisguised abhorrence. Traub, who frankly states that he was aware of the utter horror of the "final solution," has also blamed himself for cowardice in not helping those marked for extermination.³¹ Eventually he embraced the theological precepts of Karl Barth, in contending that all religion, and especially Protestantism, must be totally disengaged from worldly power, that authority must not be allowed to rape the soul.³²

If Gottfried Traub can stand for the more traditional conservatism within the party, Paul Bang, the party's economic expert, represented the extreme Volkish element among the leadership. He placed the Jews in the center of things. Under the name of Wilhelm Meister he authored one of the most unrestrained Volkish attacks upon the Jews: *Juda's Schuldbuch (The Jewish Book of Crimes)*. He condemned the Jews as being totally responsible for all crimes, and especially economic ones. To him international trade was nothing more than a form of Jewish nationalism.³³ Because Bang's economic theory was characteristic of economic thought within the DNVP, we must analyze it further. In typical Volkish manner he believed economic questions to be ethical questions, and by that he meant that they were related to the longing for the community of the Volk.³⁴ The Germans, he held, revered spiritual freedom as essential, but regarded it as limited if it were tied to merely material considerations, as was done by the French and the Jews. Spiritual freedom existed only within the Volk; thus, for Bang, anything that diminished the role of the Volk must be identified with materialism. Therefore free trade was the materialistic opposite of freedom.

Bang believed that a self-sufficient economy would solve Germany's problems, and he demanded a return to the mercantilist ideas of Friedrich List. Within the nation, he visualized a *Bund* of employers and workers forming a true community, with the employer assuming the role of genuine leadership. Here the ideal of the *Bund* again appeared, now transposed to the industrial scene. However, the emphasis was no longer solely upon agriculture. Bang linked industry to the land, because he recognized that the peasants constituted the greatest market for industrial products.³⁵ His theory of self-sufficiency entailed the expansion of Germany's frontiers so that the nation would be large enough to sustain a growing internal market. In his prescription for the ailing German economy Bang called for spaciousness of territory and fullness of blood.³⁶ Because blood meant race, only the Aryans could make this mercantilism work. The Jews were free traders, and thus could only oppose the

true spirituality of the Volk. Against this backdrop, it is not surprising that, for Bang, the social question was an ethical question rather than an economic one. The official DNVP party publication endorsed this: "Mammonism does not reside in the purse but in the heart. . . . Man must accept the task which God and destiny have given him and swear a holy loyalty to the Volk."³⁷

Nothing, except for their mass propaganda techniques, could better demonstrate the Volkish orientation of the DNVP than this economic theory, for it was shared by the entire movement. Bang wrote as economic expert not only for the journals of his party but for most other Volkish papers as well. Besides collaborating with the Volkish press, Bang was a member of the Pan-Germans and sat on the editorial board of Wulle's *Deutsche Zeitung*. When, in 1933, Hugenberg entered the NSDAP-DNVP coalition government (which prepared the way for Hitler's sole assumption of power that same year), he brought Bang with him into the Ministry of Economics, making him his secretary of state. With Hugenberg's resignation Bang vanished into obscurity, remaining, however, as a "guest" of the NSDAP in the rigged German Diet.

Alfred Hugenberg has been mentioned before in these pages. He now comes to the forefront of Volkish politics, for in 1928 he became the undisputed leader of the DNVP. However, Hugenberg had had a long history of involvement in conservative politics, a history that shows the growing influence of Volkish ideas in his thinking. He helped found the Pan-Germans at the end of the nineteenth century and from the very beginning of the DNVP was one of its leading figures. While he was gaining prominence in politics, Hugenberg had done well in private life, in a field that not only brought him wealth and connections in the business community, but also controlled certain propaganda machinery. For a long period of time he had been director of the Krupp enterprises and by 1918, through speculation and behind-the-scenes activities, had succeeded in assembling one of the largest publishing empires in Germany. Shortly thereafter, he climaxed his business career by gaining control of Germany's most important film company, the UFA.

While Hugenberg was successful in applying his economic leverage to gain domination of the DNVP in 1928, his subsequent hopes of directing the future of Germany came to naught. But he tried, and his years as party leader must be seen as preparation for the final attempt. On the basis of the idea that the German right alone could provide for future prosperity, internal security and the cultural well-being of the nation, Hugenberg was determined to bring about a unity of the entire right. For this he sought and received

support from both industry and manufacturers. I join the party who had privileges of agricultural interest since they had extended heavy organizations for years. Agricultural production were For him, as for his Volkish bulwark for the whole nation.

Hugenberg was essentially newspapers often accused of tions. Yet Hugenberg shared agriculture as the primeval traffic freedoms." He inveighed against what he called "socialism" which dimmed the vision of one great gap in Hugenberg. This has puzzled historians. Volkish thought on this issue movement accused him of a house (there were eight Jews still, he published at least one thought, linked the universal economics.⁴¹ Nevertheless, comp Hugenberg was certainly not one Volkish periodical report

They were veiled for a sign totally obsessed with the M that an undue stress upon the French, so Hugenberg brought Germans from the fight against congress at which even Traudl thought, Hugenberg, ignored a healing of the "urban-Marx" the source of all un-Germany.

Hugenberg's obsessive fear was the culmination of the throughout the Wilhelmine Social Democratic party as it was their principal task. During the socialist parties, including DNVP's single most important governments even though it

A.H.'s
* the fear of his power as a tycoon

his backdrop, it is not surprising that an ethical question official DNVP party publications not reside in the purse but in the task which God and destiny have set before the Volk."³⁷

Propaganda techniques, could be of the DNVP than this economic movement. Bang's journals of his party but besides collaborating with the Pan-Germans and sat on the *Zeitung*. When, in 1933, Hugenberg's resignation from the Ministry of Economics, with Hugenberg's resignation from, however, as a "guest" of

ed before in these pages. He in politics, for in 1928 he became P. However, Hugenberg had conservative politics, a history of Volkish ideas in his thinking. The end of the nineteenth century DNVP was one of its leadership in politics, Hugenberg that not only brought him to community, but also contributed for a long period of time he rises and by 1918, through various means, had succeeded in establishing empires in Germany. Shortly thereafter by gaining control of the UFA.

applying his economic leadership in 1928, his subsequent career came to naught. But he can be seen as preparation for that the German right alone ensure national security and the cultural program was determined to bring this he sought and received

was a tycoon

support from both industry and agriculture. Through his connections with manufacturers he persuaded many influential men to join the party who had previously kept their distance. Representatives of agricultural interests hardly needed any encouragement, since they had extended heavy support to the conservative and Volkish organizations for years. Then too, Hugenberg's ideas on land and agricultural production were received favorably by landed interests. For him, as for his Volkish brethren, agriculture provided the real bulwark for the whole national structure.³⁸

Hugenberg was essentially a technician of power, and Volkish newspapers often accused him of lacking firm ideological foundations. Yet Hugenberg shared Volkish attitudes, from regarding agriculture as the primeval trade to nostalgia for ancient "Indo-Germanic freedoms." He inveighed against "urbanism," as well as against what he called "sophisticated intellectualizing," as attitudes which dimmed the vision of Germanic eyes.³⁹ Nevertheless, there is one great gap in Hugenberg's ideology: anti-Semitism is missing. This has puzzled historians. Why should he have departed from Volkish thought on this issue? Hugenberg's opponents within the movement accused him of harboring Jews in his Scherl publishing house (there were eight Jews among the six thousand employees).⁴⁰ Still, he published at least one book which, following Bang's line of thought, linked the universal Jewish conspiracy with liberal economics.⁴¹ Nevertheless, compared with Westarp, Bang, or even Traub, Hugenberg was certainly moderate on the Jewish question, or, as one Volkish periodical reported, his views were "veiled."⁴²

They were veiled for a significant reason: his one-track mind was totally obsessed with the Marxist danger. Just as Traub had feared that an undue stress upon the Jews would make the DNVP forget the French, so Hugenberg believed that nothing should distract the Germans from the fight against Bolshevism. At the same 1931 party congress at which even Traub condemned the Jews and upheld racial thought, Hugenberg, ignoring the Jewish problem, pleaded for a healing of the "urban-Marxist" paralysis of the brain which was the source of all un-German theories.⁴³

Hugenberg's obsessive fear of the left, of the Marxist parties, was the culmination of the fears of the older conservatives, who throughout the Wilhelmine period had regarded the existence of the Social Democratic party as the "great problem" ⁴⁴ whose destruction was their principal task. During the Weimar Republic, opposition to the socialist parties, including the Communist party, was the DNVP's single most important reason for participating in coalition governments even though they stood opposed to the constitution

they swore to uphold. From this point of view, Hugenberg considered that any concentration on the Jews as the prime agents of un-Germanic thought would only serve to distract the party from smashing the real enemy, the left. Yet, under his leadership popular anti-Semitic propaganda went on unchecked and among his close associates were men like Paul Bang and the Pan-German Heinrich Class. As far as we know, Hugenberg never protested against the party's anti-Jewish policy. He concentrated on other issues but he may well have shared the usual Volkish attitude toward the Jews.

Still pursuing the ends which had eluded the older conservatives, Hugenberg turned to the Nazis and the Stahlhelm (Steel Helmet) Veterans' Organization as allies in the destruction of the Marxist parties. They too had no scruples and were willing to try constitutional as well as non-constitutional means. In this area Hugenberg could count on the history of collaboration between the Nazis and the DNVP. Prior to the Hitler putsch of 1924, local chapters of the two groups had occasionally worked together harmoniously. A Catholic paper had earlier attested to the sympathy that the parties had for each other, at least in Württemberg, and we have documents which detail how the DNVP encouraged the National Socialists in Bavaria in the struggle against their common foe: Marxism and the Republic.⁴⁵ And while in later years Hugenberg turned away from Hitler—only to come back in the end—and called him “too fanatical,” his mass movement’s flirtation with socialism “too dangerous,” by 1931 he was ready to include the Nazis in the Harzburger Front, a coalition designed to unify the right-wing elements. (This coalition takes its name from the “watering place” which was the scene of a mass meeting of members of the DNVP, the NSDAP, and the Stahlhelm Veterans’ Organization in 1931.)

In his effort to consolidate this coalition, Hugenberg, according to a close political friend, believed that while Bolshevism brought death, National Socialism merely endangered life. Germans must attempt by every means to transform danger to life into a saving of life.⁴⁶ Thus, he set out to accomplish both of his ends: first to save the nation and the Volk, and second to disarm the National Socialists and raise himself to power.

To accomplish the first task Hugenberg went to great lengths to appease Hitler and enlist the aid of his forces. In 1932, for instance, he protested against the government’s order prohibiting the SA, claiming that the order represented a Marxist plot to disarm the guardians of the nation.⁴⁷ Similarly, when Hindenburg, who believed the NSDAP to be more socialist than nationalist, criticized Hugenberg for his collaboration with the Nazis, Hugenberg replied that his

+ F. D. H. The
how
BEDEVI

Δ D.T. It was
collaboration was aimed
forces within the NSDA
as attempts to prevent the
variant of the deadly ene

In pursuit of the second power, Hugenberg used the various wings of the the National Socialists ha
In fact, throughout the power struggle with Gr a united front did serve NSDAP which, if pursued and tamed the party. Ju encouraging the nation: NSDAP, so Hugenberg front. But here, strangest adversary—in all probal litical foe—rather than ironically considered to make a compromise.⁴⁸ H the later attempts of Sc Strasser, his efforts shat both the nature of the N:

Unsuccessful on this l to curb Hitler and even discovered for themselves were. At this point Hug the conservative ideolog suspicious of mass move Volkish thought. Hugel The DNVP held essen thinkers. But an espous touch with a democrati the DNVP, with the he doctrinating large secti enthusiasm which Hitler

It took Hugenberg a Nazi-DNVP coalition that, far from playing ti terms. But disillusionm events disclosed the es which, in spite of diffe importance of the Jew

* A. H. while
w Hugenberg
Dölem was

GERMAN IDEOLOGY

point of view, Hugenberg con-
sidered the Jews as the prime agents of
serve to distract the party from
Yet, under his leadership popular
unchecked and among his close
3 and the Pan-German Heinrich
berg never protested against the
concentrated on other issues but he
Volkish attitude toward the Jews.
He eluded the older conservatives,
and the Stahlhelm (Steel Helmet)
the destruction of the Marxist
and were willing to try constitu-
tional means. In this area Hugenberg
collaboration between the Nazis and
Schuler in 1924, local chapters of the
were organized harmoniously. A
due to the sympathy that the parties
remained, and we have documents
encouraged the National Socialists in
their common foe: Marxism and
years Hugenberg turned away
from the end—and called him “too
collaboration with socialism” “too danger-
ous to include the Nazis in the Harzburger
Front by the right-wing elements. (This
“watering place” which was the
center of the DNVP, the NSDAP,
collaboration in 1931.)

coalition, Hugenberg, according
to that while Bolshevism brought
endangered life. Germans must
run danger to life into a saving of
Volkish both of his ends: first to save
and to disarm the National Socialists

Hugenberg went to great lengths to
use his forces. In 1932, for instance,
his order prohibiting the SA,
he defeated a Marxist plot to disarm the
SA, when Hindenburg, who believed
in a nationalist, criticized Hugen-
berg-Nazis, Hugenberg replied that his

A.H. they will never know
how serious I am

REDEVELOPED CONSERVATIVES

251

Δ D.T. It was a collaboration with
collaboration was aimed at strengthening the sincerely national
forces within the NSDAP.⁴⁸ At that time, he still justified his actions
as attempts to prevent the National Socialists from developing into a
variant of the deadly enemy, socialism.

He
was
no
foe
of
Hitler.
Hell.

In pursuit of the second goal, eliminating Hitler as a contender for
power, Hugenberg used the Harzburger Front as a wedge to separate
the various wings of the NSDAP. We must recall that at that time
the National Socialists had not yet become a monolithic organization.
In fact, throughout these years Hitler was deeply involved in a
power struggle with Gregor Strasser. Hugenberg's attempt to form
a united front did serve to produce a crisis in the leadership of the
NSDAP which, if pursued correctly, might indeed have weakened
and tamed the party. Just as he reassured Hindenburg that he was
encouraging the nationalist and not the socialist elements of the
NSDAP, so Hugenberg acted in the meetings held to organize the
front. But here, strangely enough, it was Hitler who was the main
adversary—in all probability as potentially the most powerful po-
litical foe—rather than persons like Strasser and Frick, who were
ironically considered to be moderate men with whom one could
make a compromise.⁴⁹ Hugenberg's efforts, as we know, failed. Like
the later attempts of Schleicher, who attempted to work through
Strasser, his efforts shattered on the fundamental misconception of
both the nature of the NSDAP and the tenacity of Hitler.

Unsuccessful on this level, Hugenberg thought it would be easier
to curb Hitler and even discard him after the National Socialists had
discovered for themselves how thorny Germany's problems actually
were. At this point Hugenberg and his party became the victims of
the conservative ideology which believed in elitism and was deeply
suspicious of mass movements—a trend reinforced by the elitism of
Volkish thought. Hugenberg called universal suffrage a “crime.”⁵⁰
The DNVP held essentially the same elitist ideas as the Volkish
thinkers. But an espousal of a feudal order of society was out of
touch with a democratically oriented Volkish movement. Although
the DNVP, with the help of Volkish propaganda, did succeed in in-
doctrinating large sections of the masses, it could not arouse the
enthusiasm which Hitler inspired in his followers.

It took Hugenberg almost a year to realize that his post in the
Nazi-DNVP coalition government gave him little strength and
that, far from playing the lion tamer, he had collaborated on Hitler's
terms. But disillusionment did not turn into hostility. Subsequent
events disclosed the essential sympathies between the two parties,
which, in spite of differences on who should rule and the relative
importance of the Jewish problem, allowed for a continuation of

* A.H. While playing and collabor-
ing Hugenberg comes to see that
Hitler must eventually go

genberg con-
me agents of
e party from
rship popular
ong his close
an Heinrich
i against the
issues but he
rd the Jews.
onservatives,
eel Helmet)
the Marxist
ry constitu-
Hugenberg
e Nazis and
pters of the
oniously. A
t the parties
documents
Socialists in
arxism and
rned away
d him "too
too danger-
Harzburger
ents. (This
ch was the
e NSDAP,

according
m brought
mans must
i saving of
rst to save
l Socialists

lengths to
r instance,
z the SA,
lisarm the
o believed
d Hugen-
d that his

A.H. they will never know
how serious I am

REDEEMED CONSERVATIVES

Δ D.T. ~~It was~~ ⁵¹ ~~who gave him this force~~
collaboration was aimed at strengthening the sincerely national
forces within the NSDAP.⁴⁸ At that time, he still justified his actions
as attempts to prevent the National Socialists from developing into a
variant of the deadly enemy, socialism.

In pursuit of the second goal, eliminating Hitler as a contender for
power, Hugenberg used the Harzburger Front as a wedge to separate
the various wings of the NSDAP. We must recall that at that time
the National Socialists had not yet become a monolithic organization.
In fact, throughout these years Hitler was deeply involved in a
power struggle with Gregor Strasser. Hugenberg's attempt to form
a united front did serve to produce a crisis in the leadership of the
NSDAP which, if pursued correctly, might indeed have weakened
and tamed the party. Just as he reassured Hindenburg that he was
encouraging the nationalist and not the socialist elements of the
NSDAP, so Hugenberg acted in the meetings held to organize the
front. But here, strangely enough, it was Hitler who was the main
adversary—in all probability as potentially the most powerful po-
litical foe—rather than persons like Strasser and Frick, who were
ironically considered to be moderate men with whom one could
make a compromise.⁴⁹ Hugenberg's efforts, as we know, failed. Like
the later attempts of Schleicher, who attempted to work through
Strasser, his efforts shattered on the fundamental misconception of
both the nature of the NSDAP and the tenacity of Hitler.

Unsuccessful on this level, Hugenberg thought it would be easier
to curb Hitler and even discard him after the National Socialists had
discovered for themselves how thorny Germany's problems actually
were. At this point Hugenberg and his party became the victims of
the conservative ideology which believed in elitism and was deeply
suspicious of mass movements—a trend reinforced by the elitism of
Volkish thought. Hugenberg called universal suffrage a "crime."⁵⁰
The DNVP held essentially the same elitist ideas as the Volkish
thinkers. But an espousal of a feudal order of society was out of
touch with a democratically oriented Volkish movement. Although
the DNVP, with the help of Volkish propaganda, did succeed in in-
doctrinating large sections of the masses, it could not arouse the
enthusiasm which Hitler inspired in his followers.

It took Hugenberg almost a year to realize that his post in the
Nazi-DNVP coalition government gave him little strength and
that, far from playing the lion tamer, he had collaborated on Hitler's
terms. But disillusionment did not turn into hostility. Subsequent
events disclosed the essential sympathies between the two parties,
which, in spite of differences on who should rule and the relative
importance of the Jewish problem, allowed for a continuation of

* A.H. while playing and collaborating
w Hugenberg comes to see that
Röhm must eventually go

close relations. When Hugenberg left the government he still assured Hitler that he would not oppose the Third Reich in any way. His reasons reflected the policy that had led many conservatives to countenance Hitler's assumption of total power. He stated: "For us [the DNVP] there can never be a common ground with Marxists and Communists," who were opposing the Third Reich.⁵¹ The anti-Communist obsession persisted, and in 1941 he prayed for the success of Hitler's Russian campaign. Victory, he argued, would not only destroy Bolshevism but would also open new agricultural, industrial, and economic vistas for Germany. The imperialist dreams of his Pan-German youth had been revived,⁵² now with a greater likelihood of success. Unlike Traub, Hugenberg apparently did not regret his past, did not undergo a spiritual conversion. To the end he regretted only that he had not been the one to have had the chance to lead his beloved Volk into a Volkish, conservative, anti-Marxist future.

The question then remains whether the DNVP would have been greatly different from the NSDAP had it gained power instead. To many people their program was substantially the same as that of the Nazis. A Jewish journal, for instance, stated that, next to the NSDAP, the DNVP was the strongest factor in political anti-Semitism.⁵³ This was correct. Throughout the 1920's, as we have seen, they employed a similar propaganda. We can speculate that had they won, they would have instituted "cold" instead of "hot" pogroms. Nevertheless, they would have ensured complete exclusion of Jews from public office as well as from all cultural activities in Germany. They would have pushed the Jews back into a ghetto-like isolation, perhaps allowing a greater number to become honorary Aryans than did the Nazis. In short, both parties, the NSDAP and the DNVP, had agreed that the time had come to end the century of Jewish emancipation.

From our point of view, the DNVP must stand as one of the most important transmitters of Volkish thought and the Germanic ideology. Due to its greater resources, it influenced many more people than did the *Bünde*, and it appealed to many voters because it was respectable. If one was a member of the DNVP, one was not considered a Nazi rowdy or a Volkish fanatic. The underlying Germanic ideology of the party was clothed in such respectable garb that the "better" classes dismissed the party's election propaganda as being intended solely for the mob. As a result, the DNVP drew to its ranks, or enjoyed the sympathy of, wealthy bankers, industrialists, and professional people who would not have considered dining with Hitler but did so with Westarp, Traub, Bang, and Hugenberg. Then too, its image was made respectable by its sympa-

thy for the deposed emperor that the party would endow the emperor. In short, they precisely because it was contrary to their intentions, giving the alternative, even if only at Hitler's bid behind a Hitler into power and career, the DNVP was not Veterans' Organization and Verband (the largest white movement. It is to these o-

CHAPTER 14

Veterans and Workers

THROUGHOUT HISTORY and in every nation, veterans' organizations tend to become rightist pressure groups. This holds true both in countries victorious in war and, especially, in defeated ones. The war experience seems to unite the former combatants in an aggressive devotion to the fatherland in whose name, after all, they risked their lives. Any proposal to change their nation's policies is looked upon with suspicion. At times, especially those on the losing side, veterans will regard new ideas as a betrayal of their trust and as a sign of a lack of patriotism on the part of those who support them. Veterans want their nation to remain that for which their brothers died and for which they themselves suffered.

In Germany, not only was there a built-in resistance to change, but it took a most active form. German soldiers returned from the front to a land that had undergone hectic, but by no means thorough, transformation. The monarchy had been replaced by a republic. The disorder, dislocation, and disillusion they experienced engendered a strong desire for order and stability. Moreover, the first shock was only reinforced when it seemed that the Republic would endure. Consequently, veterans' organizations, like the Free Corps, aligned themselves with Volkish organizations or created their own rightist groups. For the same reason some veterans formed themselves into *Bünde* and occasionally gained sufficient power to be able to influence political events.

The largest and most famous veterans' organization, the Stahlhelm, was founded in 1919. It was immediately regarded as a success—though its membership figures vary depending on their source (the organization itself claimed a million members, whereas its enemies contended it had only half that number).¹ The Stahlhelm did not assert for itself any outright political role or consider itself a

VETE I

partisan body—if being have fought for it, does in the beginning at least, neutrality—except again selves above the existing resent the interests of t power. Their devotion made by the national lea crisis, after the failure c shown their strength in torate asserted: "The S therefore for the renewa German self-consciousn eliminated from the na illuminates the organizati rejection of political par

However, the racial the ideological vitality o the Stahlhelm accepted i Jews. It considered the total German citizensh merge themselves in a culture.⁴ Yet there were the Jews, people who h generations—three gene any pretension to bein cepting "their place" ar contributions to the nati qualifications, the Stah C. V. Zeitung for clarifi agreeing that Jews had field. But the answer minimized Jewish casu remained behind the battl further on this point.

Taking the admitted in 1924 and 1925, went tween the Jewish and of the organization's lea there should be a clear-races.⁷ This policy was gradually barred Jews f was defended as late as

partisan body—if being for one's country right or wrong, as you have fought for it, does not in itself constitute partiality. To be sure, in the beginning at least, they abided by their declaration of political neutrality—except against the left—and attempted to raise themselves above the existing political framework.² Their goal was to represent the interests of the fatherland, not merely to attain political power. Their devotion found perfect expression in a statement made by the national leadership in 1924. In that year, after the Ruhr crisis, after the failure of Hitler's putsch, after the Communists had shown their strength in several German states, the Stahlhelm directorate asserted: "The Stahlhelm fights for the German Volk and therefore for the renewal of the Germanic race; it fights to strengthen German self-consciousness so that foreign racial influences will be eliminated from the nation."³ This typically Volkish statement illuminates the organization's alleged political neutrality or, better, its rejection of political parties.

However, the racial impetus which was becoming important to the ideological vitality of the Stahlhelm was ambivalent. For instance, the Stahlhelm accepted racial distinctions between the Aryans and the Jews. It considered the Jews a foreign race that could not claim total German citizenship, an alien people that could never submerge themselves in a broader identity with the genuine German culture.⁴ Yet there were exceptions. There were good people among the Jews, people who had made their home in Germany for several generations—three generations was the minimum requirement for any pretension to being a German resident—and some who, accepting "their place" and acting accordingly, had made appreciable contributions to the nation.⁵ And, though grudgingly and with some qualifications, the Stahlhelm answered a request by the Jewish *C. V. Zeitung* for clarification on its stand on the Jewish question by agreeing that Jews had indeed fought for Germany on the battlefield. But the answer was qualified, for the Stahlhelm leadership minimized Jewish casualties and claimed that most Jews had remained behind the battle lines.⁶ Hitler, as we know, was to go even further on this point.

Taking the admitted Jewish virtues into account, the Stahlhelm, in 1924 and 1925, went on record in favor of a division of labor between the Jewish and German veterans. Acting on the suggestion of the organization's leader, Franz Seldte, the veterans decided that there should be a clear-cut division in all activities between the two races.⁷ This policy was eventually implemented when the Stahlhelm gradually barred Jews from membership in its chapters. This action was defended as late as 1932. At that time, the Stahlhelm referred

IS

n, veterans' organizations
This holds true both in
in defeated ones. The war
mbatants in an aggressive
after all, they risked their
's policies is looked upon
on the losing side, veter-
their trust and as a sign of
to support them. Veterans
h their brothers died and

n resistance to change, but
s returned from the front
by no means thorough,
placed by a republic. The
experienced engendered a
over, the first shock was
Republic would endure.
the Free Corps, aligned
created their own rightist
is formed themselves into
power to be able to influ-

ganization, the Stahlhelm,
regarded as a success—
pending on their source
members, whereas its ene-
ber).¹ The Stahlhelm did
role or consider itself a

+

hem with a "clear-cut solution was not limited to anti-aspects seems to have been a Stahlhelm, the organization's ed the importance of deal-nd spiritual powers of the d revival and exhorted the jene.⁹ The Stahlhelm advo-ny's past, with the heroic the manifest Germanism in . Adult education courses riculum of the Brunswick adies in the racial founda-f, the peasantry as opposed even the precepts of the ver, did not persist at the zation's history, and this ot as racist-oriented as has elaxation in the late 1920's as a revulsion against the Stahlhelm, like many other e and too dangerous. At stinction between a racism oating and endorsing the

other elements of Volkish e racial division of peoples Volk and the Aryan race. of the nation the veterans ed government by an aris- ded on the ancient Ger- ying a "Germanic democ- icultural base and declared ndustry and materialism.¹³ ty, was singled out as a red the principal unifying e Bund. the DNVP. Alongside the marched from the Harz- into the coalition DNVP- hed the peak of its power the Hitler government.

Originally, around the time of the Hitler-Ludendorff putsch, Seldte considered Hitler too fanatical. His objections—to a large extent similar to those of the DNVP—were shared by others in his own organization. The Protestant wing of the Stahlhelm, as late as 1931, attempted to tar Hitler with the same brush used by Wulle and Gräfe-Goldebee. At that time, Major Stephani, the Stahlhelm leader of Berlin, declared that National Socialism was an alien, "Catholic-Fascist conspiracy."¹⁴ At times, such as in 1928, Seldte went further than this and publicly differed with Hitler on the anti-Semitic emphasis. He was of the opinion that Nazi racism was too negative; pro-Germanic propaganda, he claimed, would have been more effective than Julius Streicher's campaign based on alleged Jewish sexual excesses.¹⁵ But the members of the Stahlhelm slowly dissociated themselves from this moderate position and pressured him into reconciling his differences with the Nazis. By the mid-1920's, in some localities at least, extremist Volkish ideas seemed to have penetrated rather deeply: a result of the constant spreading of a Volkish mood.¹⁶

However, the Stahlhelm continued to disagree with the National Socialists on several important points. Within the Harzburger Front they battled openly. At one point the SA became so incensed that it refused to march in the streets with the Stahlhelm veterans, while the veterans in turn, to the chagrin of the National Socialists, entered their own nominee to oppose Hitler and the other candidates in the 1932 presidential elections. But it amounted to nothing. Düsterberg, the veterans' standard bearer, did not direct his campaign against Hitler; in fact, he even defended Hitler's right to run in a German election while holding Austrian citizenship. Interestingly enough, Düsterberg's argument was typically Volkish in that he maintained that Hitler had earned the privilege while thousands of Jewish immigrants presumed to enjoy the rights of Germans without having made a single contribution to Germany's well-being.¹⁷ In the presidential election that same year, Seldte released his members to vote for either the NSDAP or the DNVP candidate.¹⁸

In January of 1933, Seldte joined the NSDAP-DNVP coalition cabinet. His differences with the Nazis on anti-Semitism had disappeared.¹⁹ The more Volkish Düsterberg, ironically enough, was dropped because one of his great-grandparents was Jewish. Seldte, who over the last few years had succumbed to the increasingly strong Volkish pressure, supervised the merger of the Stahlhelm into the Nazi party and served throughout the Third Reich as Minister of Labor. As such, he exemplified the essentially moderate man who, intensely concerned with the German crisis and taken by the Volkish solution to it, drifted into the arms of the National Socialists.

membership had the result of themselves. Not only did they than working-class, but many ere artisans and longed for a ions. They thought of them- hich had been cruelly disre- l its emphasis on materialism r a revival of a society based idea of estates paralleled the leader equated the corporate, true community of the spirit, Movement.³⁰ This romanti- ion with the role of women a practical measure to insure ployment of women outside e minister of the interior un- : called the union a "stranger

he Volkish movement were ed to the union also occupied ations of a Volkish character. youth branch, the Fahrende unded in 1909, it set itself the auties of nature, of the Ger- ire of the Volk. Its members ular to those of the Youth ry of their people in heroic was not completely idyllic. f the political questions that y chose to put it—and at- many of them fought for the ll as after the war, they de- they had served. As a result, ding it, in a different way of ions, or *Bünde*, which mush- orted and met in the rooms etry, which had been organ- : framework for the rise of

iculty when it attempted to s. As an organization repre- regardless of how they viewed itself against charges of col-

laboration with the employers. Consequently, it was unable to enter into an intimate relationship with the DNVP, whose national views it had endorsed for some time. During the early 1920's, Blechly and Lambach, the leaders of the DHV, moved in DNVP circles, but not for very long. The two union men were gradually repelled by the increasingly reactionary labor policies of that party,³⁴ and the DHV was forced to search for political support and identity elsewhere. But where, outside the left and right, could it go, other than to Hitler? The question posed many problems during the years of the Weimar Republic.

The contacts between the union and the NSDAP were involved and interesting. Blechly and Lambach disliked the mass organization and violent methods of the NSDAP. Moreover, the Nazis were dangerous rivals to other Volkish groups. Significantly enough, it was the Nazis who took the initiative in establishing close contacts with the DHV, but their purpose was to take it over. They did make substantial inroads in the union and could, at one point (in 1930), claim the allegiance of three quarters of the Fahrende Gesellen. But the Nazis did not take advantage of their opportunity—a failure that has been ascribed to the uncompromising attitude of the Nazi leaders. By 1930 Alfred Krebs, the most prominent National Socialist among the DHV leaders, complained to Hitler that the Gesellen had turned to the other Volkish leaders, principally because of Nazi rowdiness.³⁵ Hitler ignored Krebs's pleas for an end to violent agitation, and Alfred Rosenberg continued his attacks upon the non-Nazis in the union. At that point, especially when the Nazis criticized the DHV leadership and its contacts with other political groups, the union chiefs condemned the Nazi demagoguery and drew away from the NSDAP.³⁶ While the Nazis eventually captured some local centers, such as those of Dresden and Chemnitz,³⁷ they could never, prior to 1933, dominate the union leadership. The antagonism between the DHV and NSDAP grew to such an extent that Habermann, the most important DHV leader, turned to the Conservatives and in 1932 endorsed Hindenburg rather than Hitler for president.³⁸ To the end, the DHV remained relatively independent and only after the victory of the Nazis did it merge with them in the National Socialist labor front. Like all the other Volkish organizations, it held out until the last moment, never effectively opposing Hitler but hoping for stronger, more orthodox forces to supplant him. When salvation failed to appear,³⁹ when the would-be giant killers lost their lives or positions before they could take any concerted action, they too were swept away with relative ease.

While the German DHV remained more or less unaffiliated with

any particular party and did not itself assume a directly political function, its Bohemian-Austrian branch did. This branch of the DHV had been established independently in 1885 in Bohemia, on the frontiers of Germany. It had come into existence in the Sudetenland as a reaction to the preferential treatment Czech workers were receiving from their employers. By 1898 the union had spread to Austria, where eventually it came to be known as the Gau Ostmark branch of the DHV.⁴⁰ The conditions peculiar to the frontier region—the minority status of the Germans, their resentment of Jewish and Slav competition in their own preserve, and the longing for a closer identity with a romanticized concept of Germany—contributed to giving the labor union a directly political emphasis. More radical in outlook, it helped found and supported the Deutsche Arbeiterpartei (German Workers' party). By 1918 the aspirations of the party had grown to such an extent that it changed its specifically working-class outlook and welcomed other classes of the population as well. Correspondingly, it also changed its name to the Deutsche Nationalsozialistische Partei. With its outlook and emphasis broadened, the party entered into various discussions with the German Nazis to decide on some basis for action. To this end, in 1920, its leaders met with Hitler and Drexler, setting the stage for amicable relations that culminated in the party's merger with the Nazis.⁴¹

German historians have attempted to show that this Bohemian party was the real forerunner of the National Socialists. This would, of course, shift the burden of guilt away from Germany proper to the frontier regions under Austrian rule. While the Volkish movement certainly received a constant impetus from Austria and the Sudetenland, its roots were undeniably in Germany and it was in the center that it achieved its greatest success. The Volkish extremism that arose in the frontier regions was duplicated in Germany itself. The Sudetenland party can properly be viewed only as a concomitant development, springing from similar sources of anxiety, of identification with the Volk and its heroic past. The radical turn taken by the Volkish movement must therefore be kept within proper perspective. The border Germans, who felt the pressure of the Slavic populations, resolved their problems into a political framework. However, both they and their German *confrères* developed the same ideological attitude toward life and the problems besetting them.

In summing up the identification of the German working class with the philosophy of the Volk, we must repeat that the movement never penetrated below the ranks of the white-collar employees. Except for those who joined the Nazis at an early date (and these came

largely from among not attracted to the that was not at variation of an industrial had little appeal union, representing selves artisans, the V favorably received. social order was popular the movement's attitude confine himself to the sent a Volkish view not affiliated with Volkish periodicals commented upon. He thing unique among through the Social D of the East Prussian this time his ideas direction. In line with against the Republic and the state. He the ing classes, maintaining similar groups.

Winnig believed that his inherent right to equate freedom with but one aspect will estranged from nature transgression was a ser democracy were wrought upon nature.

Volkish opposition of nature found echo taking of nature, and the Volk. Therefore, fledged member of the In practice this meant adequate pay for one class internationalism Winnig saw the German all could work together course, laboring and

elf assume a directly political
 nch did. This branch of the
 ntly in 1885 in Bohemia, on
 e into existence in the Sudeten-
 treatment Czech workers were
 1898 the union had spread to
 be known as the Gau Ostmark
 peculiar to the frontier region
 is, their resentment of Jewish
 reserve, and the longing for a
 oncept of Germany—contrib-
 ectly political emphasis. More
 and supported the Deutsche
 ty). By 1918 the aspirations of
 that it changed its specifically
 other classes of the population
 igned its name to the Deutsche
 outlook and emphasis broad-
 discussions with the German
 tion. To this end, in 1920, its
 setting the stage for amicable
 ty's merger with the Nazis.⁴¹
 to show that this Bohemian
 the National Socialists. This
 of guilt away from Germany
 ustrian rule. While the Volkish
 ant impetus from Austria and
 ably in Germany and it was in
 est success. The Volkish ex-
 ins was duplicated in Germany
 ively be viewed only as a con-
 similar sources of anxiety, of
 heroic past. The radical turn
 ust therefore be kept within
 ans, who felt the pressure of
 ir problems into a political
 i their German *confreres* de-
 toward life and the problems

of the German working class
 must repeat that the movement
 is white-collar employees. Ex-
 an early date (and these came

largely from among the unemployed), the industrial workers were
 not attracted to the Volkish movement, for it had little to offer them
 that was not at variance with their dependence on the smooth func-
 tioning of an industrial society. A reversion to the idyllic estates sys-
 tem had little appeal for them. However, among the commercial
 union, representing the interests of workers who considered them-
 selves artisans, the Volkish appeal of a romanticized social order was
 favorably received. From the end of the war onward, this Volkish
 social order was popularized by August Winnig. In his theorizing on
 the movement's attitude toward the workers themselves, he did not
 confine himself to the members of the DHV, but attempted to pre-
 sent a Volkish view of the working class as a whole. Winnig was
 not affiliated with any one Volkish group, but he published in
 Volkish periodicals and wrote books which were widely read and
 commented upon. He himself had a working-class background, some-
 thing unique among Volkish thinkers. Winnig worked his way
 through the Social Democratic party organization and became head
 of the East Prussian government after the revolution of 1918. By
 this time his ideas had already shifted in a conservative-Volkish
 direction. In line with this he participated in Kapp's abortive putsch
 against the Republic and consequently lost his position in the party
 and the state. He then became the Volkish theoretician of the work-
 ing classes, maintaining close connections with the DHV and other
 similar groups.

Winnig believed that in modern times the worker had been denied
 his inherent right to be free.⁴² But it is significant that he did not
 equate freedom with equality. "Nature is a many-splendored thing,
but one aspect will not be found in nature: equality." Only those
 estranged from nature could possibly believe in equality.⁴³ Such es-
 trangement was a serious matter. Modern concepts of progress and
 democracy were wrong precisely because they tried to improve
 upon nature.

Volkish opposition to modernity, hatred of urban life, and a love
 of nature found echoes in Winnig's thought. Freedom meant par-
 taking of nature, and an understanding of the landscape and thus of
 the Volk. Therefore, not as an urban proletarian, but only as a full-
 fledged member of the Volk could the worker achieve his freedom.⁴⁴
 In practice this meant decent living conditions on a plot of land and
 adequate pay for one's work. It did not mean equality or a working-
 class internationalism which the socialists presumably advocated.
 Winnig saw the German state as an organic community in which
 all could work together at their appointed tasks, with some, of
 course, laboring under the direction of others. He regarded the

worker as an artisan, and thus, like the DHV, viewed employer-worker relationships within the framework of the medieval guild. "The worker is destined to continue the task of the old estates in a new form."⁴⁵ Here also it is possible that the concept of the *Bund* was to be the modern formulation of harmonious employer-worker relationships.⁴⁶ As a member of the Volk, the worker attained a status of dignity. Thus it was the Volk which must claim the worker's primary allegiance.

Winnig developed a view of labor which was common to Volkish thought. Small wonder that he also advocated other Volkish theories which have occupied us in previous chapters. For example, he used the term "blood and soil," and even after the Second World War he continued to pay tribute to Germanic Christianity. "The great miracle of God become man, an annoyance to the Jews and folly to the Greeks, has found its true meaning in the Germanic soul."⁴⁷ In the 1920's he had seen the Volk not as a mere mass of voters, but as a segment of eternity.⁴⁸ From this point of view a socialist revolution was the very opposite of the Volkish way of life. To Winnig, such revolutions were the product of Jewish intellectualism, and he inveighed against the "foreign influence" in the labor movements.⁴⁹

Such was the man who became the principal Volkish labor theoretician. Although some of the Nazi appeals to the industrial worker based themselves upon similar premises, the working classes paid scant attention to Winnig's works. He himself refused to cooperate with the Nazi movement, seeing in it a reduction of the people to mere masses of voters, and in its supposed socialism, a destruction of the Volk.⁵⁰ During the Third Reich he withdrew from all public activity and even engaged in minor underground activities.

Because August Winnig formulated many of the ideas which the DHV had already put into practice, both must be considered together. Thus, although he professed to concern himself with the whole of the working class rather than with a certain segment, he really transformed all workers into the kind of men who had found their home in the DHV.

These last chapters have attempted to demonstrate the penetration of the Volkish ideology among respectable conservatives, veterans, and workers, where it not only found sustenance but emerged stronger and more flexible in its relations to the rising Nazi party. Most of these groups co-operated with the Republic while conspiring to replace it with either a monarchy or an order that would be responsive to the best interests of the Volk. Many of them built on the Stöcker tradition, opposing the racist extremism of the Nazis, but were ready to elaborate and expand it with the changing

times. They abetted the rise of them as contributing to the new order. When they turned against the Republic for various reasons, as groups or parties to power.

We must now turn again to the radical Volkish ideas. Here that had entered the war movement or the *Fahrend* but which, regardless of its origins, emerged from the Volkish which had come about on the achievement of its goals. Indeed, it seemed as if the forces of that bourgeois society were demn.

CHAPTER 15

From Bourgeois to Anti-Bourgeois Youth

AFTER THE FIRST WORLD WAR, the urge to act continued to inspire the young men who had fought in the trenches. All over the West activism was the order of the day. Not only youth but many of their elders equated such activism with a spirit of youth as against the degeneracy of old age. For the activists the existing, traditional institutions which (so they held) could no longer cope with new conditions were symbolic of old age, and those who attacked them were animated by a spirit of youth. In this way the defeated nations could restore their self-respect: the victor nations were the old nations whose day was done in spite of their victory; the defeated nations were young for they were actively engaged in an attack upon traditional institutions which might well carry the day. Much of the postwar Fascist movement was built upon the ideals of youth and activism, even among those who were no longer young in age.

In Germany, above all, youth itself followed the path of activism, but against the background of the specific tradition which we have already analyzed, a continued turn toward the radical right. Thus it has been estimated that the Kapp putsch had the support of some 50,000 students and youth.¹ Aware of the danger and conscious of the power of the youth, liberal reformers like Wyneken attempted to swing youth over to themselves and the Republic. But it was all in vain. Youth stuck to its own concept of "revolutionary" change—in favor of the Volk and a society in which both the traditional and the modern virtues of the nation would merge with the heroic deeds of the ancient Germans. Youth remained loyal to these spiritual values and continued to draw further inspiration in support of its

ideology from schools, te were tinged with Volkish i

Instead of lessening, the fed by the unresolved pr during the years of the Re the democratic process, de erant of the opinions of ot could be built on popular l increasingly turned to Vo ideology. Thus, from thei Republic was doomed from to provide the building blo of the postwar era facilitate

Here once more, the in gauge the depth of the pen was widespread, touching (doubt. High-school studen fluence, and their intellect Semitic direction. Swastika: of all ages just after the w carried with it such Vol Prussian ministry of educa prohibit it.² But the pressu As early as 1919, and again (defamation journal) and a tacked the schools as the danger. The journal even c wark of the German nation:

Despite the frequency o tion among youth continu in that it provided the chil their frustrations on, an which could be blamed for

How then did this deep postwar younger generati home, children romanticize Instead of cops and robbe the game of "Aryans and I a perceptive journalist, co Semitism represented a pre carried with it greater idec Claudius asserted, isolation

Anti-Bourgeois

to act continued to inspire trenches. All over the West ally youth but many of their : of youth as against the de- ie existing, traditional insti- nger cope with new condi- se who attacked them were y the defeated nations could tions were the old nations ictory; the defeated nations ged in an attack upon tradi- / the day. Much of the post- he ideals of youth and ac- , longer young in age. llowed the path of activism, fic tradition which we have rd the radical right. Thus it h had the support of some he danger and conscious of rs like Wynken attempted the Republic. But it was all of "revolutionary" change— ich both the traditional and nerge with the heroic deeds ied loyal to these spiritual nspiration in support of its

ideology from schools, textbooks, and student organizations that were tinged with Volkish ideals.

Instead of lessening, the Volkish trend grew stronger, for it was fed by the unresolved problems and crises that faced the nation during the years of the Republic. Much of German youth rejected the democratic process, denounced all political parties, were intolerant of the opinions of others, and denied that a good government could be built on popular franchise. At every level bourgeois youth increasingly turned to Volkish solutions to the crisis of German ideology. Thus, from their point of view, it seems clear that the Republic was doomed from the start. The prewar tradition continued to provide the building blocks for the Volkish structure; the events of the postwar era facilitated its completion.

Here once more, the intensity of anti-Semitism can be used to gauge the depth of the penetration of the Volkish ideology. That it was widespread, touching even grade-school youth, there can be no doubt. High-school students were especially subject to Volkish influence, and their intellectual development was turned in an anti-Semitic direction. Swastikas, for instance, were popular with students of all ages just after the war. The fad reached such dimensions and carried with it such Volkish anti-Semitic connotations that the Prussian ministry of education, in 1919, had to take official steps to prohibit it.² But the pressures on the children persisted nonetheless. As early as 1919, and again in 1926, *Mitteilungen* (the Jewish anti-defamation journal) and a deputy in the Prussian Diet in turn attacked the schools as the chief breeding ground of the Volkish danger. The journal even declared that the "high school is the bulwark of the German nationalistic spirit."³

Despite the frequency of protests the Volkish anti-Semitic agitation among youth continued unabated. Its role was most pernicious in that it provided the children with a clearly defined object to vent their frustrations on, an identifiable obstacle to their aspirations which could be blamed for all their failures in later life.

How then did this deep-seated anti-Semitism develop within the postwar younger generation? In the schools and on the streets at home, children romanticized and acted out the ideas of their elders. Instead of cops and robbers or cowboys and Indians, some played the game of "Aryans and Jews."⁴ As early as 1920, Müller-Claudius, a perceptive journalist, commented that the phenomenon of anti-Semitism represented a process of isolating the Jewish child which carried with it greater ideological overtones. In the future, Müller-Claudius asserted, isolation of the Jew would be transformed into

considering him an absolute foreigner and would lead to a total rejection of him as a member of the community.⁵ And indeed many Gentile school children did come to regard the Jew as a stranger, isolated for the good of the community and removed from intercourse with Aryans for the benefit of the German Volk.

What had started in the primary and high schools continued in the universities on a broader basis. Jews were excluded from fraternities and other student associations and were not allowed to participate in school functions. The Aryan clause, excluding non-Aryans, was applied by the fraternities, while agitation for the *numerus clausus* (quota for Jews) attempted to extend the same function on a wider level throughout the whole university system. Meanwhile, the Nazis, through the 1920's and early 1930's, found devoted adherents among the teaching profession and put them to excellent service in the field of propaganda. They were so effective that by 1932 Jewish parents were asking in the *C. V. Zeitung* to publish a list of schools free of anti-Semitism.⁶ By 1931 the National Socialists had captured the national organization of university students, and it was estimated that same year that, proportionately, there were as many Nazi teachers in the universities as in the high schools.⁷ That the danger was acute can be seen in the crumbling of the hopes that assimilationist-minded Jews had harbored for so long. No longer believing that Jewish children could safely live side by side with the German majority, the principal newspaper of the assimilationist Jews exhorted its readers to develop their bodies and to learn the art of self-defense in order to protect themselves against "bloodless pogroms."⁸ It did so twice, for example, within the span of two months in 1926.

While anti-Semitism constituted the most conspicuous display of the Volkish ideology, other ideas also played significant roles in producing a younger generation dedicated to a revolution of the right rather than of the left. In addition to anti-Semitism, the schools continued to inculcate their charges with anti-modern, anti-Republican, and anti-progressive thinking. Many school textbooks, such as Hermann Pinnow's *History*, decried the transformation of the pastoral, agrarian past into the modern, mechanized present. According to Pinnow, the spiritual, mystical unity of the earlier German society and culture had given way to the cold, inanimate "externalization of life," as he called the scientific and technological developments of the 1890-1914 era.⁹ Another popular history textbook spelled out this view in detail, saying that, "in the long run, this forced civilization cannot disguise the inner emptiness which it pro-

duced."¹⁰ How reminiscent of the Volk finally bursting civilization!

Even those textbook writers who collaborated in the confidence in its institution confronted modern man. W Germany could not refrain as Germanic prophets who big city and have him live without any thought of more elaborate on the characteristic task to the classroom teacher even more interesting case neither praising its virtues nor opposed the increased materialistic values the German society. According to Lagarde and Langbehn also enough, they were free of after the Nazis had assumed as well as the defunct Republic Nazi educator. In their youth in their turn toward they described, the emphasis on nostalgia for the past succeeded with only the tools of irrationality.

The German ideological to the students in the university for jobs was more where the Aryan, Volkish, and eventually triumphed. The and over-all attitude of the course. Earlier we discussed the fraternalism of the German fraternalish descent, but in 1919, at policy of exclusion was extended to married Jewish or non-Jewish resounded more often and the *Burschenschaftliche Blätter*.

* A. H.'s reaction - "we will keep their heads black against a wall if they dare to stand up to us."

and would lead to a total re-
community.⁵ And indeed many
regard the Jew as a stranger,
nity and removed from inter-
the German Volk.

d high schools continued in the
were excluded from fraternities
re not allowed to participate in
; excluding non-Aryans, was
ation for the *numerus clausus*
end the same function on a
iversity system. Meanwhile, the
1930's, found devoted adher-
d put them to excellent service
so effective that by 1932 Jew-
.*Zeitung* to publish a list of
31 the National Socialists had
university students, and it was
tionately, there were as many
1 the high schools.⁷ That the
rumbling of the hopes that as-
ed for so long. No longer be-
ely live side by side with the
spaper of the assimilationist
eir bodies and to learn the art
themselves against "bloodless
nple, within the span of two

: most conspicuous display of
played significant roles in pro-
d to a revolution of the right
nti-Semitism, the schools con-
anti-modern, anti-Republican,
chool textbooks, such as Her-
: transformation of the pas-
mechanized present. Accord-
unity of the earlier German
he cold, inanimate "externali-
ic and technological develop-
er popular history textbook
; that, "in the long run, this
inner emptiness which it pro-

duced."¹⁰ How reminiscent of Löns' picture of the elemental forces
of the Volk finally bursting through the thin, superficial crust of
civilization!

Even those textbook writers who identified themselves with the
Republic collaborated in the end with its enemies by undermining
confidence in its institutions and by confusing the problems that
confronted modern man. Wilmann's strongly pro-Weimar history of
Germany could not refrain from lauding Lagarde and Langbehn
as Germanic prophets who wanted to "free man from the rot of the
big city and have him live only for the genuine, the truly German,
without any thought of monetary gain."¹¹ Wilmann himself did not
elaborate on the characteristics of the "truly German," leaving the
task to the classroom teacher. Walther Gehl, a history teacher, is an
even more interesting case in point. Indifferent to the Republic,
neither praising its virtues nor condemning its faults, Gehl strongly
opposed the increased mechanization, the scientific emphasis, and
the materialistic values that had supposedly become dominant in
German society. According to him, these phenomena were only ex-
ternal riches gained at the expense of inner spirituality. Paecans to
Lagarde and Langbehn also adorned his textbooks, but, singularly
enough, they were free of anti-Semitic diatribes.¹² Not until a year
after the Nazis had assumed power did Gehl condemn the Jews
as well as the defunct Republic. In the process he became a leading
Nazi educator. In their own ways, all these men influenced the
youth in their turn toward the Volkish movement. The problems
they described, the emphases and lessons they selected, and their
nostalgia for the past succeeded in leaving the younger generation
with only the tools of irrationality for solving their problems.

The German ideological crisis was more apparent and significant
to the students in the universities. Competition with Jewish intellec-
tuals for jobs was more intense. This was the initial battlefield
where the Aryan, Volkish, and Germanic ideas mustered great force
and eventually triumphed. The existing traditional institutions, rules,
and over-all attitude of the universities were conducive to this
course. Earlier we discussed the intense racial feelings that per-
meated most of the fraternity and social life of the students. Not
only did the German fraternities exclude students of direct Jew-
ish descent, but in 1919, at the general convention at Eisenach, this
policy of exclusion was extended to include those Aryans who had
married Jewish or non-white partners. Thereafter the racial theme
resounded more often and with greater significance, until in 1928
the *Burschenschaftliche Blätter*, the fraternities' paper, could declare

It will have
into a wall
and up to us."

in determining the Volk's intellectual fraternities felt free to state:
[1] 13

ity students had found it religious requirements for membership the part of the school administration gone their way and nothing had the racial philosophy, nothing had dissolving their organizations and the issue was now, for the first the student body and the Prussian C. H. Becker. The minister, a government of Prussia, threatened fore subsidies, from the German range its policy of discrimination. criterion for membership. The n 1925, of the newly organized (Students' Organization) that it strian counterpart, which for a the Aryan clause. Since, if the student organization would be sion, the Prussian minister, sup- et, refused to grant the request. ed the Deutsche Studentenschaft a the question whether to reject eceiving official recognition and ecognition and retain the policy helmingly rejected Becker's re- anting to split the organization ecided to remain as they were ation.

or what it considered basic to spurned the appeal of material i-Germanism played some part he Austrians into the organiza- measure of unity with them, in ich forbade political union be- e episode also shows a Volkish rman students themselves, the have earlier traced to the last How deeply Volkish attitudes ecomes luminously clear if we come during the economic de-

pression, but rather during the "good times" of the Republic. It was not a specific response to an imminent crisis, but rather the expression of a deep and lasting commitment.

The newly found solidarity of the students on the issue of racial differences was also reflected in other fields of life and thought. They had found a basis for action that opposed existing authority yet remained independent of any political movement directed by their elders. Bourgeois youth made their protests obvious. Organization after organization, fraternity after fraternity, succumbed to the pressure of anti-Semitic agitation and advocated the anti-Jewish *numerus clausus* for their university charters. They protested the employment of professors that were either "leftist" or Jewish, and when more subtle means were exhausted they engaged in overt demonstrations to press their demands. In 1931, for example, anti-Semitic student riots erupted in Vienna, Berlin, Cologne, Greifswald, Halle, Hamburg, Breslau, Kiel, Königsberg, and Munich. No region was immune.

In these areas, as in the past, the faculties failed to provide any opposition, failed to use their administrative powers, and failed to organize effective alternative groups of students. At best they displayed a detached passivity, lending their ears to the racist harangues of fellow professors but never supporting either side. At worst they joined in the harassment of fellow Jewish or leftist educators. In 1932, at Breslau and Heidelberg, institutions which were internationally respected, the faculties dismissed Jewish professors accused of being Marxists. The Gentile academicians themselves made the basic decision.¹⁵

Whereas under Hitler all the student groups went over to the new Nazi youth order either out of conviction or by compulsion, prior to 1933 the rightist non-Nazi organizations still provided a Volkish alternative to the problems of the day. Beginning rather late, in 1929, the fraternities and corps first took the competition of the Nazi youth movement seriously. They marshaled their forces and attempted to stave off the rapid encroachment of their territory. As the pressure increased they rested their last hope with the conservatives, above all with von Papen. But to little effect. Although they attempted to steal the Nazi thunder and mercilessly purged their membership of Jews, they were unable to prevent the triumph of the National Socialist program. In 1931, even before their strong showing at the polls, the Nazis scored a signal victory in winning over the 140,000-member Studentenschaft at its meeting in the Austrian city of Graz.¹⁶ They were assisted by the all-Aryan Austrian student organization. The Nazi expert in student affairs, Gerhard Krüger, assumed the role

and henceforth signed his com-
mand Hitler." A total take-over fol-
lows and organizers replacing the

elect group of bourgeois youth,
themselves and for the nation,
but in their rightist, Volkish, and
une with non-university bour-
commented upon this develop-
ment in 1933 that this radicaliza-
tion was a danger to the Republic.¹⁸
The Youth Movement even more
were more revolutionary, and it
posed questions. The social order,
the movement were the targets of the
attacks, but the Youth Movement
the formation of modern society into
the will and spirit of the Ger-
man question took second place.

the "third way," an alter-
native inadequate existing organiza-
tion of the Volk's desires. This
study of the German revolution
will have to deal with it more
is noted here that its basic compo-
nent is spiritual as well as practical
society and the Youth Move-
ment is immediate and deeply spiritual
solution of the crisis of German
in response to the national predica-
ment—this messianic dynamism and
romantic and romantic impetus
in line with the tradition of the

in their own circles and pave
the way for the population at large, the Youth
in the *Bünde*. These organizations
define their mission: a spiritual
and a framework for action, for
the "new youth groups" (newly or-
ganized) came to represent the
new and realizing the ideology
of the people regarded their or-

ganization and their principles as the "new community" that was to
serve as a model for the reorganization of *all* society. Within it, it
was possible to live one's life according to Volkish values. Here the
individual was not alienated, here he neither transcended society nor
subordinated himself to its inanimate and fortuitous demands. Here
he was at one with the Volk, sharing in the most genuine freedom
that man could attain. Ernst Buske, the leader of the Freischaar,
summed it all up when he declared that the *Bund* reflected the es-
sence of the Volk: a spiritual community cemented by a common
Geist.¹⁹ And it was the search for this kind of community, rather
than a concern with the explicitly political struggles of the age, that
set the Youth Movement now, as before the war, into motion.²⁰
An inner revolution, followed by a change in the institutions of
society, was the only way left for the German Volk to regain its in-
tegrity, genuineness, and proximity with the cosmic spirituality that
underlies all of life.

The emphasis on revolutionary change was significant. Having
overcome the initial fear of revolutionary change, the German youth
took a second look at the Bolshevik upheaval and, in part, liked what
they saw. There was a strong state, a central system of power,
directed by a single, capable leader; there was a society that worked
in unison, expressing its own peculiar national fervor.²¹ These Ger-
man youth saw in the Russian Revolution not merely the beginning
of an international movement but also the manifestations of an inner
nationalism, a transformation that could be duplicated in Germany
according to German needs and circumstances.

This revolutionary messianism came to the fore in other youth
organizations besides the Freischaar. The Neue Pfadfinder, for in-
stance, under the tutelage of Martin Völkel, developed similar ideas
about a new Reich and a Germanic leader. Völkel, an able spokes-
man for the group, equated the Reich with the Volk, declaring that
all national activities—such as commerce, politics, and jurisprudence
—had to be integrated in it. Turning to Stefan George and his ideas,
Völkel presented these to his troop as the alternative to the preva-
lent forms of social organization, capitalistic or socialistic. Within
a *Bund*, held together by a spiritual magnet, were to be found the
inspiration of heroic deeds and the origin of all states. Youth, accord-
ing to Völkel, was determined to destroy the false gods of the state
—commerce and industry—and to integrate them as new institutions
in a new society serving the interests of the Volk.²²

Some youth groups exaggerated the importance of the spiritual
component and came to be regarded as merely eccentric. In Thuringia,
for example, Muck Lamberty and his small, short-lived Neue

Schaar (New Band), organized in 1920, represented such a loss of perspective. Preaching to audiences in Thuringian churches, Lamberty lectured on the "Revolution of the Soul." He condemned all manifestations of modernity, all materialism and intellectualism, including medicine and the natural sciences, and advocated a direct contact with nature as the sole remedy for all modern ills. Lamberty exhorted his audience to make their souls "swing" in tune with nature, with their own subliminal desires, and in rhythm with the ancestral spirits of the past. Before and after the lectures he would lead his own group, about twenty-five in number, and such townspeople as were willing in a free-form dance that would start in the market place and wind through the village streets. They would abandon themselves in their dancing in an attempt to recapture that "enthusiasm" known by their ancestors in the far-distant sixteenth century, when their prophets had preached the Second Coming of Christ.

* For a time Lamberty's cultism spread. This Pied Piper of the Youth Movement, followed by his small band of initiates, moved from village to village leading the people in dance and lecturing them on the salvation of their Volkish souls. In addition to the dancing, which was intended to liberate the body and bring it closer to the rhythm of the cosmos, the Neue Schaar also practiced vegetarianism and abstention from alcohol and observed such ancient Germanic festivals as that of the summer solstice. But the group's popularity was short-lived. Its eccentricity blossomed forth as sexual promiscuity and under heavy criticism the Neue Schaar disbanded.²³

In contrast to the university youth, the Youth Movement refrained from heavy concentration on anti-Semitism. They made little use of it as a tool and still less as an end. Not that they were tolerant or advocated the integration of Jews into German culture, for they also held that Jews were an alien people, an alien Volk, which had its own peculiar cosmic reference. However, on the whole they disregarded the racial argument and formulated a policy that allowed for integration of Germanized Jewry. They believed that any peoples who strongly and decisively transcended their origins were capable of immersing themselves in a pure Germanism. In conformity with this notion, various groups of the movement accepted Jews as members. The Neue Pfadfinder, for instance, accepted Jews in Bavaria, but were less liberal in the North, in Berlin, whereas the Nerother Bund, the Altwandervogel, and the Freischaar had an open policy toward Jews.²⁴ The over-all situation was so favorable that Ernst Michael Jovy, after examining the problem thoroughly, concluded that anti-

Semitism actually decreed before 1933.

This leniency was due to the Nazis. The leader, maintained a f ideology and the semi-national Socialists. Emphatically fought for their independence, finally forcibly disbanded course, some Volkish-organizations which shifted in general agreement with Nazis or because they drives. But what drew the non-Nazi Volkish to the revolutionary action that the N

The question of revolution the compatibilities as with movements. Both had the Youth Movement and the name as a sacred call to the creation of personality and required that they: ogy and discipline. Abo accomplish the unification were the points of disapproval Hitler, whom the Youth tastes, his fanaticism, and, on the other hand, they disagreed with the votes of the masses during power politics.²⁵ The Nationalists and disagreed just as much as to criticize the effectiveness in promoting the SA men were having asserted, the romantic vision of the countryside.²⁶ The young men of a true Volkish movement had the important task was to induce a social and activist revolution. In contrast to the elitist leadership of a

* How A. H. detested this.

"The Volk, plus modernity, is what we want. A marriage of opposites."

→ That is a political statement.

20, represented such a loss of in Thuringian churches, Lamberty the Soul. He condemned all rationalism and intellectualism, influences, and advocated a direct way for all modern ills. Lamberty's souls "swing" in tune with sires, and in rhythm with the id after the lectures he would be in number, and such towns—dance that would start in the large streets. They would abandon attempt to recapture that ers in the far-distant sixteenth ached the Second Coming of

lead. This Pied Piper of the small band of initiates, moved sople in dance and lecturing souls. In addition to the dance the body and bring it closer Schaar also practiced vegetarianism. He observed such ancient Germanic customs. But the group's popularity blossomed forth as sexual the Neue Schaar disbanded.²³ The Youth Movement refrained from violence. They made little use of it as they were tolerant or advocate of a new culture, for they also held to the Volk, which had its own policy that allowed for intellectualism. They believed that any peoples whose origins were capable of violence. In conformity with this they accepted Jews as members. In Bavaria, but whereas the Nerother Bund had an open policy toward Jews, Ernst Michael thought, concluded that anti-

Semitism actually decreased in the Youth Movement *Bünde* shortly before 1933.

This leniency was due in part to the Youth Movement's hostility to the Nazis. The leadership of the larger groups, such as the Freischaar, maintained a fine level of discrimination between their ideology and the seemingly similar ideological precepts of the National Socialists. Emphasizing a clear-cut Volkish commitment, they fought for their independence until the end, and when they were finally forcibly disbanded, they were still an autonomous group. Of course, some Volkish-oriented youth groups went over to the Nazis, rather early—and with increasing frequency as time went by. Those organizations which shifted their allegiance did so because they were in general agreement with the program, strategy, and tactics of the Nazis or because they saw in Hitler the culmination of their own drives. But what drew them most strongly, and always chagrined the non-Nazi Volkish youth organizations, was the appeal to revolutionary action that the Nazis had writ large across their banner.

The question of revolutionary commitment played a large role in the compatibilities as well as in the antagonisms between the two movements. Both had endorsed the "German revolution." Both the Youth Movement and the Nazis praised the Volk and invoked its name as a sacred call to action; both demanded a primary renunciation of personality and individuality on the part of their members and required that they submerge themselves in the group, its ideology and discipline. Above all, both groups looked to a leader to accomplish the unification of the Volk under one banner. What, then, were the points of disagreement? First, there was the problem of Hitler, whom the Youth Movement rejected because of his vulgar tastes, his fanaticism, and his "proletarianization" of the party. Second, they disagreed with the Nazis' practice of appealing for the votes of the masses during elections as well as the opportunism of power politics.²⁵ The Nazis, on the other hand, also had their complaints and disagreed just as vigorously. Their first line of defense was to criticize the ineffectiveness of the Youth Movement and its ineffectiveness in promoting the revolution. While the patriotic and devoted SA men were having their skulls cracked wide open, the Nazis asserted, the romantic youth were taking pleasant strolls through the countryside.²⁶ The youth retorted that they were the sole champions of a true Volkish program: they claimed that the most important task was to indoctrinate the Volk in a cultural, ideological, and activist revolution. But this could only be accomplished through the elitist leadership of a *Bund* and not through a mass party such as

rest this.
Lamberty, what
is of a poet.

→ That is all that works in power
politics.

ment built upon the elitist tradition of the Volkish movement.

As an *Orden*, like the Knights to revive the medieval hierarchical spirit them from being merely reactionaries in the search for a common unity of the masses were mere classes under a different name. The first step toward an *Orden* was to be the first step toward an *Orden* even saw the Volk as only a world state.²⁹ Clearly all of this was rejected a structuring of the *Orden* and might even end in world understood this well when it accused in favor of a "political party" and ideology of the Youth Movement too abstract to compete with the "experience of a living community." It was too vague and the rejection in building the new society was a loss of "feeling." The Nazis, in also rejected "materialistic apologetics" of the youth groups by the use of a very astute, concrete political strategy. They countered this threat by taking over and consequently they drifted away from the "respectable" DNVP. Moreover, even these moves were not enough to bring members into the Nazi party. Without assumed total power, the Youth Movement, disintegrated rather easily,

in reaction to the Nazi youth groups? From an analysis of those marginal groups representative of the Volkish movement, still flirted with them and attracted a new, but Nazi-oriented propaganda. They have been on good terms with the various phases similar to their own—moderate and militant attitude toward the Nazi greater fanaticism. It might be their contribution to the Volkish

cause was trifling, but they do give some insight into the feeling of those on the edge of the movement.

Of these pro-Nazi organizations, the Adler und Falken and the Geusen can be singled out as the most popular and representative. They were small organizations, together consisting of only some 5,600 members, and they prided themselves on the fact, claiming that it was consistent with their elitist and exclusivist outlook. They believed themselves to be of the Volkish nobility, the shock troops of the cause. Ideologically, they fully supported the Volkish precepts: opposition to all things un-Germanic, from the Roman alphabet to the Jews, from orthodox religion to modernity.³² They accentuated the "religious" nature of their organization. Radicalism in the Youth Movement meant a further heightening of the mystical component. Thus the Geusen rejected the idea of the *Bund* as too "practical" and materialistic, and regarded themselves as an *Orden* instead.³³ Moreover, they dwelt upon the past: "All great spirits are rooted in the past, the history of a people is nothing less than the unfolding of its soul."³⁴ Small wonder that these groups joined with the extremist elements of the Volkish movement in worshipping the sun.³⁵ Eugen Dühring and L. F. Clauss's *Die nordische Seele* formed their approach to the racial issue. Yet there was a more practical side to their activity, more so indeed than that of most of the other Youth Movement groups. The Adler und Falken and the Geusen functioned according to the immediate needs of their geographic stronghold: the frontier regions of the Sudetenland. Here they became the bulwark against the Czech pressure upon the German minority. Like the Deutsche Nationalsozialistische Partei of the same region, they concentrated on defending the rights of the German workers, citizens, and merchants against the pressure from the Czechs. In this situation the conditions were ripe for the development of a sense of community, a sense of "German socialism" that was manifest in certain forms of communal life. In the town of Troppau, for example, the youth *Orden* maintained common dining facilities and established a workshop under common ownership, the profits being used to encourage the cultural activity of the German community and to subsidize German artisans who—the weavers, for example—were most vulnerable to Czech competition.³⁶ Thus, the youth "experienced life through living" in the genuine *bündisch* nature of an ideal community. That whatever success they achieved was due to the tense and aggressive state of mind of the German minority in the frontier communities dawned on them only later, when the political situation had become increasingly strained. Then, in 1928, unable to

stand alone, the Geusen threw in their lot with the German National Socialists as the most capable and dedicated defenders of their particular outlook.

But even here the Geusen, and later, under similar conditions, the other groups, were discriminating in their allegiance to the Nazis. They gravitated toward the Strasser wing of the party. Hitler was not sufficiently Volkish for them; he had compromised himself too deeply with the interests of the capitalist class, the class of modernity that had betrayed the Volk for silver. In Gregor Strasser they, as many other Volkish groups, found a more congenial leader. They hoped that he would establish a "German socialism" which would satisfy the needs of the Volk. For a time these distinctions were tenaciously defended by both sides. The Geusen, for instance, engaged in ideological disputes with the pro-Hitler youth, and both groups were hostile toward each other. Then, too, the Geusen came to occupy influential positions in the DHV's *Fahrende Gesellen*, where they threw their ideological support to the pro-Strasser Alfred Krebs.³⁷ But in the end, when Hitler himself abrogated all alternatives, these organizations, joined by the whole Youth Movement, declared their loyalty to the Third Reich, its leader, and the newly awakened Germanic Volk.

In this study of the postwar Youth Movement we have come upon the younger generation's greater concentration upon a "German revolution." This militant attitude reflected the profound tensions that racked Germany throughout the period of the Weimar Republic. Postwar youth thirsted for activism, and not just in Germany. But here this drive was channeled into Volkish longings and traditions, and the *Bünde* became the representative form through which these youth expressed their longings. But they became bogged down in a mystical ideology and lost their chance for political power. Here they were in the mainstream of the Volkish movement, with its emphasis upon the "idea" rather than upon practical alternatives, which they tended to equate with materialism. The *bündisch* youth were more overtly political than the members of the earlier prewar Youth Movement, but they carried on the "idealism of deeds" upon the same foundation. Indeed these anti-bourgeois youth of bourgeois origin had the same goal as their predecessors: to transcend their origins through a "spiritual revolution." The defeat in war and the difficulties of the Weimar Republic merely heightened this quest and gave it a sharper focus toward the building of a new society.

The Nazis also used the appeal of the "third way," the opposition to bourgeois society, but they combined this with the building of a

mass political party. Mo advocated did not become mystical ecstasies. Instead to earth—for in their "anti-Jewish revolution" were modified by direct in," rather than against hopes of the Youth Movement" increased in direct Jewish revolution. Hitler tradition to achieve his become the spearhead (he made skillful use of refused to do. Most of his banner. The Volkish important than their long

evolution

an alternative to capitalism or Marxism thought during the Weimar Republic of the post-unification period, —in a more theoretical manner, but each for a viable "third way" was an concern. This study, so far, has attempts to transcend the limitations of each, to penetrate into regions beyond contact with the world as they found it to find some way to raise the Volk. They were determined to liberate it from the civilization imposed by a state to fulfill spiritual needs of the Volk. The "third-way" alternative again into the light to bear on the nation by circumventing state machinery or the national machine were gaining staunch adherents. Making deep inroads in German Europe, fascism was based upon the Volkish thought here intersected with the national movement. What had Germany fitted to her own requirements, political and cultural heritage? There was a popular movement of 1848. There were generations of German thinkers there were the prophets of Germany proposed transforming Germans into a new German people, the revival of the Germanic

Whatever the alternatives presented by the advocates of the "third way," the underlying basis was always metaphysical. During the 1920's, intellectuals continued to view the coming German revolution primarily in spiritual terms. That the soil was prepared for a metaphysical ideal of action we have already seen. The "idealism of deeds" about which men like Eugen Diederichs and Hermann Lietz spoke constituted just such a spiritual revolution. A change in the people's attitude toward the Volk was more important than any concrete social reforms. While such men talked about socialism, it was not the Marxian version which they had in mind. For Möller van den Bruck, the prophet of the "third way," German socialism was a social order forged from the union of a medieval corporatism and the cultural peculiarities of the German Volk. As he emphatically asserted, in condemning Marxist internationalism, "every people has its own socialism."¹ But was it not a contradiction to believe simultaneously in a revolutionary yet conservative change? By no means, as long as there was a metaphysical foundation, as long as one's doctrine of revolution did not call for *new* and *radical* social and economic reforms. Man did not advance progressively, discarding his traditions as they became useless; rather he was bound by eternal laws that had been established in the past and embodied in tradition. Or, as van den Bruck stated it, "under a German socialism we understand a corporate concept of the state and economy that might have to be instituted through revolutionary means, but which, once established, must be bound by conservative principles."²

How then was this revolution to come about and what were to be the fruits of its success? Möller van den Bruck, in his famous work *The Third Reich* (1923), which he first called *The Third Way*, considered Germany to be a "new nation," as distinguished from the overripe "old nations" of the West, a nation with a mission. It was a country of the future that had not yet developed its inherent peculiarities and greatness. What it had lacked until now, a shortcoming that accounted for the failure of the recent past, van den Bruck declared, was a chiliastic ideal. The "new" Germany, he asserted, had to be fired by the *idea* of the Germanic past and of Germany's potential future greatness; it had to revive and make operative in a new age the traditions of medieval messianism.³ Contemporary materialism, contemporary society and science, had to be discarded and the German soul must take wing and follow the unrestrained course of the *Geist*. Van den Bruck even subordinated anti-Semitism to this ideal. Nothing must stand in the way of the development of the ideal, not even the problem of race: "Racism must not lead to a new German problem by excluding, for biological reasons, men who

"spiritually belong to the race" ⁴—an argument that rested on the undisputed primacy of metaphysical considerations. In a spiritual revolution all differences should be dealt with on this level; intellectual and cultural affinities were more important than biological and material differences. Van den Bruck was advocating a truly spiritual revolution.

But what would it accomplish? How would it transform the present society in accordance with the requirements of the Volk? First, the bourgeois social and economic order would be dissolved. The nation would revert to the corporatism of the Middle Ages, with allowance for certain requirements of the modern age—such as international trade, tariffs, taxes, and a relatively large amount of public spending—factors, van den Bruck asserted, which had long ago been taken into account in the protectionist ideas of Friedrich List. ⁵ The corporatist reorganization was to reap for the nation the benefits of a communal society, benefits which the bourgeoisie had not been able to provide. Embodying some aspects of socialism, the new organization would uphold the sanctity of special groupings such as guilds, estates, and orders, all of which were to be subordinated to the requirements of the Volk as a whole. Socially and politically, the new order was to complete the democratic changes of the nineteenth century. The citizen of the "new" Germany would participate to a greater extent in the political life of the nation and would be granted a "greater" role as an integral part of the *volonté général*. Who was to lead, who to govern? Van den Bruck was vague and ambiguous on this question, asserting only that the spiritual revolution would provide the answers. ⁶

Other Volkish theorists elaborated on the theme initiated and expounded by van den Bruck. The circle around Diederichs' *Die Tat* took up the cause and propounded its own variation in the form of the New Romanticism. After Diederichs' death in 1927, Eugen Rosenstock assumed the ideological leadership of this group and advocated a German revolution in terms similar to van den Bruck's. He too asserted that it was not to be a political revolution, that its essence as well as the means used to bring it about must be spiritual. It would be Germany's third great revolutionary upheaval, the first being the Lutheran schism and the second the creation of the Romantic creed. Like the others, it would be a purely spiritual phenomenon. ⁷ Later on, in 1929, Hans Zehrer, the editor of *Die Tat*, reinterpreted Rosenstock's thoughts to meet new conditions. Speaking of the revived nationalistic anti-Weimar front, he identified the German revolution with a renewal of Lutheranism and said that it might even be equated with a second Lutheran revolution. ⁸

The German tary. Volkish the people participat venting the Vol position to parli of the bourgeois the Volk. For ex his own way, c had become a li ness by "other r times. Carl Schn eral consensus c tional lawyer, he sufficient as a me and demanded tl answer the need: declared outdat liberalism; they v ance of political Möller van den attributed "the v ties." ¹⁰

In answer, th *volonté général*. that the masses w of them only in Correspondingly. seen as having u common to the v integral parts of spoke in one voic

There were m society, as well needs of the amo theory, dating fr between society v olvement in per to the organic st from the popular rate structure, if all disagreements only spiritual gu bodies. Since the

cupations of the population could be their own spokesmen, no other organ was necessary; parties could be dispensed with and parliaments became superfluous.¹¹

But before the revolutionaries of "the third way" could fully accept the notion of the corporate structure, an improvement had to be made in the theory to bring the several corporations into line with the needs of Volkish unity. Grouping around special occupational interests was good so long as an internal unity could be provided that transcended the limitations of the various interests. A mythos and a national leader were required. The youth groups and the *Bünde* led the way in pressing this demand. At the same time, they offered the ideological solution in the form of the principles of their own organizations: Eros and concepts of leadership. Here was a concrete effort to resolve the problem. The *Bund*, as we have described it, was thought to represent a living form, a true forerunner of the organic community. It transcended the corporate structure without really abolishing it by providing an over-all unity through its Volkish precepts and the concept of Eros. Through these unifying factors, in addition to its concepts of leadership, it claimed to facilitate the ideological consensus of the corporate, or *bündisch*, organization by uniting body, soul, and the spirit of all in the service of the Volk. In the interest of leadership, the corporate unity envisaged by the advocates of the *Bünde* system would not tolerate equality among individuals. Instead, individuals occupied places in hierarchical orders according to merit. In this manner, the corporate aspects of the *bündisch* plan merged special occupational interests with the principles of local leadership by means of charismatic leaders as they would arise in each corporate organization. Confident of their destiny, the several *Bünde*, the Freischaar, the Neue Pfadfinder, and the Jungdeutsche Orden could declare: "Where a *Bund* exists, a new Germany starts!"¹²

The *bündisch* version of "the third way" was favorably received. It did indeed provide a middle course between capitalism and Marxism, for, as the German revolutionaries exclaimed, "true socialism is the community of the Volk."¹³ That the theory contained ambiguities about how it could actually be put into practice, and that it had not been thoroughly analyzed, did not seem to matter. They were satisfied with the broad, over-all skeleton of the theory as it steered between capitalism (denying the metaphysical sanctity of private property) and Marxism (refuting the primacy of the proletariat and class needs in the coming revolution). The aim was to rejuvenate the spiritual orientation of Germans along the lines of nature, the German heritage, and the Volk. Or, as such men asserted,

the order of creating a new state,"¹⁴ for implementation.

Although the proposals favored a more critical eye, conflicted with the one hand, the concept of the true democracy and *Bünde* a leader without national leader was if the leadership the whole corporately, these people in the *bündisch* c

Again, Carl Schmitt in his suggestion he turned to the two conflict and exercise of power as to make it. A common bond, their diversity, a common bond which would direct the whole edifice. The race of the Volk and the charismatic leadership. would necessarily which would be capacity he would bring them together in corporations, and racial unity that common denominator

Here again we have an alternative to the economic or social thought in racial regarded economic was assigned, at

+

be their own spokesmen, no other
d be dispensed with and parlia-

"the third way" could fully ac-
structure, an improvement had to be
veral corporations into line with
ing around special occupational
internal unity could be provided
the various interests. A mythos
ed. The youth groups and the
demand. At the same time, they
se form of the principles of their
ts of leadership. Here was a con-
The *Bund*, as we have described
form, a true forerunner of the
the corporate structure without
over-all unity through its Volk-
os. Through these unifying fac-
leadership, it claimed to facilitate
porate, or *bündisch*, organization
of all in the service of the Volk.
porate unity envisaged by the
ld not tolerate equality among
upied places in hierarchical or-
er, the corporate aspects of the
ational interests with the princi-
of charismatic leaders as they
ganization. Confident of their
ischaar, the Neue Pfadfinder,
eclare: "Where a *Bund* exists, a

d way" was favorably received.
e between capitalism and Marx-
ries exclaimed, "true socialism
That the theory contained am-
be put into practice, and that it
did not seem to matter. They
ll skeleton of the theory as it
the metaphysical sanctity of
ting the primacy of the prole-
revolution). The aim was to
Germans along the lines of na-
Volk. Or, as such men asserted,

the order of creation demanded "first a new human being and then a
new state,"¹⁴ first the spiritual transformation and then its material
implementation.

Although the Volkish movement as a whole received the *bündisch*
proposals favorably, there were men who looked at them with a
more critical eye. For these, the concept of a strong leadership con-
flicted with the general idea of corporate interests. While, on the
one hand, the corporate structure served the purpose of expressing
the true democracy of the Volk, a strong national leadership would
effectively demolish any such pretensions. The individual corpora-
tions and *Bünde* might, within the total structure, ably accommodate
a leader without forgoing their democratic prerogatives, but a strong
national leader would be at variance with such an arrangement. For,
if the leadership ideal were made operative on the national scene,
the whole corporate structure would become meaningless. Accord-
ingly, these people claimed, there was a division of power inherent
in the *bündisch* concept that required resolution.

Again, Carl Schmitt must be regarded as the most representative
in his suggestions for resolving that division. Interestingly enough,
he turned to the Italian example for inspiration and incorporated
the two conflicting forces in a system of compatible responsibility
and exercise of power. The corporations were to function in such a
way as to make their own special contributions to a national mythos.
A common bond, uniting all the various corporations regardless of
their diversity, was similarly to join all the parts of the nation. This
common bond was to be race: the Aryan race. The Führer-prinzip,
which would direct the united forces of the nation, crowned the
whole edifice. The *Führer* would be a representative member of the
race of the Volk, and would be greater only by virtue of his charis-
matic leadership. Accordingly, his concern for the nation's welfare
would necessarily be greater than that of the individual corporation,
which would be primarily concerned with its own interests. In this
capacity he would bridge the diversity of the corporations and draw
them together in a concerted national effort.¹⁵ Thus, the leader, the
corporations, and, indeed, the whole Volk participated in a mystical
racial unity that engendered identical attitudes and values. The com-
mon denominator was found: the Aryan race.

Here again we return to the crux of the Volkish argument, of the
alternative it presented: rather than stating Germany's problem in
economic or social terms, the proponents of the Volkish solution
thought in racial and ideological terms. We recall that they had never
regarded economics as a crucial social element, and the chief place
was assigned, at all times, to the spiritual disposition of the German

Volk. Volkish economic theory, in its aversion to anything materialistic and concrete, had never advanced beyond opposition to the international (bourgeois or Jewish) capitalist conspiracy, on the one hand, and the international Bolshevik conspiracy, on the other. Its most sophisticated economic achievement was to define productivity as the work of skilled artisans and to condemn money and interest charges as unproductive. And this attitude, this slighting of the economic sector, was typical of all Volkish thought. The problems were never posed in real, concrete terms, but as conflicts of ideology, of identity, of spiritual values.

Though the door was closed to economic considerations, they came in by the window and in a converted ideological form played a major role in Volkish and National Socialist agitation. Many revolutionaries of "the third way" fused primitive economics with the omnipresent Germanic faith in order to direct the attack not so much against the bourgeoisie, whose capitalist inclinations it condemned, as against the Jews. In this manner the Jews were identifiable not only as a separate and alien people racially inferior to the Aryans, but also as the source of the imbalanced, pernicious capitalism that was plaguing Germany. Anti-Semitism could conveniently encompass the charges of racial adulteration, economic sabotage, and absolute enmity to the German Volk. It could also, just as conveniently, picture the Jews as the incarnation of the inferior race, as capitalism, or as Bolshevism. In short, Jewry was the corrupting force of materialism, or as Paul Krannhals, a Volkish philosopher, declared: "With Jewry stands or falls the mechanistic and mechanical concept of the economic system."¹⁶

Directed into the channels of anti-Semitism, the Volkish alternative of "the third way" became increasingly popular. As race became an indispensable ingredient, various individuals and organizations spurned those who lacked the proper racial emphasis. For this reason, Alfred Krebs of the DHV rejected Italian fascism, claiming that neither Mussolini nor his party appreciated the value and centrality of race. Similarly, the National Bolsheviks, those who combined their German nationalism with admiration for the Soviet Union, were accused of ignoring or minimizing the merits of race and Volk.¹⁷ The clearest example of the implications and problems of the German revolution are found in the National Socialist camp. Here the brothers Otto and Gregor Strasser attempted to fight the anti-bourgeois, anti-capitalist, and anti-Marxist struggle.

The Strasser brothers had been early followers of Hitler and they made it their special concern to proselytize northern Germany. By the mid-twenties Gregor was the second most powerful man in

the party. Otto, the theorist, remained in the local party leaders around the "Munich group" in that moment (he did not show an easy victory. Nevertheless, stripped of his political power, Gregor Strasser was murdered in the trial regions and, especially meaningful not only the title of their party: to be German socialist alternative "spiritual revolution." Otto Strasser and historic problems. The more they talked of socialist program ideas. Conversely, the great aspects of the German real issues. The two alternatives were precariously balanced in favor of the spiritual ever was put forward. For, upon economic and social program central position. This is proposed social and economic of wealth and power revolutionaries, the Strasser private ownership of equitable distribution of them. Their program was that capitalist exploitation many to economic and socialistic.

In his private utterances in the *Fourteen Theses* after his break with Hitler the factionalist Black Front of his commitment was realized in three main points against the enslavement of money; Volkish, again. His first point placed him

aversion to anything material beyond opposition to the capitalist conspiracy, on the one hand, and on the other, a determination to define production in terms of money and in his attitude, this slighting of the Volkish thought. The probable terms, but as conflicts of

economic considerations, they reduced ideological form played a nationalist agitation. Many revolutionary economics with the direct the attack not so much as inclinations it condemned, the Jews were identifiable not racially inferior to the Aryans, and, pernicious capitalism that could conveniently encompass economic sabotage, and abuse could also, just as convention of the inferior race, as Jewry was the corrupting influence, a Volkish philosopher, he mechanistic and mechanistic

ism, the Volkish alternative, popular. As race became individuals and organizations a racial emphasis. For this Italian fascism, claiming the value and central Bolsheviki, those who commendation for the Soviet minimizing the merits of race implications and problems of the National Socialist camp. Strasser attempted to fight the Marxist struggle.

followers of Hitler and to glorify northern Germany. Second most powerful man in

the party. Otto, the theoretician, broke with Hitler as early as 1928. Gregor remained in the party and in 1929 attempted to rally the local party leaders around his standard in opposition to Hitler and the "Munich group" in the South. His nerve failed at the crucial moment (he did not show up at the decisive meeting) and Hitler won an easy victory. Nevertheless, Gregor remained in the party, albeit stripped of his power. Hitler's revenge came in 1934, when Gregor Strasser was murdered. Oriented toward the northern industrial regions and, especially, Berlin, the Strassers attempted to make meaningful not only the "National" but also the "Socialist" in the title of their party: to be Volkish and at the same time to present a German socialist alternative. Yet, in the end, we are back to a "spiritual revolution." On the Volkish side, they emphasized German spiritual and historical needs as well as race; on the socialist side, the communal approach to the solution of economic and social problems. The more they stressed the latter, the material implementation of socialist programs, the less emphasis was placed on Volkish ideas. Conversely, the greater the stress on the racial and spiritual aspects of the German revolution, the less attention devoted to the real issues. The two alternatives inherent in the Strassers' program were precariously balanced. But there was a subtle prejudice in favor of the spiritual even when a more concrete socialist alternative was put forward. For, upon closer analysis of the Strasser brothers' economic and social program, we find that anti-Semitism occupied a central position. This is consistent with the extent to which their proposed social and economic changes were to affect the real division of wealth and power. After all, even though they claimed to be revolutionaries, the Strasser brothers' reforms did not aim at abolishing private ownership of the means of production or at effecting an equitable distribution of the profits derived from the capitalist system. Their program was more "anti-capitalist"—in that it maintained that capitalist exploitation (that is, Jewish usury) had reduced Germany to economic and financial destitution—than it was pro-socialistic.

In his private utterances, in his public statements, and, above all, in the *Fourteen Theses of the German Revolution* (1929), which, after his break with Hitler, served as the manifesto and program of the factionalist Black Front, Otto Strasser clearly delineated the extent of his commitment to socialist social change. Here he summarized in three main points the program of his group: nationalist, against the enslavement of Germany; socialist, against the tyranny of money; Volkish, against the destruction of the German soul.¹⁸ His first point placed him in the company of Möller van den Bruck,

for he advocated a foreign policy oriented toward the East, toward what van den Bruck had described as the territory of the "young" Russian nation. His second point demanded two basic steps: nationalization of all land and the abolition of all unearned income, a socialist policy that left intact the core of modern industrial capitalism. And the third point was directed against the "foreign" elements that supposedly festered with the German nation: Freemasons, Catholics, and especially Jews. In the summary of his program he re-emphasized the third commitment, to "clean out" Germany, by asserting that the "fight for the German revolution is especially directed against Judaism."¹⁹

Since Strasser's group did effectively represent one of the more plausible alternatives to Hitler, an alternative that was seriously weighed by such people as Chancellor Schleicher in 1932, it will be fruitful to look more closely at the group's proposals. We will notice that whereas the first two proposals are rather vague and were pursued in a halfhearted manner, the third bears all the marks of dedication and conviction.

During the early 1920's, German social scientists had observed a shift in Soviet Russia away from an internationalist policy toward a concentration on national concerns. To them, and especially to some German nationalists, Russian Bolshevism had successfully combined the essential aspects of a fervent nationalism and a utilitarian socialism. The Strassers maintained close contact with the group that evolved out of such sympathies, the National Bolsheviks, many of whom were also members of the NSDAP.²⁰ Intrigued by the developments in the Soviet Union, the Strasser group, including, by the mid-twenties, Joseph Goebbels, considered a foreign policy that would attempt to reach a *modus vivendi* with the eastern neighbor as in the best interests of Germany's own future national socialism. But since this policy could not be implemented until the National Socialists assumed power, many aspects were left vague.²¹

The economic proposals, as they struck close to home, were subjected to a closer scrutiny and, consequently, were more detailed. Here the Strasser brothers concretized the anti-bourgeois element in the revolutionary drive and translated its anti-capitalist longing into a demand for a semi-corporatist, semi-socialist society. The former insofar as society would be organized according to skills and interests; and the latter, as it pertained to the division of property and profits.

After his break with Hitler, Otto Strasser continued to spell out the direction of thought both he and his brother had voiced within the party. Gregor, remaining a party leader, failed in his bid to

depose Hitler the following brother, who had by then Otto Strasser denied the sacred the complete nation: retain the right to sell his property for a greater national banking. We must remember common Volkish demand communal ownership into of property and profits. Since property was to be appraised would hold the rights to private owners the remainder to go 49 per cent to the state. On the whole, these were reform rather than revolution. Primarily affected, at least not given greater social and political a larger fraction of the fruit.

Only with respect to the Front live up to its ideological of the nation required the ideological manifestations. National German values mean many to get involved with the national scene. Culture, defined was contrasted with civilization the Romance countries. Greater than solely German and Freemasonry, were at the head of these alien influences Jews, as a people whose history traced to other than German agents in all of Germany's the Strassers despised the Streicher, and Gregor Strasser desire persecution of the Jews and the Germans.²⁴ the Jews a "people composed of tainted usury in the time of the occupation with the Jews."

ated toward the East, toward the territory of the "young" nation. He outlined two basic steps: nationalization of all unearned income, a social revolution against the "foreign" elements of the German nation: Freemasons, and a summary of his program he called to "clean out" Germany, by a German revolution is especially

represent one of the more alternative that was seriously considered by Hitler in 1932, it will be clear that his proposals. We will notice that they are rather vague and were purporting to have all the marks of dedica-

al scientists had observed a nationalist policy toward a Germany, and especially to some extent, had successfully combined nationalism and a utilitarian social policy. In contact with the group that had been national Bolsheviks, many of them were intrigued by the development of a foreign policy that would lead to a future national socialism. They were contented until the National Socialists came to power.²¹

close to home, were substantially, were more detailed. anti-bourgeois element in the anti-capitalist longing into a new society. The former including to skills and interests: of property and profits.

er continued to spell out that his brother had voiced within the party, failed in his bid to

depose Hitler the following year, but he still refused to join his brother, who had by then founded a new group, the Black Front. Otto Strasser denied the sanctity of private property and even advocated the complete nationalization of land, though the farmer would retain the right to sell his produce on the free market. Yet he did not call for a greater nationalization in industry, transportation, and banking. We must remember that nationalization of land had been a common Volkish demand and that utopian groups had tried to put communal ownership into practice. In connection with the division of property and profits, Strasser's proposals were as follows: capital property was to be apportioned in such a way that the workers would hold the rights to 10 per cent, the state 41 per cent, and the private owners the remaining 49 per cent; profits, meanwhile, were to go 49 per cent to the workers and 51 per cent to the owners.²² On the whole, these were halfway measures, more in line with reform than revolution. Private property, after all, was not drastically affected, at least not the major holdings, and instead of being given greater social and political power, the workers merely received a larger fraction of the fruits of their own labors.

Only with respect to the third point did Otto Strasser's Black Front live up to its ideological claims. Here the spiritual awakening of the nation required that it be purged of all alien cultural and ideological manifestations. A reversion to the classical, the traditional German values meant a rejection of all that had caused Germany to get involved with foreign developments on the international scene. Culture, defined in its narrow Germanic application, was contrasted with civilization, the mechanistic development of the Romance countries. Correspondingly, all beliefs that had a greater than solely German relevance, such as Roman Catholicism and Freemasonry, were considered anti-Germanic and divisive. At the head of these alien influences were the Jews and Judaism. The Jews, as a people whose history and cultural development could be traced to other than German sources, were singled out as the hostile agents in all of Germany's problems.²³ Yet it is undoubtedly true that the Strassers despised the vulgar anti-Semitism of a man like Streicher, and Gregor Strasser stated categorically that Nazis did not desire persecution of the Jews, but only a "clean division" between them and the Germans.²⁴ Nevertheless, even Gregor Strasser called the Jews a "people composed of cheats" and said that they had practiced usury in the time of Moses.²⁵ On the whole, however, it can be concluded that their more specific social program lessened the pre-occupation with the Jewish menace. With the Strassers in control

** * A.H. Very few human beings
had a sense of community - what
they are looking for is union with a leader,*

the German revolution might perhaps have been kept from turning into an "anti-Jewish revolution." The brothers differed from Hitler in degree, though they also accepted ideas of racial purity.

Perhaps because the Volkish ideas were so important to their program, it ended up by stressing a spiritual transformation, a recapturing of the German soul. The attempts at social reform, important though they were, succumbed to the onslaught of the Volkish ideology. Metaphysics triumphed, for all these men were revolutionaries whose weapons lacked a concrete and practicable social and economic sharpness. They turned inward instead.

The Strassers, however, were not alone in their aspirations; others, with some of whom we have already become familiar, also shared similar goals. The idea of regenerating the corporatist structure of society, of conducting a purely spiritual and internal revolution, had adherents among those involved with the workers as well as among the higher echelons of state and society. For instance, Alfred Krebs of the DHV was joined by a fellow union leader sympathetic to the Volkish viewpoint. Max Habermann believed that Germany could attain her most "natural" form of political and economic organization only if she reverted to a corporatist state. He attempted to put his ideas into practice by entering into discussion with the Catholic trade-union movement, for he knew that many of its members were sympathetic.²⁶ More immediately influential, von Papen and members of his staff at a critical moment looked favorably on corporatism. In 1933, at the very moment when the Nazi-DNVP coalition government was formed, von Papen announced his sympathy with the corporatist position.²⁷ Of course, this did not carry with it a concomitant endorsement of social change or "third way" revolutions; rather, it was an attempt to stay the power of the fanatical nationalists, to preserve the *status quo*, and possibly to bring about a return to a non-industrial past. Edgar Jung, von Papen's chief theoretician, provided the most succinct analysis of the step, when he declared that the "new" Reich must be like that of the Middle Ages, that medieval society should serve as the model for constructing the organic Volk of the future.²⁸ Of course, von Papen's and Jung's beliefs did not include the Volkish desire for the union of the individual soul with the community of the Volk, the fusion which the DHV and other Volkish thinkers hoped would be effected by such a social order. They hoped instead for the re-establishment of the powers of the aristocracy based on heredity, tradition, and culture.

In the 1920's the advocates of the spiritualist and corporatist revolution were joined by segments of the Deutschnationale Volkspartei, which, through its economic specialist, Paul Bang, advocated the

implementation of principles of Such a course, Bang asserted, would unions and, in the interest of employer and the worker in industry, the natural leaders, would assume whom would be chosen, again by most competent national leader.²⁹

These advocates of a revived revolutionaries sincerely wished. That they failed indicates that they underestimated the resources of the times, which demanded a clear, program and a simpler objective.

But we must not succumb to retrospection, in the light of Hitler and his immediate adherents parts of the Strasser program or Bang of the DNVP. But in all on condition that they reflected. Correspondingly, Hitler did not archaical *Ständestaat* (a state structure alternative national system. A class functions or occupations, if it should membership and spiritual control Volk. Men must be placed in the grasp of its nature and destiny. Moreover, economic ability was ability in the field of national leadership the charismatic, spiritual leader Hitler abandoned the original transformed it into a mass movement ship ideal. This change also facilitated and the circles of high finance challenging Hitler's authority, the barons of the Ruhr and impressive speech.

The German revolutionaries blamed of their failure of nerve, but also rely on a narrow base for the 1920's he could count for support financiers and the haute bourgeoisie idea of a German revolution and

** A.H. : use the spirit of
Strasser's message, but not
the letter. The letter is in the economic.*

the German revolution might perhaps have been kept from turning into an "anti-Jewish revolution." The brothers differed from Hitler in degree, though they also accepted ideas of racial purity.

Perhaps because the Volkish ideas were so important to their program, it ended up by stressing a spiritual transformation, a recapturing of the German soul. The attempts at social reform, important though they were, succumbed to the onslaught of the Volkish ideology. Metaphysics triumphed, for all these men were revolutionaries whose weapons lacked a concrete and practicable social and economic sharpness. They turned inward instead.

The Strassers, however, were not alone in their aspirations; others, with some of whom we have already become familiar, also shared similar goals. The idea of regenerating the corporatist structure of society, of conducting a purely spiritual and internal revolution, had adherents among those involved with the workers as well as among the higher echelons of state and society. For instance, Alfred Krebs of the DHV was joined by a fellow union leader sympathetic to the Volkish viewpoint. Max Habermann believed that Germany could attain her most "natural" form of political and economic organization only if she reverted to a corporatist state. He attempted to put his ideas into practice by entering into discussion with the Catholic trade-union movement, for he knew that many of its members were sympathetic.²⁶ More immediately influential, von Papen and members of his staff at a critical moment looked favorably on corporatism. In 1933, at the very moment when the Nazi-DNVP coalition government was formed, von Papen announced his sympathy with the corporatist position.²⁷ Of course, this did not carry with it a concomitant endorsement of social change or "third way" revolutions; rather, it was an attempt to stay the power of the fanatical nationalists, to preserve the *status quo*, and possibly to bring about a return to a non-industrial past. Edgar Jung, von Papen's chief theoretician, provided the most succinct analysis of the step, when he declared that the "new" Reich must be like that of the Middle Ages, that medieval society should serve as the model for constructing the organic Volk of the future.²⁸ Of course, von Papen's and Jung's beliefs did not include the Volkish desire for the union of the individual soul with the community of the Volk, the fusion which the DHV and other Volkish thinkers hoped would be effected by such a social order. They hoped instead for the re-establishment of the powers of the aristocracy based on heredity, tradition, and culture.

In the 1920's the advocates of the spiritualist and corporatist revolution were joined by segments of the Deutschnationale Volkspartei, which, through its economic specialist, Paul Bang, advocated the

implementation of principles of corporatism. Such a course, Bang asserted, would despoil the worker in industrial *Bünde* the natural leaders, would assume the role whom would be chosen, again by a naturally most competent national leader.²⁹

These advocates of a revived corporatism sincerely wished for a revolution. That they failed indicates that they underestimated the resourcefulness of the times, which demanded a more radical, program and a simpler objectification.

But we must not succumb to the temptation, retrospectively, in the light of Hitler's rise, to see Hitler and his immediate adherents were parts of the Strasser program or even the *Bund der DNVP*. But in all instances on condition that they reflected his leadership. Correspondingly, Hitler did not permit the archaic *Ständestaat* (a state structured in accordance with alternative national system. A chamber of professions or occupations, if it should exist, would have functions only. The hierarchy he devised was based on membership and spiritual contributions. Volk. Men must be placed in the Volk according to the grasp of its nature and destiny, not because of their ability. Moreover, economic ability was not to be a factor in the field of national leadership; the charismatic, spiritual leader alone. Hitler abandoned the original *bündische* ideal, transformed it into a mass movement, and replaced it with the *Ständestaat* ideal. This change also facilitated his rise and the circles of high finance. In 1933, Hitler's authority, the Nazi leaders, the barons of the Ruhr and impressing the speech.

The German revolutionaries lost out because of their failure of nerve, but also because they relied on a narrow base for the "third way." In the 1920's he could count for support from financiers and the haute bourgeoisie. Yet the idea of a German revolution and used the

* D. H. : use the spirit of Strasser's message, but not the letter. The letter is in the economic

have been kept from turning
The brothers differed from Hitler
ideas of racial purity.

as were so important to their pro-
ritual transformation, a recaptur-
tempts at social reform, important
to the onslaught of the Volkish
for all these men were revolu-
concrete and practicable social and
ward instead.

alone in their aspirations; others,
they become familiar, also shared
the corporatist structure of
ritual and internal revolution, had
with the workers as well as among
society. For instance, Alfred Krebs
union leader sympathetic to the
en believed that Germany could
political and economic organiza-
tist state. He attempted to put
into discussion with the Catholic
that many of its members were
influential, von Papen and mem-
looked favorably on corporatism.
the Nazi-DNVP coalition gov-
nounced his sympathy with the
his did not carry with it a con-
ge or "third way" revolutions;
power of the fanatical national-
possibly to bring about a return
von Papen's chief theoretician,
of the step, when he declared
that of the Middle Ages, that
model for constructing the or-
von Papen's and Jung's beliefs
for the union of the individual
ly, the fusion which the DHV
could be effected by such a so-
re-establishment of the powers
tradition, and culture.

spiritualist and corporatist revol-
the Deutschnationale Volkspartei,
list, Paul Bang, advocated the

implementation of principles of corporatism in the economic field.
Such a course, Bang asserted, would destroy the power of the labor
unions and, in the interest of the nation, bring together the em-
ployer and the worker in industrial *Bünde*. In these, the employers, as
the natural leaders, would assume the role of *Führers*, from among
whom would be chosen, again by a natural process of selection, the
most competent national leader.²⁹

These advocates of a revived corporatism as well as the German
revolutionaries sincerely wished for a change in German society.
That they failed indicates that they made a serious tactical mistake.
They underestimated the resourcefulness of Hitler and the temper
of the times, which demanded a more concrete, even though fanat-
ical, program and a simpler objectification of the ideology.

But we must not succumb to the temptation of judging these men
retrospectively, in the light of Hitler's later triumph. Moreover,
Hitler and his immediate adherents were not without sympathy for
parts of the Strasser program or even the scheme advocated by Paul
Bang of the DNVP. But in all instances Hitler accepted them only
on condition that they reflected his leadership-oriented ideology.
Correspondingly, Hitler did not permit the development of a hier-
archical *Ständestaat* (a state structured according to estates) as an
alternative national system. A chamber organized according to pro-
fessions or occupations, if it should exist at all, would have economic
functions only. The hierarchy he devised was to be based on party
membership and spiritual contributions to the betterment of the
Volk. Men must be placed in the Volk structure according to their
grasp of its nature and destiny, not because of their professions.³⁰
Moreover, economic ability was not to be equated with an equal
ability in the field of national leadership; that was to be reserved for
the charismatic, spiritual leader alone. This was the reason why
Hitler abandoned the original *bündisch* course of the party and
transformed it into a mass movement with a freewheeling leader-
ship ideal. This change also facilitated his alliance with the bourgeois
and the circles of high finance. In 1929, while Strasser was chal-
lenging Hitler's authority, the Nazi leader was wooing the steel
barons of the Ruhr and impressing them with a very "sensible"
speech.

The German revolutionaries lost out to Hitler not only because
of their failure of nerve, but also because Hitler no longer needed to
rely on a narrow base for the "third way" alternative. By the late
1920's he could count for support from the masses on up to the
financiers and the haute bourgeoisie. Yet Hitler also embraced the
idea of a German revolution and used the "third way" as well. But

spirit of
age, but not
other is in the economy

now what had been implicit among all the "German socialists" became explicit. Here one could have one's cake and eat it too: the revolution so many Germans desired, but one which would not disturb social or economic relationships. A spiritual revolution could be supported by all classes without fear and trembling. Indeed, by stressing the spiritual over the economic and social realities, this was the ideal revolution for those who might have suffered under a traditional revolutionary upsurge.

Hitler took this opportunity, toward which all of Volkish history had led, and exploited it. Indeed, he drove it to its logical conclusion, for he gave it a concrete direction. Whereas the Strassers and Krebs only confused people with their halfway economic programs, and van den Bruck was vague about the "idea" Germany must attain, Hitler changed all this. The German revolution became the anti-Jewish revolution. The mass enthusiasm which over half a century of Volkish agitation had made explosive, and which, if not resolved, could become dangerous to its own creators, was shifted away from the real social and economic grievances and channeled into anti-Semitism. The Jew was made to bear the brunt and, although this too had been standard in the Volkish movement, Hitler made it stick.

Here then was the source of Hitler's success: his ability to transform the revolutionary longings and grievances of a large sector of the populace into an anti-Jewish revolution. Not the big capitalist or the economic middleman, but the Jew, was made the incarnation of the enemy. In his deft and ingenious distinction between Jewish and German capitalism, Hitler saved the capitalist structure of Germany from sure ruin and, in effect, preserved it. Meanwhile, the Jews were eliminated as an economic force, leaving behind their investments, inventories, and wealth. In the process they also shifted the guilt from the true source of Germany's crisis: the malfunctioning of the German capitalist structure, the lost war, and the frustrations of the past century. This is not to assert that Hitler's anti-Semitism was simply an opportunist device for attaining and retaining power. On the contrary, it was precisely because it was a sincerely held belief whose dynamism succeeded in holding the nation spellbound that Hitler could steer his party to victory.

The German revolution was that "idealism of deeds" which Volkish thought had always advocated. To be sure, there were similar ideas in other nations. In Belgium, for example, the fascist Rexists maintained that "every revolution has a mystical character."³¹ But only in Germany had Volkish thought prepared a specific content for this mysticism which enabled Hitler to dramatize and personalize

his revolution. The slogan "T up the whole ideology which trality of the Jew to this ideal to power."

+

among all the "German socialists" be-
have one's cake and eat it too: the
desired, but one which would not
relationships. A spiritual revolution
comes without fear and trembling. In-
stead of the economic and social realities,
for those who might have suffered
by upsurge.

toward which all of Volkish history
led, he drove it to its logical conclu-
sion. Whereas the Strassers and
with their halfway economic programs,
about the "idea" Germany must attain,
German revolution became the anti-
enthusiasm which over half a cen-
tury had made explosive, and which, if not re-
sponsible to its own creators, was shifted
to economic grievances and channeled
was made to bear the brunt and, al-
ready in the Volkish movement, Hitler

Hitler's success: his ability to trans-
fer the grievances of a large sector of
the revolution. Not the big capitalist
but the Jew, was made the incarnation
of the ingenious distinction between Jewish
and the capitalist structure of Ger-
many. ~~He preserved it.~~ Meanwhile, the
economic force, leaving behind their in-
fluence. In the process they also shifted the
Germany's crisis: the malfunctioning
economy, the lost war, and the frustrations
to assert that Hitler's anti-Semitism
was for attaining and retaining power.
because it was a sincerely held be-
lief in holding the nation spellbound
to victory.

that "idealism of deeds" which Volk-
ism had. To be sure, there were similar
ideas, for example, the fascist Rexists
movement has a mystical character."³¹ But
Hitler prepared a specific content
and Hitler to dramatize and personalize

his revolution. The slogan "The Jews are our misfortune" conjured
up the whole ideology which has been our concern, and the cen-
trality of the Jew to this ideology prepared the way for Hitler's rise
to power.

CHAPTER 17

The Anti-Jewish Revolution

IN THE HANDS of Adolf Hitler the German revolution was transformed into an anti-Jewish revolution. A basic ingredient of the Volkish ideology had ripened to a point where it could be plucked by the Nazis to be successfully assimilated into their own political maneuverings and used to increase their popular appeal.

With the appearance of Hitler on the political scene, followed as it was by a successful dissemination of a whole political program, the theme of anti-Semitism acquired a new dimension. Although anti-Semitism had flourished for more than fifty years, Hitler transformed it into a political vehicle, and the soundness of his move was attested by its favorable reception by the public. Now not only were Volkish leaders lecturing on the incompatible spiritual qualities of the two peoples, and theologians of race stressing the anthropological differences, but a political leader possessing a charismatic appeal was demanding that something be done about it, that, indeed, only if the Jews were eradicated could Germany regain her lost glory and achieve greatness in the future. What was the ideological store Hitler drew upon? Who were his immediate teachers and whom did he inspire to follow in his footsteps in a society which was already thoroughly drenched with the anti-Semitic stereotype? It is to these questions we must now turn by directing ourselves to the mind of Hitler, his immediate antecedents, and his disciples.

Many historians, seeking the source of Hitler's anti-Jewish obsession, have turned to the writings of the "classical" anti-Semites or to the ideologies of such people as Guido von List and Lanz von Liebenfels, both from Vienna. But to little avail. First of all, there is no evidence that Hitler read all the literature on the subject of the Volk and the Jews. It is more likely that he would listen to and be influenced by people who carried the message directly across

THE ANTI-JEW

the land and preached it at assembly centers. And secondly, even if he subject, we do not know which read Lanz von Liebenfels' *Ostara, Blond People*), a notoriously racist. Therefore it seems best to give full as to the development of his fanaticism whatever particular sources Hitler had in his youth, much more important than them from the whole range of the subject. An interesting point is how he himself was already widespread and

Hitler traced his anti-Semitism to the peasant Jewry. Early in his life, as he grew up in the metropolis of Vienna, he experienced the horrible fright induced by the strange presence of such Jews. He reacted to these strange beings who were crisscrossing the city multiply, and to dominate, display their superiority or unconsciously, the peasant stereotype of the ghetto Jew as a thought. Here was the "stranger" in a Jewish world conspiracy, the Jew related into an absence of "idealistic" people of culture, the soil was for and lustfulness took the part of truth.

This view of the Jews became a part of Vienna itself. He loathed the city, was most civilized excited his great point that his anti-urbanism became a part of this took the usual Volkish forms of peasant, but it focused on the Jewish

These facets of his thought existed in his war experience and what followed was a particular dynamic. The Jews were Communists as he thought them to be. A Jew as he recalled it in *Mein Kampf* became the Volkish orator only after the war he had contacts with Volkish in bitter poverty, brought him to a point where he could feel himself a member of an aristocratic precepts of nationalistic flaphouse bunk.⁵

* It is interesting
of inferiority

ish Revolution

the German revolution was trans-
volution. A basic ingredient of the
to a point where it could be plucked
assimilated into their own political
use their popular appeal.

on the political scene, followed as it
on of a whole political program, the
ed a new dimension. Although anti-
more than fifty years, Hitler trans-
and the soundness of his move was
on by the public. Now not only were
the incompatible spiritual qualities of
of race stressing the anthropological
possessing a charismatic appeal was
one about it, that, indeed, only if the
Germany regain her lost glory and
What was the ideological store Hitler
mediate teachers and whom did he
ps in a society which was already
anti-Semitic stereotype? It is to these
directing ourselves to the mind of
s, and his disciples.

source of Hitler's anti-Jewish ob-
sings of the "classical" anti-Semites
ople as Guido von List and Lanz
ana. But to little avail. First of all,
read all the literature on the subject
more likely that he would listen to
o carried the message directly across

the land and preached it at assemblies in Vienna, Linz, and other centers. And secondly, even if he did read books and journals on the subject, we do not know which ones. Thus, while he might have read Lanz von Liebenfels' *Ostara, Zeitschrift für Blonde (Journal for Blond People)*, a notoriously racist journal, we really have no proof.¹ Therefore it seems best to give full weight to Hitler's own testimony as to the development of his fanatical hatred of the Jews. For from whatever particular sources Hitler may have imbibed his ideas in his youth, much more important is the fact that he could have gotten them from the whole range of the Volkish movement. The interesting point is how he himself considered a system of thought which was already widespread and what he eventually made of it.

Hitler traced his anti-Semitism to an encounter with East European Jewry. Early in his life, as he traveled from the sheltered town of Linz to the metropolis of Vienna, he experienced, he claims, a horrible fright induced by the strange, forbidding dress and appearance of such Jews. He reacted with a feeling of horror to these strange beings who were crisscrossing the land to settle down, to multiply, and to dominate, displacing the genuine Germans.² Consciously or unconsciously, the pages of *Mein Kampf* summarize the stereotype of the ghetto Jew as this had grown up in Volkish thought. Here was the "strangeness" which proved the existence of a Jewish world conspiracy, the lack of morality which was translated into an absence of "idealistic feeling." The Jews were not a people of culture, the soil was for them a mere object of exploitation, and lustfulness took the part of true and rooted beliefs.³

This view of the Jews became bound up with Hitler's hatred of Vienna itself. He loathed the city, and precisely that part of it which was most civilized excited his greatest loathing. No doubt it is at this point that his anti-urbanism became basic to his attitude toward life.⁴ This took the usual Volkish forms, including the glorification of the peasant, but it focused on the Jewish stereotype.

These facets of his thought existed before the war, but it was the war experience and what followed in Munich which gave them their particular dynamic. The Jews who dominated the Räterepublik, Communists as he thought them to be, reinforced the image of the Jew as he recalled it in *Mein Kampf* from his Viennese days. Hitler became the Volkish orator only after the war, but even before the war he had contacts with Volkish groups. His life in Vienna, lived in bitter poverty, brought him these contacts. Through them he could feel himself a member of an elite, in tune with what he called the "aristocratic precepts of nature," even while sleeping in his flophouse bunk.⁵

* It intensified his feeling
of inferiority.

But Hitler's political astuteness also played an important role. He recognized the tactical value of anti-Semitic agitation. Later, when he himself was on the way to fulfilling his ambitions, he remembered the part that anti-Semitism had played in the successful career of the Viennese Lord Mayor Karl Lueger, and wrote of him, in *Mein Kampf*, as the "most powerful mayor of all time." But among all these factors none would seem to be a strong enough stimulus to have driven him to use anti-Semitism as the vehicle to political power. We may instead say that his hatred of the Jews was a deep emotional commitment and that its moral ingredient gave the political program just the right amount of respectability. It was not a mere tactic.

When Hitler transferred his interest to Munich and there became engaged in the intellectual life of the down-and-outers, his anti-Semitism also took an upward turn. In his early days of dabbling in politics, he came under the influence of Dietrich Eckart and remained close to him until Eckart's death in 1923. This important figure in the Volkish movement played the key role in crystallizing Hitler's political attitudes. At the time Hitler met him, Eckart was the publisher of *Auf Gut Deutsch*, a magazine which attracted the leading writers of the Volkish movement. Among the contributors whom Hitler is certain to have read were such men as Theodor Fritsch, Alfred Rosenberg, Ellegard Ellerbeck, the poet of the Germanic sun religion, and Ernst Wachler, who had revived the Germanic open-air theater. On the whole the journal was marked by the overbearing presence of anti-Semitic articles, many of them composed by Eckart himself, while others were reprinted from Lehmann's newspaper *Deutschlands Erneuerung*.

Eckart was very influential in the development of the anti-Semitic dynamic within the ranks of the young Workers' party. He reinforced Hitler's abhorrence of Jews as a mysterious, strange, and conspiring people, supplementing Hitler's ideas in some areas, while creating a more fanatical foundation for their development in others. While Hitler had already shared some of Eckart's beliefs, most of them were as yet only vague, unformulated convictions. Eckart plumbed deeper and connected the removal of the Jewish menace with the resuscitation of the Volk. He was to make Hitler view the problem as he himself viewed it: it transcended all others in importance, and its solution would bring to an end the Volk's period of trial. Or, as he stated it: "The Jewish question is the chief problem of humanity, in which, indeed, every one of its other problems is contained. Nothing on earth could remain darkened if one could throw light on the secret of [the Jews]."⁶ And in what way did the Jews

* I gave him the one foundation he was without — a profound belief in the uniqueness of his own —

achieve their domination of manish ideas on this question: by deby injecting the cold, materialistions of man, and by conspiring world.⁷

Eckart took himself seriously steady source of income (except a Volkish message in which the figure), Eckart devoted himself money for *Auf Gut Deutsch*, T with the masses, and Eckart rescommuters on crowded trains in he tended to push, and perhaps issues.⁸

Such then was the man and p when he joined the small body o tional Socialist party. The two the avid and quickly learning dis indispensable in devising the tact to gain control over the embryoi ing that historians have failed contribution to the viability o course, an explanation: historia ginal, too much of a crank. But, the Volkish movement he was Langbehn, or Ludwig Scheman trated and obsessed, and lived s they believed to be the truth. I that he found a disciple capable the faith of his master. Then, t Rosenberg, who in his limited party's anti-Semitic momentum logy.

That Hitler had learned well party's first great internal crisis party was confronted with a di tionalism versus Gottfried Feder ting an end to all charging of i placed? Hitler adroitly avoided clever tactic that he followed group, he could declare for a C troy the bourgeoisie or capitalis the issue of the Jews and launc

→ ideas rather assimilate those cultivated than

played an important role. He
 Semitic agitation. Later, when he
 his ambitions, he remembered
 yed in the successful career of
 ger, and wrote of him, in *Mein*
 "or of all time." But among all
 be a strong enough stimulus to
 ism as the vehicle to political
 hatred of the Jews was a deep
 moral ingredient gave the politi-
 of respectability. It was not a

erest to Munich and there be-
 life of the down-and-outers,
 ward turn. In his early days of
 der the influence of Dietrich
 until Eckart's death in 1923. This
 movement played the key role in
 ties. At the time Hitler met him,
Deutsch, a magazine which at-
 Volkish movement. Among the
 in to have read were such men
 erg, Ellegard Ellerbeck, the poet
 Ernst Wachler, who had revived
 in the whole the journal was
 re of anti-Semitic articles, many
 elf, while others were reprinted
lands Erneuerung.

the development of the anti-
 of the young Workers' party. He
ews as a mysterious, strange, and
Hitler's ideas in some areas, while
for their development in others.
 me of Eckart's beliefs, most of
 formulated convictions. Eckart
 removal of the Jewish menace
 He was to make Hitler view the
 transcended all others in impor-
 to an end the Volk's period of
question is the chief problem of
one of its other problems is con-
in darkened if one could throw
 And in what way did the Jews

me foundation
 a profound
 on of his own -

achieve their domination of mankind? Eckart repeated all the Volk-
 ish ideas on this question: by depriving mankind of its sentient soul,
 by injecting the cold, materialistic serum of Judaism into the institu-
 tions of man, and by conspiring to assume power over the Gentile
 world.⁷

Eckart took himself seriously, fanatically so. Lacking any other
 steady source of income (except for his adaptation of *Peer Gynt* to
 a Volkish message in which the peasant hero portrayed a Faustian
 figure), Eckart devoted himself fully to distributing and collecting
 money for *Auf Gut Deutsch*. The publication had not been popular
 with the masses, and Eckart resorted to distributing it personally to
commuters on crowded trains in Munich. It was especially here that
he tended to push, and perhaps with reason, the anti-Semitic special
issues.⁸

Such then was the man and party member who befriended Hitler
 when he joined the small body of men who then constituted the Na-
 tional Socialist party. The two formed a team in which Hitler was
 the avid and quickly learning disciple. Eckart's tutelage proved to be
 indispensable in devising the tactics which the Führer later employed
 to gain control over the embryonic party. Thus it is indeed surpris-
 ing that historians have failed to give Eckart due credit for his
 contribution to the viability of National Socialism. There is, of
 course, an explanation: historians have regarded him as too margi-
 nal, too much of a crank. But, and again we must reiterate this, in
 the Volkish movement he was no more marginal than Lagarde,
 Langbehn, or Ludwig Schemann, all of whom were equally frus-
 trated and obsessed, and lived solely for the dissemination of what
 they believed to be the truth. Eckart was even more successful in
 that he found a disciple capable and ruthless enough to implement
 the faith of his master. Then, too, he introduced Hitler to Alfred
 Rosenberg, who in his limited and pedantic way continued the
 party's anti-Semitic momentum as an indispensable part of the ideo-
 logy.

That Hitler had learned well from Eckart was shown during the
 party's first great internal crisis. In 1921, the six-thousand-member
 party was confronted with a division of emphasis: the issue was na-
 tionalism versus Gottfried Feder's socialism, which consisted in put-
 ting an end to all charging of interest. Where was the stress to be
 placed? Hitler adroitly avoided coming to grips with the problem, a
 clever tactic that he followed until, having silenced the Strasser
 group, he could declare for a German nationalism that did not des-
 troy the bourgeoisie or capitalist institutions. Instead, he brought up
 the issue of the Jews and launched into a diatribe against their reli-

→ ideas rather than having to
 assimilate the ideas of people more
 cultivated than himself

gion, race, and culture that was climaxed by the demand that force be used to counter the Jewish threat. There was no disagreement within the party: rather, the members united behind him and the ~~separative tendencies were buried for the time being in the enthusiasm for the anti-Jewish revolution.~~ With this issue, Hitler had found the basis for uniting, emotionally and ideologically, the small and fanatical party, an issue which transcended the insoluble problem of nationalism versus socialism. With this issue, Hitler emerged victorious as party leader on July 29, 1921.⁹

The anti-Semitism embraced by Hitler was not just an opportunistic device, however, but a deeply felt conviction strengthened by a personal commitment to the whole Volkish outlook. And even though it was part of a spiritual disposition, an attitude toward life that was founded on belief in an irrational cosmology, life forces, and nature mysticism (and consequently could have been derided as the outlook of a mentally deranged person), it was real nonetheless. That these notions were real enough to have an impact on the public only indicates that the populace was relatively familiar with them, that they had existed prior to the advent of Hitler. Indeed, Hitler did not invent them; he was the direct heir of the Volkish movement. It was his strength to have grasped that the mass of Germans was highly receptive to the peculiarly Volkish anti-Semitic rationalizations of the nation's problems. Moreover, it is in Hitler's ability to rise above the sectarianism that had weakened the Volkish appeal that we must search for the uniqueness of the Nazi continuation of the traditional Volkish ideology. Hitler was able to translate the Volkish beliefs into a mass movement because he combined them with a pragmatic approach to politics. As he wrote in *Mein Kampf*: "A world view can be right a thousand times, but it will be without significance for the life of the Volk if it does not combine with the goals of a fighting movement, a political party."¹⁰ For Hitler all belief became political belief, but this did not abolish the ideology itself. His criticisms of the Volkish movement do not touch the basic presuppositions, but instead concentrate upon their ineffectiveness: he condemns the earlier ideologues because they were "mere wandering scholars"¹¹ or because they escaped into the metaphysical world of pure feeling.

The last accusation relates, once more, to Hitler's desire to make the ideology into a living reality. This meant, for him, being as clear as possible: "To be German means to have clarity."¹² How proud he is in *Mein Kampf* for boiling the ideology down to twenty-five points! He understood that one needed a clear objectification of ideas in order to activate a mass movement. In addition, one needed dis-

cipline and organization. The elements of organization is no seeking pragmatist. For one means to the end of transition which he believed to be an combination of Volkish attitude person of a consummate person a dynamism and a relevance could equal. The focus upon ful gave clarity to the ideal which carried Hitler's mass Semitism had always been the most conspicuous parts. and the anti-Jewish revolutionary rise to power.

What had served to unite national level. The spiritual Nazi leadership brought to the mass of German voters, and bankers. From the turning point of the party right up revolution was transformed as a rallying point which, in too negative-sounding Volk with a positive framework. ture, and cultural identity, to be the defenders of German of the status quo ante. Will and a will!"¹³ Hitler increasingly directed the revolution.

Although we have stressed Nazi appeal as dating from until later that the theme of For some time before the first National Socialists still dress egalitarian goals. In an attempt to as Mussolini had done, Hitler "anti-capitalist longings" of is no doubt that he endorses members that the "bourgeois the betrayal of the nation hunger and materialism for. However, this attitude beca

* D. T. A had taught him the indispensable recognition of politics — Hatred creates more unity in a party than love

Special contribution

F GERMAN IDEOLOGY

was climaxed by the demand that force be used. There was no disagreement among members united behind him and the need for the time being in the revolution. With this issue, Hitler had emotionally and ideologically, the small which transcended the insoluble problem. With this issue, Hitler emerged July 29, 1921.⁹

Hitler was not just an opportunist; deeply felt conviction strengthened by his whole Volkish outlook. And even racial disposition, an attitude toward life in an irrational cosmology, life forces, consequently could have been derided as (a misguided person), it was real nonetheless. enough to have an impact on the public. The place was relatively familiar with them, to the advent of Hitler. Indeed, Hitler, the direct heir of the Volkish movement, grasped that the mass of Germans was truly Volkish anti-Semitic rationalizations. Moreover, it is in Hitler's ability to rise had weakened the Volkish appeal that the essence of the Nazi continuation of the Hitler was able to translate the Volkish at because he combined them with the ideas. As he wrote in *Mein Kampf*: "A thousand times, but it will be without the Volk if it does not combine with the idea, a political party."¹⁰ For Hitler all but this did not abolish the ideology of the Volkish movement do not touch the basic concentrate upon their ineffectiveness: slogans because they were "mere words" they escaped into the metaphysical

once more, to Hitler's desire to make it. This meant, for him, being as clear means to have clarity."¹² How proud he was to lay the ideology down to twenty-five needed a clear objectification of ideas movement. In addition, one needed dis-

at him the indifference
details - He tried
it in a party then

THE ANTI-JEWISH REVOLUTION

299

cipline and organization. That Hitler was vitally interested in problems of organization is no argument that he was a mere power-seeking pragmatist. For organization, as well as propaganda, was a means to the end of translating into reality that Volkish thought which he believed to be an "inner necessity" of life. It was the combination of Volkish attitudes and a preoccupation with means in the person of a consummate politician that gave the National Socialists a dynamism and a relevance which none of the rival Volkish groups could equal. The focus upon the Jew, besides being politically useful, gave clarity to the ideology. This was precisely the combination which carried Hitler's mass movement forward to victory. Anti-Semitism had always been part of the Volkish attitude, and one of the most conspicuous parts. It was the combination of organization and the anti-Jewish revolution which proved so effective in Hitler's rise to power.

What had served to unite the party did similar service on the national level. The spiritual activism and fanatical dedication which the Nazi leadership brought to the theme of anti-Semitism appealed to the mass of German voters, from the unemployed to the industrialists and bankers. From the time Hitler made anti-Semitism the focal point of the party right up to his assumption of power, the German revolution was transformed into the anti-Jewish revolution. It served as a rallying point which, in its national application, provided the all too negative-sounding Volkish anti-capitalism and anti-Marxism with a positive framework. Grounded in the mysteries of race, nature, and cultural identity, the anti-Jewish revolutionaries claimed to be the defenders of Germanic creativity and not just mere preservers of the status quo ante. With the slogan "What is required is instinct and a will!"¹³ Hitler increasingly achieved greater popularity as he directed the revolution.

Although we have stressed the overtly anti-Semitic aspects of the Nazi appeal as dating from the inter-party dispute of 1921, it was not until later that the theme emerged shorn of all socialist pretensions. For some time before the final victory of 1933, the program of the National Socialists still dressed up its anti-Semitism in national socialist goals. In an attempt to direct his appeal to the working masses, as Mussolini had done, Hitler supported a platform that included the "anti-capitalist longings" of Gottfried Feder's "socialism." And there is no doubt that he endorsed the "leftist" belief among the party members that the "bourgeoisie were finished" and that he raged at the betrayal of the nation by the middle class, indicting its money hunger and materialism for destroying the heroic will of the Volk.¹⁴ However, this attitude became increasingly troublesome. The lead-

ership of the party was not at all united on the appropriateness of the anti-capitalist image the party had created for itself. Hitler gradually realized that he, like the other Volkish leaders, could expect only scant support from the industrial and class-conscious workers, for their long-time socialist tradition directed them elsewhere. There was nothing left but to ameliorate the anti-capitalist direction and retrench along the line of anti-Semitism. Without funds, which had to come from industrial, financial, and individual bourgeois concerns, there would be no movement, there would be no favorable election returns, there would be no German transformation, socialist or otherwise. In the end, Hitler opted for legitimacy, for the bourgeoisie and against the pernicious forces of the Jewish hydra. With this shift, the overtly anti-bourgeois emphasis slowly subsided and at best remained ambivalent.

Whereas some Jewish observers during this period attributed the rise of the National Socialist party to despair over the economic situation, to bitterness, pessimism, and inherent longings of a growing section of the population,¹⁵ one paper, representing the views of the Jewish university fraternities, disagreed. In its analysis it astutely recognized the essence of the anti-Marxist and anti-capitalist front. It is true, the paper acknowledged, that the Nazis were sincerely fighting Marxism and attacking profit-hungry capitalism, but they also identified both evils with the Jews. Reducing the Nazi program to its bare essentials, the paper asserted: "We, the Jews, are the enemies!"¹⁶ The student paper was in a good position to know. Exposed as they were to constant harassment by their Gentile, German, self-styled Aryan classmates, the Jewish students were quicker than their elders to perceive the basis of Hitler's appeal among German youth. And they were correct. Youth viewed his call for the purification of all alien ingredients as its own idealistic task and readily made all necessary sacrifices in the name of it.¹⁷

The fears of the fraternity paper were borne out. Hitler was true to his promise not to relent on the anti-Semitic diatribes. They grew more extreme and became central to his program. This has been regarded as proving the psychopathic nature of the Nazi movement—not only for Hitler himself but for his followers as well. Thus a man like Julius Streicher was given free reign to express his sexual neuroses and frustrations through his obsession with the Jews. And we see still others who, acting out their primitive feelings of hate, gave in to the social urge and directed them at the Jews.¹⁸ Of course, deep psychological disorders did underlie much of the manifestation of loyalty to the party. These disorders were real and pernicious enough but by themselves they do not explain the excesses of the

party and the implementation of the appeal of Nazism may well be driven by providing the appeal of the Jews,¹⁹ this is by no means success. The psychological vision can provide clues in this point of view that all of men's plans—but we are misled by a primary answer, for it tends to be an aberration that resolved a situation more, it would maintain that it is ated by redirecting the psychological people. But there is a greater interpretation: it denies the ends it as a transitory phenomenon which could have been Jews not existed.

It should be apparent by now that the approach to the recent historical, social, and ideological changes of the Volkish movement, however many of the German people might be, is a place where the world and man's place in the world are the literary works exhibited by the painters and the existence of anti-Semitism was rather, it permeated all national ideology cannot be viewed as religion whose roots, like the entered man's subconscious, whole new way of life. In the self, readily acceptable and the sanctity of the Volkish purpose of life which had permeated the scene.

That the appeal of anti-Semitism depend on psychopathy for that the Jew was pictured. A vivid Jew might be sufficient disturbed person, this "individual" desired end in a political ideal arouse any feelings, pro or con, abstracted, depersonalized. It is

all united on the appropriateness of the had created for itself. Hitler gradually or Volkish leaders, could expect only trial and class-conscious workers, for tion directed them elsewhere. There forate the anti-capitalist direction and i-Semitism. Without funds, which had ncial, and individual bourgeois con- vement, there would be no favorable be no German transformation, socialist er opted for legitimacy, for the bour- ous forces of the Jewish hydra. With urgeois emphasis slowly subsided and

ervers during this period attributed the arty to despair over the economic sin, and inherent longings of a growing ie paper, representing the views of the , disagreed. In its analysis it astutely anti-Marxist and anti-capitalist front. edged, that the Nazis were sincerely ng profit-hungry capitalism, but they the Jews. Reducing the Nazi program er asserted: "We, the Jews, are the r was in a good position to know. Exat harassment by their Gentile, Ger- ates, the Jewish students were quicker : the basis of Hitler's appeal among e correct. Youth viewed his call for the sidents as its own idealistic task and ifices in the name of it.¹⁷

paper were borne out. Hitler was true i the anti-Semitic diatribes. They grew rtral to his program. This has been re- pathic nature of the Nazi movement— t for his followers as well. Thus a man ven free reign to express his sexual ough his obsession with the Jews. And g out their primitive feelings of hate, directed them at the Jews.¹⁸ Of course, lid underlie much of the manifestation se disorders were real and pernicious ey do not explain the excesses of the

party and the implementation of the anti-Jewish programs. Though the appeal of Nazism may well have been due to its release of primitive drives by providing them satisfaction in institutionalized hatred of the Jews,¹⁹ this is by no means the primary reason for the party's success. The psychological view of the party's dynamic anti-Semitism can provide clues in individual cases—or in all cases from the point of view that all of men's actions are open to psychological explanation—but we are misled if we regard it as the sole or even the primary answer, for it tends to view National Socialism as a mere aberration that resolved a specific, temporary crisis. And what is more, it would maintain that anti-Semitism could have been eliminated by redirecting the psychic drives of Germany's maladjusted people. But there is a greater failing inherent in the psychological interpretation: it denies the endemic nature of anti-Semitism and regards it as a transitory phenomenon fulfilling certain psychological needs which could have been gratified by any other minority had the Jews not existed.

It should be apparent by now that we contest the validity of this approach to the recent history of Germany. It ignores the historical, social, and ideological character of anti-Semitism, which, as part of the Volkish movement, had been institutionalized and provided many of the German people with a particular framework for viewing the world and man's place in it. The immense and continuing popularity of the literary works we have analyzed, the trends of thought exhibited by the painters and youth, all attest to the fact that the existence of anti-Semitism was not dependent upon any single crisis; rather, it permeated all national questions. Consequently, the Volkish ideology cannot be viewed as a transient phenomenon; it was a new religion whose roots, like those of all religions and faiths, not only entered man's subconscious but penetrated deeper and became a whole new way of life. In the end, these feelings became tradition itself, readily acceptable and constituting weighty evidence for the sanctity of the Volkish purpose. Hitler only promised to fulfill a concept of life which had permeated much of the nation before he ever entered the scene.

That the appeal of anti-Semitism was more widespread and did not depend on psychopathy for its acceptance can be seen in the way that the Jew was pictured. Whereas the image of the particular, individual Jew might be sufficient to satisfy the frustrations of a mentally disturbed person, this "individualization" would fail to achieve the desired end in a political ideology. For the image of the Jew to arouse any feelings, pro or con, he had to be generalized, abstracted, depersonalized. It is always possible for the personal, in-

dividual case to contradict a general assertion by providing living, concrete proof to the contrary. For the Jews to become the foils of a mass movement, they had to be converted into objectified symbols so as to become other than human beings. Moreover, mass agitation demanded simplicity and consistency and consequently did not readily countenance subtle distinctions which might have excluded some Jews from condemnation. Hitler followed the path of his Volkish predecessors when he presented the Jewish evil not in its flesh-and-blood aspects but as an abstracted stereotype.

The growing abstraction of the Jew reflected the growing process of his depersonalization. Once the Jew had been denied a soul and genuine emotions, once his religion had been categorized as a fossil without ethical content, he was well on the way to being dehumanized. And who could feel any sorrow for or commiserate with an entity that had lost all human dimensions? Once a population had accepted this depiction of the Jew, it was possible to regard him as a cipher, as a figure that aroused no human compassion—only the large numbers of the martyred dead would stagger the imagination.

Hitler was greatly assisted in perpetuating this view of the Jews by the reapplication of the racial theories. Hitler himself used such theories to further the abstraction of the "Jew" and to serve as a basis for denying him his individuality. As early as 1919 he denied that anti-Semitism could be based upon one's feelings toward the individual Jew, unfavorable though this was bound to be. Instead, the evils for which the Jew stood were a "fact" of his race.²⁰ Hermann Rauschning has recalled that for Hitler "the Jew was a principle."²¹ We have seen how at the turn of the century Theodor Fritsch made the identical distinction between the individual Jew and "the Jew" as an abstraction.²² Here, once more, the Volkish tradition had prepared the way for a stereotype which transcended any concrete contact Jew and Gentile might have between them.

Purporting to be scientifically sound, racial theories built on the Volkish heritage. In this manner they had two ostensible virtues: they were "scientific" (and therefore respectable) as well as traditional. Through these ideas of race, the ideology of anti-Semitism was brought closer to earth, made more concrete, while the Jewish stereotype was given a more explicit objectification. We must again note here that though they pretended to be scientific, in the end these theories embraced all those features which had emerged from the romantic preoccupation with the German soul.

During the rise of Hitler, Hans F. K. Günther²³ became the leading proponent of the doctrine of race (though after the Second

World War he was "de-Nazified").
ful and before Hitler's assumption of the University of Jena, where the s welcome. Concerned with the future he made his literary debut with the *Teufel* (*The Knight, Death, and the Devil*). This book was followed by the famous *Volkes* (*Racial Science of the German People*) reprinted fifteen times prior to 1933. *Volkes* showed pretensions to erudite marshaling of evidence, and the care in spite of these trappings of objectivity in both works made generalizations a thing Germanic ideology.

Like the Volkish racial theorists, Günther tended that the racial type objectified "man's inner drives and nature."²⁴ Thus his considerations to metaphysical categories. The racial scheme demanded a hierarchy: the lowly, the imperfect, the less pure types. He placed the Jew at the bottom of racial development. They were the low, the most creative. The low enough, were occupied by the Jews, Nordics. Their outward appearance, bent shoulders, a tendency to obesity, was the very opposite of the ideal. The physical stereotype was supplied and purported to be typical Jewish gesture documenting the Jewish preoccupation and economic gain.²⁵

The applicability and popularity of the theory were enhanced by the controversy with rival racial theorists. In the early thirties, established and recognized, entered into the list of valid racial criteria with *Die nordische Seele* (*The Nordic Soul*) (1933) once was not essential, though desirable personality, and with Siegfried Passa *Landeskundliches und ethnologisches Problem* (*Land and Ethnological Problem*) (1934).

a general assertion by providing living, trary. For the Jews to become the foils of ed to be converted into objectified symbols rel human beings. Moreover, mass agitation si consistency and consequently did not n distinctions which might have excluded va nation. Hitler followed the path of his it he presented the Jewish evil not in its pi as an abstracted stereotype.

of the Jew reflected the growing process li nce the Jew had been denied a soul and ra religion had been categorized as a fossil th was well on the way to being dehuman- re any sorrow for or commiserate with an n dimensions? Once a population had ac- e Jew, it was possible to regard him as a ous no human compassion—only the ty red dead would stagger the imagina-

ed in perpetuating this view of the Jews ra racial theories. Hitler himself used such fi ction of the "Jew" and to serve as a basis hu lity. As early as 1919 he denied that ed upon one's feelings toward the indi- ugh this was bound to be. Instead, the id were a "fact" of his race.²⁰ Hermann for Hitler "the Jew was a principle."²¹ turn of the century Theodor Fritsch n between the individual Jew and "the lere, once more, the Volkish tradition stereotype which transcended any com- might have between them.

ally sound, racial theories built on the inner they had two ostensible virtues: therefore respectable) as well as tradi- of race, the ideology of anti-Semitism made more concrete, while the Jewish explicit objectification. We must again pretended to be scientific, in the end hose features which had emerged from rich the German soul.

Hans F. K. Günther²² became the lead- ine of race (though after the Second

World War he was "de-Nazified"). His books were greatly success- ful and before Hitler's assumption of power he was given a chair at the University of Jena, where the students gave him a tumultuous welcome. Concerned with the future well-being of the Volk, Gün- ther made his literary debut with the publication of *Ritter, Tod und* Teufel (*The Knight, Death, and the Devil*) (1921), in which he pro- claimed the advent of the heroic saviour of the German nation. This book was followed by the famous *Rassenkunde des deutschen* Volkes (*Racial Science of the German People*) (1922), which was reprinted fifteen times prior to 1933, and by *Rassenkunde des jüdi-* schen Volkes (*Racial Science of the Jewish People*) (1930). Both works showed pretensions to erudition, in the copious footnotes, the marshaling of evidence, and the careful phrasing of the text. But in spite of these trappings of objectivity, the racial images portrayed in both works made generalizations along the lines set by the prevail- ing Germanic ideology.

Like the Volkish racial theorists preceding him, Günther con- tended that the racial type objectifies the physical representation of man's inner drives and nature.²⁴ Thus he moved from anthropological considerations to metaphysical categories of racial beauty and soul. The racial scheme demanded a hierarchy of perfect types. Günther wisely recognized that no pure types existed: there were only less imperfect, less impure types. He placed the Aryans at the pinnacle of racial development. They were the most pure, the most beauti- ful, and the most creative. The lowest echelons, characteristically enough, were occupied by the Jews, who differed sharply from the Nordics. Their outward appearance, represented by slouched bodies, bent shoulders, a tendency to obesity, and thick, lustfully sensual lips, was the very opposite of the slender and statuesque German. The physical stereotype was supplemented by a catalogue of what purported to be typical Jewish gestures and traits for the purpose of documenting the Jewish preoccupation with materialism, power, and economic gain.²⁵

The applicability and popularity of these racial theories was fur- ther enhanced by the controversy that developed between three rival racial theorists. In the early thirties, Günther, already well es- tablished and recognized, entered into an argument as to what con- stituted valid racial criteria with L. F. Clauss, whose book *Die* nordische Seele (*The Nordic Soul*) (1930) held that outward appear- ance was not essential, though desirable, in the typing of the Aryan personality, and with Siegfried Passarge, whose *Das Judentum als* landschaftskundliches und ethnologisches Problem (*The Jew as a* Landscape and Ethnological Problem) (1929)²⁶ placed special empha-

sis on the environmental determinants of racial typology, repeating, typically enough, that soul-less Judaism was an urban religion. Though no single interpretation emerged victorious, the interchange, exposing the weaknesses in racial anthropology, produced a more pernicious result: from now on the Nazi ideologists could determine who was and who was not a Jew simply on the basis of their own subjective judgment. And since only a few Jews existed who could objectify in their persons the racial descriptions attributed to them, the subjective criteria could be applied to all Jews regardless of appearance or cultural identity, as well as to half Jews, without the fear of popular disapproval.

This "breakdown" of the supposedly "objective" criteria of racial typology was in full agreement with the needs of the Nazis' mass movement ideology. The leadership had to retain the prerogative of deciding how and when the criteria would be applied. For there were times when it had to make exceptions to the rule in order to gain a momentary advantage, or when it had to plead an ambiguity so as not to alienate powerful sections of support. Through this development, natural to a politically centered mass movement, a pragmatic note was injected into racial criteria, though they were no less sincerely held. As the particularized stereotype of the Jew was contested in theory and reality, the advocates of a racist anthropology gravitated toward more pragmatic criteria of racial character. Now, though individuals in a race might differ, or, as Clauss would have it, "black hair and small stature could contain thin and blond souls,"²⁷ a more profound component set them apart from other peoples. This component could be defined in mystical terms as racial spirit, racial soul, or racial disposition, all categories that could be interpreted according to the personal or ideological inclinations of the leadership. Thus, Göring, much more cynical than Hitler, could repeat Lueger's remark: "I determine who is a Jew!" As a matter of fact, this supposed right was little used. Hitler felt differently where the Jews were concerned. When, in March 1933, the Italian ambassador, on behalf of Mussolini, urged Hitler to abandon the persecution of the Jews, the result was a "complete failure." Hitler expressed great admiration for the Duce, but in the same breath accused the Italian leader of knowing nothing about the Jewish question. Among the reasons for persevering against the Jews, such as their leadership in the Bolshevik cause, Hitler emphasized their cowardice and falsehood—components of the international Jewish psychology. Thus a threat of force against them obtained immediate results.²⁸

While the scientific criteria of Jewishness became more spiritual,

the spiritual anti-Semitism of them grew increasingly corporeal. Vi Jews became distinct and import geared as it was to the emotional urge. Hitler advocated the application as early as 1921.²⁹ The cry "dead!" became commonplace. Most popular were the phrases of a verse troops as they marched through: "drips from the knife." In these cry of that dehumanization of the Jew which we have discussed in pre Laws of Jewish exclusion (1934) threatened violence, or punishment. As the Nazi government solidified brief period it did attempt to settle legislation and encouraging Jew to bide his time, how to exploit him and how to build his program so the greatest facility and with the cooperation of executioners.

Publications continued to arouse Jews throughout the land during the fire of anti-Semitism exactly to meet measures for national ends. P encouraged cruelty against Jews, the party's official publishing house anti-Jewish cruelty was the central theme, published in 1936, glorified it while another idealized the death of alien Jews.³⁰ *Der Stürmer*, Streicher the most vitriolic attacks. It is little opposition, little disillusionment.

While it is true that the anti-Semitic—the elimination of the Jew:—it also rested its case on purely grounds. The anti-Jewish dynamic in political meetings, and in legal through various spiritualist beliefs, a Volkish tradition, and within the as we saw in an earlier chapter. The

*Wenn Jüdische
menschen drifft*

+

determinants of racial typology, repeating, soul-less Judaism was an urban religion. Retention emerged victorious, the interchange, in racial anthropology, produced a more now on the Nazi ideologists could determine was not a Jew simply on the basis of their it. And since only a few Jews existed who persons the racial descriptions attributed to teria could be applied to all Jews regardless lidentity, as well as to half Jews, without the val.

the supposedly "objective" criteria of racial reement with the needs of the Nazis' mass e leadership had to retain the prerogative of 1 the criteria would be applied. For there to make exceptions to the rule in order to tage, or when it had to plead an ambiguity erful sections of support. Through this de-olotically centered mass movement, a prag-nto racial criteria, though they were no less particularized stereotype of the Jew was reality, the advocates of a racist anthropol-nore pragmatic criteria of racial character. in a race might differ, or, as Clauss would id small stature could constrain thin and profound component set them apart from onent could be defined in mystical terms as r racial disposition, all categories that could to the personal or ideological inclinations Göring, much more cynical than Hitler, ark: "I determine who is a Jew!" As a mat-right was little used. Hitler felt differently rnered. When, in March 1933, the Italian Mussolini, urged Hitler to abandon the per- result was a "complete failure." Hitler ex- for the Duce, but in the same breath of knowing nothing about the Jewish ques- for persevering against the Jews, such as shevist cause, Hitler emphasized their cow- mponents of the international Jewish psy- of force against them obtained immediate

teria of Jewishness became more spiritual,

the spiritual anti-Semitism of the Nazi party and its adherents grew increasingly corporeal. Violence and cruelty against the Jews became distinct and important parts of the mass ideology, geared as it was to the emotional expression of its revolutionary urge. Hitler advocated the application of force against the Jewish menace as early as 1921.²⁹ The cry "Juda, Verrecke" ("Jews, drop dead") became commonplace. More bloody and correspondingly popular were the phrases of a verse sung by the smartly stepping SA troops as they marched through the streets: "When Jewish blood drips from the knife." In these crude slogans we can see the climax of that dehumanization of the Jews, associated with ideas of force, which we have discussed in previous chapters. The Nuremberg Laws of Jewish exclusion (1934), in their legalistic terms, also threatened violence, or punishment, against Jews for being Jews. As the Nazi government solidified its position of control, for a brief period it did attempt to settle the Jewish problem by means of legislation and encouraging Jews to emigrate. Hitler knew how to bide his time, how to exploit his captives in a multitude of ways, and how to build his program so that it could be effected with the greatest facility and with the cooperation of the population and the executioners.

Publications continued to arouse popular sentiment against the Jews throughout the land during the Third Reich. They kept alive the fire of anti-Semitism exactly to the degree necessary to implement measures for national ends. Pictures, films, lectures, and novels encouraged cruelty against Jews on all levels. For instance, Eher, the party's official publishing house, issued several novels in which anti-Jewish cruelty was the central theme. One of them, for example, published in 1936, glorified the murder of Walther Rathenau, while another idealized the deeds of Germanic Aryans against alien Jews.³⁰ *Der Stürmer*, Streicher's anti-Semitic sheet, published the most vitriolic attacks. It is little wonder then that when Hitler launched the campaign for the eradication of Jewry, he met with little opposition, little disillusionment in those he used for the purpose.

While it is true that the anti-Semitism of the Nazis had a practical intent—the elimination of the Jew as an economic and political force—it also rested its case on purely spiritual, ideological, and cultural grounds. The anti-Jewish dynamic that made itself felt in the streets, in political meetings, and in legal decrees, also made great headway through various spiritualist beliefs, theosophical religions which had a Volkish tradition, and within the body of a Germanic Christianity, as we saw in an earlier chapter. The party itself sheltered a notorious

*Wenn Jüdische Blut von der
messer dripfet.*

believer in spiritualistic forces. Heinrich Himmler believed in *karma* and was convinced that he was the reincarnation of Henry the Fowler. Indeed his whole thought was saturated with the nature mysticism which has been so often discussed in these pages.³¹ Nor was Hitler himself free from it. Rauschning tells how Hitler occupied himself passionately with works such as those of the nature mystic Edgar Dacque.³² Dacque wrote of a nature somnambulism. He believed that the magical forces of nature break through in man's dreams though his culture has wrongly sublimated them. This contact with the life force, springing from nature, is the only valid introduction to the cosmos.³³ Obviously there is a connection between Hitler's reading and the New Romantic ideology. No wonder that he told Rauschning that knowledge must once again take on the characteristics of a "secret science." — What a contrast the supposed Jewish materialism formed with such a world view!

The theosophical impetus also grew in popularity—in the form of a positive renunciation of a Judaicized Christianity and the adoption of a purely Germanic faith. Many Nazis embraced these variations of earlier Volkish precepts and turned toward sun worship. In its most palpable form, however, this trend attempted to link itself to Germanic Christianity and even presumed, as in Arthur Dinter's attempt in 1927, to effect the "completion of the Protestant Reformation."³⁵ Dinter, the Nazi leader of Thuringia until he left the party in 1929,³⁶ was prominent in defining the spiritualistic basis of the new Germanic faith. His *Die Sünde wider den Geist* (*Sin Against the Spirit*) (1921) postulated the theory that humans were only reincarnations of a "world of spirits" and only by striving to regain contact with the cosmic forces could they fully appreciate their racial uniqueness. In his *Die Sünde wider die Liebe* (*Sin Against Love*) (1922), the world was described as peopled by spirits and among these the Jews were the "fallen spirits" led downward by Lucifer.³⁷ Thus the spiritualistic trend of the Volkish movement climaxed once more in this Nazi leader, as it had before him in such men as Langbehn and Fidus.

Even as early as *Mein Kampf* Hitler severely criticized such Volkish "religious reformers." Considering Hitler's own view of nature mysticism and the "secret science," this might seem contradictory. However, his reasons for such criticism are illuminating. The Volkish leaders in general were in his eyes "sectarians" who must be crushed by the true "movement," but specifically these reformers weakened the fight against the common enemy: Jewry. They scattered the forces that were needed to wage this battle.³⁸ Basically, Hitler's criticism of such men as Dinter was that they failed to focus

their ideology on the Jews. Th Hitler transformed the German adherents dreamt, into an anti-cretized and objectified an ideo purposes of a mass movement.

The spiritualist and theosoph background and their adherents that prominent members—such even Hitler himself—held priv party, in general, accepted offic the spiritualistic cults and Germ

For a time, during their rise t the Nazi party encouraged c broken with the established ch cal differences. The Judaic asj under special attack and the ch of a Germanic context. The (while the New Testament had "foreign" elements, leaving th Christ had to be redefined as an with a Germanic application. A the early church reformers ha quently, was regarded more as : gion than merely the purifier Aryan groups which advocatet Bund für Deutsche Kirche (B early prominence and received its struggle with the established found itself saddled with a pos patch up the rift with the Cath support from the Bund.

The anti-Semitic impetus of Semitism of the Third Reich v into the dogma of the establish Protestant and Catholic, felt a state, and the Germanic ideolo tions from the pulpit. Others be of the Holy Crusade, could be dogma. Still others saw in the German spirit and were gratef leaders. Wilhelm Niemöller, a come a leader in the Protestar siderable frankness what May

* D. T. Please, you go too far.
as a famous pedant once said,
"Please do not understand me too,
because,"

+

Heinrich Himmler believed in *karma* was the reincarnation of Henry the night was saturated with the nature mysticism discussed in these pages.³¹ Nor was Rauschning tells how Hitler occupied risks such as those of the nature mystic sort of a nature somnambulism. He believes of nature break through in man's is wrongly sublimated them. This con-
ing from nature is the only valid
Obviously there is a connection be-
New Romantic ideology. No wonder
knowledge must once again take on the
What a contrast the supposed
with such a world view!

also grew in popularity—in the form of Judaized Christianity and the adoption
any Nazis embraced these variations of
turned toward sun worship. In its most
trend attempted to link itself to Ger-
presumed, as in Arthur Dinter's attempt
of the Protestant Reformation."³⁵
Thuringia until he left the party in
ning the spiritualistic basis of the new
de wider den Geist (Sin Against the
theory that humans were only reifica-
and only by striving to regain contact
old they fully appreciate their racial
wider die Liebe (Sin Against Love)
described as peopled by spirits and among
ten spirits" led downward by Lucifer.³⁷
of the Volkish movement climaxed once
had before him in such men as Lang-

of Hitler severely criticized such Volk-
considering Hitler's own view of nature
ence," this might seem contradictory.
criticism are illuminating. The Volk-
in his eyes "sectarians" who must be
gent," but specifically these reformers
common enemy: Jewry. They scat-
ceded to wage this battle.³⁸ Basically,
as Dinter was that they failed to focus

ought to be
direct on the
and understand
concern

their ideology on the Jews. This leads once more to our thesis that Hitler transformed the German revolution, of which many Volkish adherents dreamt, into an anti-Jewish revolution, and thereby concretized and objectified an ideology that had been too vague for the purposes of a mass movement.

The spiritualist and theosophical ideas were thus relegated to the background and their adherents silenced or ignored. Despite the fact that prominent members—such as Himmler, Rosenberg, Darré, and even Hitler himself—held private versions of the same beliefs, the party, in general, accepted officially only the anti-Jewish emphasis of the spiritualistic cults and Germanic Christianity.

For a time, during their rise to power and immediately afterward, the Nazi party encouraged dissident church groups which had broken with the established churches because of racial and ideological differences. The Judaic aspects of the Christian Church came under special attack and the church dogma was indicted for its lack of a Germanic context. The Old Testament had to be discarded, while the New Testament had to be salvaged by extracting all the "foreign" elements, leaving the basic "Germanic" figures intact. Christ had to be redefined as an Aryan and the dogma had to be read with a Germanic application. Moreover, the nationalism of some of the early church reformers had to be stressed, and Luther, consequently, was regarded more as a Germanic prophet of a Nordic religion than merely the purifier of a decadent church. Among the Aryan groups which advocated such a revision of Christianity, the Bund für Deutsche Kirche (Bund for a German Church) gained early prominence and received support from the Nazi party during its struggle with the established churches. However, the party soon found itself saddled with a possible liability, and when it started to patch up the rift with the Catholics and Protestants, it withdrew its support from the Bund.

The anti-Semitic impetus of the early party and the official anti-Semitism of the Third Reich was more pernicious when it entered into the dogma of the established churches. Many ecclesiastics, both Protestant and Catholic, felt a personal allegiance to the party, the state, and the Germanic ideology and openly voiced their convictions from the pulpit. Others believed that the German task, like that of the Holy Crusade, could be accommodated within the Christian dogma. Still others saw in the Nazi victory a revitalization of the German spirit and were grateful to the party, its ideology, and its leaders. Wilhelm Niemöller, a man of high intelligence, soon to become a leader in the Protestant resistance, has recalled with considerable frankness what May Day 1933 meant to him: then, with

the Nazis in office and Germany sure of becoming a true *Volks-gemeinschaft* (community of the Volk), that day became "a day of joy, a day which aroused new hopes."³⁹ Throughout the country many congregations, devout Catholics and Protestants, joined the festivities, marched alongside the proudly victorious Nazi troops, and saw no conflict between their faiths and the Nazi ideology. With a few exceptions, among which the Dahlemer Pfarrernotbund (Dahlem Emergency Association of Ministers), organized by Martin Niemöller in 1934, was the most prominent, the congregations accepted the state directive that a Jew, regardless of his conversion or baptism into another faith, remained a Jew. That this effectively denied the validity of the sacrament of baptism did not prevent its acceptance by many a diocese.

Personally and as the leader of the state, Hitler attempted to extricate himself from direct conflict with the churches—especially the Catholic Church, whose Concordat had done so much for his prestige—and believed that, in the last resort, the religion of the Volk would triumph over Christianity. Thus Hitler's own declarations, made after his seizure of power, that he would not interfere with the Protestant and Catholic churches, but wished them well, must be taken as a tactical maneuver. For he proceeded to seek control over the Protestant Church and the attacks upon the Catholic Church, which increased as time went on, were not stopped. However, neither of the churches opposed him during his first year in power, for they still believed in his promises.⁴⁰ Not until 1934 did some resistance start, but never did the vast majority of the clergy join in. It is important to note the lack of resistance to Hitler during the first year: opposition to the ideology and what it stood for was apparently not strong enough by itself to produce protests against a regime committed to anti-Semitic and Volkish action. For some churchmen Hitler meant the end of chaos and the avoidance of a possible civil war, to others a bulwark against leftism, and to still others the mystical nature of the Volkish ideology would make believing respectable again and fill the churches.

But where Hitler abstained from direct interference except when it was necessary in the interests of the state, men such as Himmler, Rosenberg, and Darré kept alive the fires of a Nordic race-conscious Christianity. And the established churches, whether taken in by Hitler's seeming unconcern or whether they succumbed to the ideology, kept themselves alive by preaching on the civic duties of their flocks, endorsing peace and order and the observance of the nation's "laws," and by marching side by side with the men of the various

Nazi party organizations, absolving their consciences.

To whom, then, did this anti-J. Christianity, and the active anti-level, it appealed to a large percent another level, it appealed to a boy by most people regardless of class people overlooked Nazi and Volk the rest of the ideology as pragmatic or at least purported to be. Bourgeoisism were successfully woven into who, upon assuming power, took cepts of rootedness, puritan morality and values. Professor Hans Neum spoke at the ceremony, in May 19 literature": "We want a literary bonds of family, *Heimat*, Volk, and bonds [which bind men together envisage the destruction of tradition not contemplate revolutionizing them.

By 1934 the Nazis had eliminated the bourgeois movement and within their own bourgeois ethics were rooted out some of the Volkish groups and abolished. Nude bathing, introduced which had become somewhat popular and genuineness, offended by had it outlawed in Prussia soon a. Similarly, the *Bünde*, whose principle Hitler had fought against easily solved. Thus we might say that, from a National Socialist point of view, Germanic ideology to bourgeois status.

From the moment when the Jews the party and the Volk, the bourgeois economic revolution, and in fact transformation of the nation. Thus Hitler, in 1933, proclaimed the "great world history."⁴¹ Indeed, it was horted to become more courageous limitations, and to fight against munism. The revolution was anti-

any sure of becoming a true *Volks-* the Volk), that day became "a day of w hopes."³⁹ Throughout the country Catholics and Protestants, joined the proudly victorious Nazi troops, their faiths and the Nazi ideology. which the Dahlemer Pfarrernotbund (Union of Ministers), organized by Marie most prominent, the congregations at a Jew, regardless of his conversion remained a Jew. That this effectively rament of baptism did not prevent its

of the state, Hitler attempted to onflict with the churches—especially Concordat had done so much for his n the last resort, the religion of the insanity. Thus Hitler's own declaration power, that he would not interfere olic churches, but wished them well, teuver. For he proceeded to seek onch and the attacks upon the Catholic me went on, were not stopped. How- opposed him during his first year in in his promises.⁴⁰ Not until 1934 did r did the vast majority of the clergy the lack of resistance to Hitler during ie ideology and what it stood for was by itself to produce protests against a mitic and Volkish action. For some end of chaos and the avoidance of a bulwark against leftism, and to still the Volkish ideology would make be- l the churches.

from direct interference except when is of the state, men such as Himmler, ze the fires of a Nordic race-conscious shed churches, whether taken in by whether they succumbed to the ide- preaching on the civic duties of their der and the observance of the nation's by side with the men of the various

Nazi party organizations, absolving their transgressions, and appeasing their consciences.

To whom, then, did this anti-Jewish revolution, the de-Semitized Christianity, and the active anti-Jewish programs appeal? On one level, it appealed to a large percentage of the German population; on another level, it appealed to a bourgeois sentiment which was shared by most people regardless of class: obedience to the state. Many people overlooked Nazi and Volkish excesses because they regarded the rest of the ideology as pragmatic and respectable. And so it was, or at least purported to be. Bourgeois respectability and traditionalism were successfully woven into the ideological fabric of the Nazis, who, upon assuming power, took to championing the Volkish concepts of rootedness, puritan morality, and bourgeois tastes, ethics, and values. Professor Hans Neumann stated the case well when he spoke at the ceremony, in May 1933, of the burning of "degenerate literature": "We want a literature which treats as holy the pious bonds of family, *Heimat*, Volk, and blood, indeed, all the revered bonds [which bind men together]."⁴¹ Hitler's revolution did not envisage the destruction of traditional personal bonds, just as he did not contemplate revolutionizing the capitalist economic structure.

By 1934 the Nazis had eliminated the extremists within the Volkish movement and within their own ranks. All things offensive to bourgeois ethics were rooted out of the party. The sexual license of some of the Volkish groups and the early National Socialists was abolished. Nude bathing, introduced by the Youth Movement, which had become somewhat popular as a reaffirmation of naturalness and genuineness, offended bourgeois sensibilities, and Göring had it outlawed in Prussia soon after the Nazis came to power.⁴² Similarly, the *Bünde*, whose principles of Eros and male companionship Hitler had fought against early in his party career, were dissolved. Thus we might say that, from both a Volkish and a radically National Socialist point of view, the Nazi party had tailored the Germanic ideology to bourgeois standards.

From the moment when the Jew was designated as the enemy of the party and the Volk, the bourgeoisie were saved from a social and economic revolution, and in fact were actively brought into the transformation of the nation. They could proudly share in what Hitler, in 1933, proclaimed the "greatest Germanic racial revolution in world history."⁴³ Indeed, it was the bourgeoisie whom Hitler exhorted to become more courageous, to transcend their bourgeois limitations, and to fight against Jewish capital and Jewish communism. The revolution was anti-bourgeois insofar as it was di-

rected against the Jew; while it was anti-Communist when it attacked both the Jews and the German Marxists, linking them in the Marxist-Jewish conspiracy. In its attack on the Communists, it was supported by middle-class hates and fears, while its "anti-bourgeois" drive set up a double standard, distinguishing between native and Jewish bourgeoisie.

This double standard, by which the middle class became the executor of the revolution, is made clear by a single example. Rudolf Höss, the commandant of the Auschwitz concentration camp, was undoubtedly the greatest mass murderer known to history. Yet his autobiography reveals a rather normal, pedestrian bourgeois existence. In the same breath in which he acknowledges himself a professional killer, he also describes a normal family life, tells of his kindness to children and his fondness of animals. In one passage his Jewish prisoners march to their death surrounded by flowering apple trees and the beauties of springtime. In the same passage he also gives vent to emotions, not of pity for the condemned Jews, but of concern for his own family.⁴⁴ That is just the point: the revolution was "displaced" toward the Jews and could thus protect and further bourgeois values.

The same double standard that worked in Höss was also present, if much less spectacularly, in the bourgeoisie as a whole. Adhering to their principle of the inviolability of private property when it affected their own interests, they religiously ignored this principle when Jewish property was involved. Arson was punishable by law, but when a synagogue was burned down the culprits were immune—if not commended. Thus the Nazis succeeded in fulfilling their promise to end the bourgeois reign—but only as it applied to Jews!

In the end Hitler had his German revolution. Long before, in 1920, he had outlined what sort of a revolution this was to be. Not a political revolution (for 1918 had shown what this could do in Germany), not an economic revolution (for the terrible example of Russia was before his eyes), but a "revolution of attitudes and feeling" (*Revolution der Gesinnung*).⁴⁵ Thus the Jew became the focus of the ideology, just as he had been for most of the earlier Volkish thinkers. Although some of the Nazi goals may have differed from those advocated by individuals and groups in the Volkish movement, most elements of Volkish anti-Semitism were a vital part of the Nazi program. In fact, many who had advocated a purely Volkish goal saw that National Socialism represented the most practical vehicle for achieving it. Many from the Youth Movement and the *Bünde* abandoned their earlier resistance and hostility and marched side by side with the brown-shirted Nazis. For these people, with their Volkish

D. 7. A principle like the inviolability of property is considered most valuable when it applies only in part or not at all for others, and

precepts, Hitler was not a stranger, a molder, who gave the prevailing more dynamic emphasis. But the sweep the whole Volkish movement party. Hitler's revolution, then, is ready for his message; and the outlandish, best studied by psychology, crowds regarded their life with National Socialism in retrospect.

altogether

+

it was anti-Communist when it at-
German Marxists, linking them in the
its attack on the Communists, it was
es and fears, while its "anti-bourgeois"
rd, distinguishing between native and

which the middle class became the execu-
die clear by a single example. Rudolf
e Auschwitz concentration camp, was
s murderer known to history. Yet his
er normal, pedestrian bourgeois exist-
lich he acknowledges himself a profes-
a normal family life, tells of his kind-
ness of animals. In one passage his
r death surrounded by flowering apple
ingtime. In the same passage he also
pity for the condemned Jews, but of
That is just the point: the revolution
ws and could thus protect and further

that worked in Höss was also present, if
it bourgeoisie as a whole. Adhering to
ility of private property when it at-
way religiously ignored this principle
olved. Arson was punishable by law,
rned down the culprits were immune
ie Nazis succeeded in fulfilling their
ign—but only as it applied to Jews!
man revolution. Long before, in 1920,
revolution this was to be. Not a politi-
own what this could do in Germany),
for the terrible example of Russia was
tion of attitudes and feeling" (*Revolu-*
the Jew became the focus of the ide-
most of the earlier Volkish thinkers.
goals may have differed from those ad-
roups in the Volkish movement, most
ism were a vital part of the Nazi pro-
advocated a purely Volkish goal saw
ented the most practical vehicle for
outh Movement and the *Binde* aban-
and hostility and marched side by side
For these people, with their Volkish

the people are inevitably
understand most
it applies only in
half brother, and

precepts, Hitler was not a stranger, not an innovator, but an adapter,
a molder, who gave the prevailing Volkish theories a new edge, a
more dynamic emphasis. But that edge was also dynamic enough to
sweep the whole Volkish movement into the shadow of the Nazi
party. Hitler's revolution, then, found large segments of the popula-
tion ready for his message; and though that message may seem to us
outlandish, best studied by psychologists, this was not how the ad-
miring crowds regarded their leader, nor how historians must deal
with National Socialism in retrospect.

altay after foreness

with its own mysticism and its own liturgical rites. José Primo de Rivera, the founder of the Spanish *Falange*, believed that "peoples have never been moved by anyone save poets," and it is small wonder that he castigated those, like the Bolsheviks, who were preoccupied with the viability of economic systems.¹ For Rivera, revolutions must have a mystical meaning. Likewise, in northern Europe, Léon Degrelle, the Belgian fascist leader, called every revolution "mystical in character" and asserted that events are dominated more by ideas and sentiments than by economic laws.² In France, the publicist Marcel Déat denied that the French Revolution had been in any way materialist, and contended that its philosophy was as idealistic as that of Germany.³ All these western fascisms exhibited a flight from reality into the realm of an emotional and mystical ideology. They were all a part of the "displaced revolution" which moved from a rejection of reality to a glorification of ideology.

Moreover, in this manner these fascisms were able to retain the existing social structure, including property rights, and at the same time preach revolution. Existing society was supposedly rejected *in toto* and fascist thought centered instead upon the "new fascist man." Robert Brasillach, the French fascist, described this new hero: he wants a pure nation and a pure race; he loves to be a part of huge gatherings of men where the rhythm of the army or of the crowd beats as one pulsating heart. He does not believe in justice which exhausts itself in words, but rather appeals to that justice which, ruled by force, from that force springs joy. For Brasillach, fascism is not a political or economic doctrine, but an *esprit* and, above all, the spirit of joy.⁴ There is little here with which the men we have discussed could have disagreed. Little wonder that Brasillach, after witnessing the Nuremberg *Reichsparteitag* (the celebration of the Nazi party at Nuremberg), asked himself: Can we Frenchmen share in this someday?⁵ Similarly, Marcel Déat saw in National Socialism "a young, ardent and irresistible collective belief, against a civilization of fragmented and contradictory ideas."⁶

Nonetheless, we must not allow these similarities to disguise the profound difference between German fascism and the others of western Europe. For in the end, both Brasillach and Déat were disappointed, as were others who had earlier been enthusiastic about the true Nazi revolution. Marc Augier, who had founded the French youth movement of the 1930's, *Les Auberges de la Jeunesse*, and had become a most enthusiastic collaborator with Nazism, concluded that Hitler's ideology was too Germanic, and not universal enough in its fascist appeal.⁷ The reasons for such disillusionment are clear, and they hold true for the other fascisms outside Germany as well.

evolutionary movements have made their Marxist and the fascist. Like Marxism, fascism, and the various fascisms shared a commonly felt need to transform the world. All fascisms attempted to capture satisfaction with existing industrial and political conditions which began to take a concrete revolutionary form in the nineteenth century. At that time, youth in Europe sought to escape from the "materialist" society in which they lived, and tried to find a new meaning in life, to enable them to recapture their own individuality. The revolt led to a battle against conventional society, and to a search for a new sense of "belonging" in which the revolt to which they were committed was being purely nihilistic; indeed, the ideology was what enabled some fascists to achieve a "negative" ideological *confrères* failed.

In order to analyze the kind of identity which was sought, the flight from reality which was characteristic of German ideology took a specific form. The same urge can also be found in all the other fascisms. By realizing the extent to which Germany was in a state of crisis, even on this level, we can understand the movement of thought which led toward the fascist revolution, not to deny that all fascisms had certain similarities, but to everywhere spurned existing social conditions in favor of an irrational world view which was based on a delusion of a new level. This irrationality was justified in the form of a new religion.

The German revolution was too deeply anchored in its own restricted mystical ideology. The "anti-Jewish revolution" had displaced too many considerations which other fascists prized. These others attempted to put a greater emphasis upon the "anti-capitalist longings," especially in France (though always in a vague way), but above all, they exalted a Nietzschean love for action. This activism served at times to detach the "idealism" from the "deeds" which the Germans believed must go together. Thus, Drieu La Rochelle, the only French fascist writer of true distinction, could write that the Nietzschean, the model for his fascist man, believes in a provisional world which can be transformed and can explode at any moment.⁸ The contrast between this view and the passionate German belief in eternal verities must be clear.

Such joyous activism made it impossible to channel the dynamic into merely anti-Jewish directions. Anti-Semitism was "instinctive" for the French, as Brasillach said, but it was never dominant.⁹ The contrast between the issue devoted to the Jews by the French fascist newspaper *Je Suis Partout* and *Der Stürmer's* approach to the problem is significant. Both agreed that the Jews were not a religious community but a separate people; however, the French newspaper added that one can have good relations with a foreign people and disclaimed any intention of being "xenophobic." While here the usual connection was made between Jews and Soviets, and even the pictures showed a common stereotype, there was no reference to brutality, certainly not to ritual murder, and indeed the Germans were criticized for dwelling too much on the "metaphysics of race."¹⁰ Even this most radical of French anti-Semitic newspapers balked at accepting ideas that had become "official" in Germany.

Neither the manifesto of Degrelle's Belgian Rexists nor that of the Dutch National Socialists mentioned "the Jewish question," and Italian fascism followed the same course. The deputy leader of the Dutch Nazi party told a German National Socialist that his organization had no Aryan clause, although no friends of the Jews were to be found among its members.¹¹ This accurately describes the attitudes of these fascisms. While they tended (with the notable exception of the Italian movement before 1937) to be anti-Semitic, this was never a primary consideration.

Drieu La Rochelle sums up the attitude of the fascists of his generation toward ideology. In *Gilles* (1939), the only fascist novel ever to achieve popularity on the other side of the Rhine, he declares fascism to be not a program for action, not a doctrine, but a method. As he put it on another occasion, a program is something for tomorrow, while the struggle itself is what counts today.¹² Drieu La

Rochelle exemplifies a spirit of revolt common among youth at the turn of the century. In France, in contrast to the situation in Germany, it was not controlled by a coherent ideology. Little remained restricted to an isolated group. Joyous action was also primary in the movement founded by Degrelle, though with emphasis upon the family and the soil, absent from the movement in France.

These comparisons between Germany and other western European nations demonstrate that though fascism had German variety came to be unique. The way it managed to displace the revolution, the primacy of the ideology of the revolutionary impetus produced on the continent, but the German crisis more deeply rooted in the national ideology planted so deep or for such the fascist dynamic embedded in it is typical that when other fascisms, as to Nazi Germany to bring about acted on a profound misunderstanding. National Socialism had tamed the prized and absorbed it into its Volkish. Deeply rooted, as it was, in a spirit hardly serve as an aid to the fascist is typical in this regard that Hitler the Duce supported in Italy. Witt turism was at loggerheads with the advocated by the Nazis. As late as founder of futurism, publicly accuse graphic stasis.¹³ But that static ideology than an expression of the eternal German for all time. Thus Volkish writers have Heine for not knowing the "good reaching out for "the better, the more an attitude would lead to the wrong

The divergence of German fascism reflects the difference between Germany and western European nations. It was which we have discussed that this pudiate a European heritage which



too deeply anchored in its own re-
 The "anti-Jewish revolution" had dis-
 sons which other fascists prized. These
 ater emphasis upon the "anti-capitalist
 e (though always in a vague way), but
 zschian love for action. This activism
 "idealism" from the "deeds" which the
 together. Thus, Drieu La Rochelle, the
 true distinction, could write that the
 is fascist man, believes in a provisional
 ned and can explode at any moment.⁸
 ew and the passionate German belief

it impossible to channel the dynamic
 tions. Anti-Semitism was "instinctive"
 aid, but it was never dominant.⁹ The
 oted to the Jews by the French fascist
 1 *Der Stürmer's* approach to the prob-
 d that the Jews were not a religious
 ople; however, the French newspaper
 d relations with a foreign people and
 being "xenophobic." While here the
 tween Jews and Soviets, and even the
 ereotype, there was no reference to
 al murder, and indeed the Germans
 too much on the "metaphysics of
 il of French anti-Semitic newspapers
 had become "official" in Germany.
 grelle's Belgian Rexists nor that of the
 mentioned "the Jewish question," and
 me course. The deputy leader of the
 in National Socialist that his organiza-
 ough no friends of the Jews were to be
 this accurately describes the attitudes
 tended (with the notable exception of
 1937) to be anti-Semitic, this was never

the attitude of the fascists of his gen-
 Gilles (1939), the only fascist novel
 the other side of the Rhine, he declares
 action, not a doctrine, but a method.
 tion, a program is something for to-
 self is what counts today.¹² Drieu La

Rochelle exemplifies a spirit of revolt, an urge for action which was common among youth at the turn of the century, but which in France, in contrast to the situation in Germany, was never controlled by a coherent ideology. Little wonder that French fascism remained restricted to an isolated group of intellectuals. The urge for joyous action was also primary in Belgian Rexism, the fascist movement founded by Degrelle, though here it was combined with an emphasis upon the family and the soil, an element which was notably absent from the movement in France.

These comparisons between German fascism and its counterparts in other western European nations are highly instructive, for they demonstrate that though fascism had spread throughout Europe, the German variety came to be unique. It was unique not only in the way it managed to displace the revolutionary impetus, but also in the primacy of the ideology of the Volk, nature, and race. The revolutionary impetus produced an ideological reaction throughout the continent, but the German crisis was *sui generis*, besides being more deeply rooted in the national fabric. Nowhere else was the ideology planted so deep or for such a long time. Nowhere else was the fascist dynamic embedded in such an effective ideology. How typical that when other fascisms, such as that of France, looked to Nazi Germany to bring about a real revolution, they always acted on a profound misunderstanding of the German phenomenon. National Socialism had tamed the activism which the other fascists prized and absorbed it into its Volkish and New Romantic ideology. Deeply rooted, as it was, in a specific German heritage, it could hardly serve as an aid to the fascist movements in other countries. It is typical in this regard that Hitler condemned the futurism which the Duce supported in Italy. With its emphasis upon action, futurism was at loggerheads with the "simple and plain enjoyment" advocated by the Nazis. As late as 1937, the fascist Marinetti, the founder of futurism, publicly accused Hitler of believing in a photographic stasis.¹³ But that static ideal was, after all, nothing more than an expression of the eternal German verities which were "given" for all time. Thus Volkish writers had condemned the poet Heinrich Heine for not knowing the "good and the beautiful" but always reaching out for "the better, the more beautiful." In Nazi eyes such an attitude would lead to the wrong sort of revolution.

The divergence of German fascism from the other fascisms reflects the difference between German thought and that of the other western European nations. It was precisely through the ideology which we have discussed that this unfortunate nation came to repudiate a European heritage which was still alive elsewhere: that of

the rationalism of the Enlightenment and the social radicalism of the French Revolution. Moreover, this repudiation was intimately connected with a general opposition to modernity which withdrew into itself, for what Eugen Diederichs and others had called the awakening of German individuality was both a flight from present reality and a flight from a European tradition. Other western fascisms tried to reach out to each other, but if National Socialism did this it was to further subversion on foreign soil for its own ends, not out of a deeply felt longing for a larger unity. Even today, when the still-existing Volkish movement clothes itself in the mantle of a "new Europe," the ideology is still that of the Volk tied to a mystical concept of nature on the one hand and to the cosmos on the other. Nothing has changed save for a rhetorical reference to European unity.

In 1936, Carl Gustav Jung said that for the first time it had dawned upon humanity that something not external to man can, nevertheless, be the truth.¹⁴ It had dawned upon mankind long before this, however, and indeed had formed the foundation for European fascism. Looking at Germany, Jung saw the autonomous factors of the human soul embodied in collective phenomena. He believed that where the masses are in motion, men cease to be in control, and Jung saw the free play of the archetypes of the "collective unconscious" at work in Nazism. On the basis of these observations, Jung predicted that National Socialism was only the initial step in a development whose extent and result we could not begin to imagine.¹⁵ From the point of view of the autonomy of the unconscious, the future was indeed awesome and frightening, especially at that time, when National Socialism had triumphed and was enjoying success after success.

But was Jung's view tenable? To be sure, throughout the Germanic ideology one finds a preoccupation with the *Ur* forces, the primeval instincts, combined with a mystically oriented dynamic. But this is only one side of the picture. National Socialism, the whole Volkish movement, was analogous to a religion, and the movement acted as if belief in the faith would grant the disillusioned a comfort and a sense of belonging which it could never provide. Yet the movement was not wholly centered upon the outpouring of the longings of the soul, as Jung would have us believe. The ideology was formalized. The archetypes were not allowed free play. And as the ideology was tamed, it came to express itself through an internal logic of its own which took on concrete, outward forms.

Georges Sorel had said disparagingly that intellectuals never know what to do with the phenomenon of religion in history. They could not deny its historical importance, nor could they explain it.¹⁶ He

held that men are motivated by irrational falsehood is irrelevant to their appeal. that Sorel was a great source of inspiration the most irrational religion, to become through outward forms. To move myself. In the end the outward forms r they determine the content of the faith in Germany, both through the way in which it was spread and through the dominant role that it played. Moreover, the ideas of discipline and order stressed in place of "fanaticism" not only justified the ideology but also gave it some political effectiveness. The so-called Volk, and race were channeled toward directed by the leadership.

The irrational is made concrete through the terms of its own ideological framework, supplemented by a political pragmatism and technology. But always the ideology is directed toward the eventual goal. For the end is to shirk from the fight.

That the Volkish ideology, wedded to the modern, could be absorbed by the modern and National Socialism led to its final realization. There have been very real grievances and frustration on the national level, German times might have taken a different turn. The question is: Why did millions of people follow? To this we have tried to give an answer.

ment and the social radicalism of the this repudiation was intimately con- on to modernity which withdrew into the and others had called the awaken- was both a flight from present reality tradition. Other western fascisms tried if National Socialism did this it was to soil for its own ends, not out of a er unity. Even today, when the still- othes itself in the mantle of a "new at of the Volk tied to a mystical con- and to the cosmos on the other. Noth- ical reference to European unity.

id that for the first time it had dawned g not external to man can, neverthe- ned upon mankind long before this, ed the foundation for European fas- ng saw the autonomous factors of the fective phenomena. He believed that , men cease to be in control, and Jung types of the "collective unconscious" s of these observations, Jung predicted nly the initial step in a development uld not begin to imagine.¹⁵ From the y of the unconscious, the future was ng, especially at that time, when Na- l and was enjoying success after suc-

er: To be sure, throughout the Ger- reoccupation with the Ur forces, the with a mystically oriented dynamic. picture. National Socialism, the whole ous to a religion, and the movement ould grant the disillusioned a comfort society could never provide. Yet the erred upon the outpouring of the long- d have us believe. The ideology was ere not allowed free play. And as the to express itself through an internal concrete, outward forms. ragingly that intellectuals never know on of religion in history. They could nce, nor could they explain it.¹⁶ He

held that men are motivated by irrational myths whose truth or falsehood is irrelevant to their appeal. It is hardly surprising to find that Sorel was a great source of inspiration for the fascists. But even the most irrational religion to become effective, must express itself through outward forms. To move masses of men it must objectify itself. In the end the outward forms may become so important that they determine the content of the faith. This is what happened in Germany, both through the way in which the ideology was objectified and through the dominant role that the leader came to occupy. Moreover, the ideas of discipline and organization which Hitler stressed in place of "fanaticism" not only led to a more effective objectification of the ideology but also provided the basis for an awesome political effectiveness. The so-called eternal verities of nature, Volk, and race were channeled toward definite objects, consciously directed by the leadership.

The irrational is made concrete through rational acts within the terms of its own ideological framework. These rational acts are implemented by a political pragmatism as well as by the use of modern technology. But always the ideology provides the basic presuppositions and the eventual goal. For the enemy is powerful and will not shirk from the fight.

That the Volkish ideology, wedded as it was to anti-modernity, could be absorbed by the modern mass movement techniques of National Socialism led to its final realization. To be sure, if it had not been for very real grievances and frustrations, both on a personal level and on the national level, Germany's development in modern times might have taken a different turn. But the most important question is: Why did millions of people respond to the Volkish call? To this we have tried to give an answer.